



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



32101 063692279

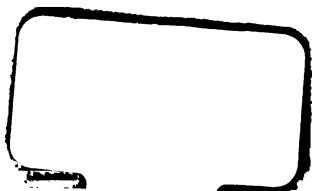
58  
54  
1  
3

Library of



Princeton University.

Friends of the  
Princeton Library  
The gift of  
Henry N. Paul '84



6

6









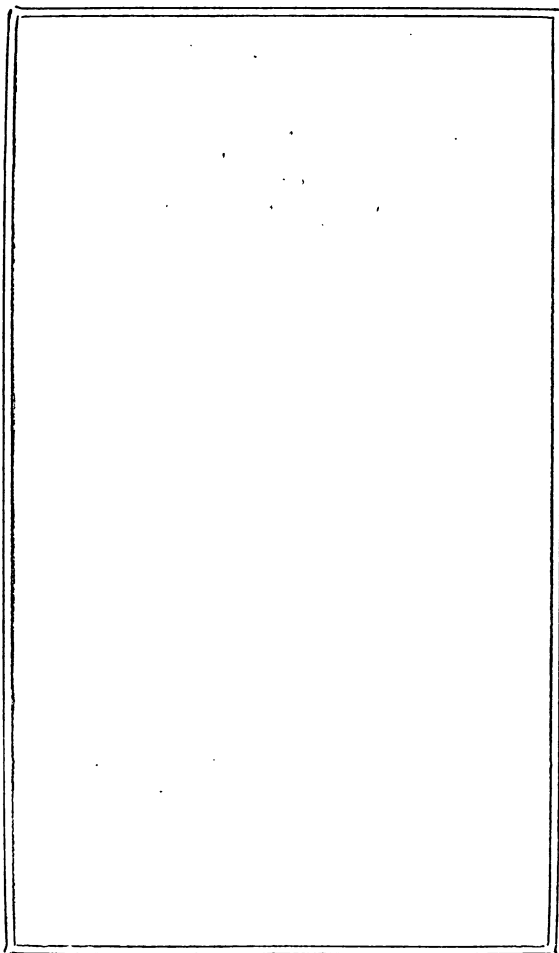
THE  
PLAYS  
OF  
WILLIAM SHAKSPEARE,  
ACCURATELY PRINTED FROM THE  
TEXT OF THE CORRECTED COPY LEFT BY THE LATE  
GEORGE STEEVENS, ESQ.,  
WITH  
GLOSSARIAL NOTES,  
AND  
A SKETCH OF THE LIFE OF SHAKSPEARE.  
IN EIGHT VOLUMES.

VOL. III.

CONTAINING  
ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL—TAMING OF THE  
SHREW—WINTER'S TALE—COMEDY OF  
ERRORS—MACBETH.

---

BOSTON:  
PHILLIPS, SAMPSON, AND COMPANY.  
NEW YORK: JAMES C. DERBY.  
1854.



**ALL'S WELL**  
**THAT**  
**ENDS WELL.**

1944-4

**PERSONS REPRESENTED.**

*King of France.*

*Duke of Florence.*

*Bertram, Count of Rousillon.*

*Lafeu, an old Lord.*

*Parolles, a follower of Bertram.*

*Several young French Lords, that serve with Bertram in the Florentine war.*

Steward, }  
Clown, } *servants to the Countess of Rousillon.*

*A Page.*

*Countess of Rousillon, mother to Bertram.*

*Helena, a gentlewoman protected by the Countess.*

*An old Widow of Florence.*

*Diana, daughter to the widow.*

Violenta, }  
Mariana, } *neighbours and friends to the widow.*

*Lords, attending on the King ; Officers, Soldiers,  
&c. French and Florentine.*

*Scene, partly in France, and partly in Tuscany.*

ALL'S WELL  
THAT  
ENDS WELL.

---

ACT I.

SCENE I.—Rousillon. *A Room in the Countess's Palace. Enter Bertram, the Countess of Rousillon, Helena, and Lafeu, in mourning.*

*Countess.*

**I**N delivering my son from me, I bury a second husband.

*Ber.* And I, in going, madam, weep o'er my father's death anew : but I must attend his majesty's command, to whom I am now in ward,<sup>1</sup> evermore in subjection.

*Laf.* You shall find of the king a husband, madam ;—you, sir, a father : He that so generally is at all times good, must of necessity hold his virtue to you ; whose worthiness would stir it up where it wanted, rather than lack it where there is such abundance.

*Count.* What hope is there of his majesty's amendment ?

*Laf.* He hath abandoned his physicians, madam ; under whose practices he hath persecuted time with hope ; and finds no other advantage in the process but only the losing of hope by time.

*Count.* This young gentlewoman had a father

(1) Under his particular care, as my guardian.



(O, that *had*!<sup>1</sup> how sad a passage 'tis!) whose skill was almost as great as his honesty; had it stretched so far, would have made nature immortal, and death should have play for lack of work. 'Would, for the king's sake, he were living! I think, it would be the death of the king's disease.

*Laf.* How called you the man you speak of, madam?

*Count.* He was famous, sir, in his profession, and it was his great right to be so: Gerard de Narbon.

*Laf.* He was excellent, indeed, madam; the king very lately spoke of him, admiringly, and mourningly: he was skilful enough to have lived still, if knowledge could be set up against mortality.

*Ber.* What is it, my good lord, the king languishes of?

*Laf.* A fistula, my lord.

*Ber.* I heard not of it before.

*Laf.* I would, it were not notorious.—Was this gentlewoman the daughter of Gerard de Narbon?

*Count.* His sole child, my lord; and bequeathed to my overlooking. I have those hopes of her good, that her education promises: her dispositions she inherits, which make fair gifts fairer; for where an unclean mind carries virtuous qualities,<sup>2</sup> there commendations go with pity, they are virtues and traitors too; in her they are the better for their simpleness;<sup>3</sup> she derives her honesty, and achieves her goodness.

*Laf.* Your commendations, madam, get from her tears.

*Count.* 'Tis the best brine a maiden can season her praise in. The remembrance of her father

(1) The countess recollects her own loss of a husband, and observes how heavily *had* passes through her mind.

(2) Qualities of good breeding and erudition.

(3) *i. e.* Her excellencies are the better because they are artless.

never approaches her heart, but the tyranny of her sorrows takes all livelihood<sup>1</sup> from her cheek. No more of this, Helena, go to, no more; lest it be rather thought you affect a sorrow, than to have.

*Hel.* I do affect a sorrow, indeed, but I have it too.

*Laf.* Moderate lamentation is the right of the dead, excessive grief the enemy to the living.

*Count.* If the living be enemy to the grief, the excess makes it soon mortal.

*Ber.* Madam, I desire your holy wishes.

*Laf.* How understand we that?

*Count.* Be thou blest, Bertram! and succeed thy father

In manners, as in shape! thy blood, and virtue,  
Contend for empire in thee; and thy goodness  
Share with thy birthright! Love all, trust a few,  
Do wrong to none: be able for thine enemy  
Rather in power, than use; and keep thy friend  
Under thy own life's key: be check'd for silence,  
But never tax'd for speech. What heaven more will,  
That thee may furnish,<sup>2</sup> and my prayers pluck  
down,

Fall on thy head! Farewell.—My lord,  
'Tis an unseason'd courtier; good my lord,  
Advise him.

*Laf.* He cannot want the best  
That shall attend his love.

*Count.* Heaven bless him!—Farewell, Bertram.  
[Exit Countess.]

*Ber.* The best wishes, that can be forged in your thoughts, [To Helena] be servants to you!<sup>3</sup> Be comfortable to my mother, your mistress, and make much of her.

(1) All appearance of life.

(2) *i. e.* That may help thee with more and better qualifications.

(3) *i. e.* May you be mistress of your wishes, and have power to bring them to effect.

*Laf.* Farewell, pretty lady : You must hold the credit of your father. [*Exe. Bertram and Lafeu.*]

*Hel.* O, were that all !—I think not on my father ; And these great tears grace his remembrance more Than those I shed for him. What was he like ?

I have forgot him : my imagination  
Carries no favour in it, but Bertram's.  
I am undone ; there is no living, none,  
If Bertram be away. It were all one,  
That I should love a bright particular star,  
And think to wed it, he is so above me :  
In his bright radiance and collateral light  
Must I be comforted, not in his sphere.  
The ambition in my love thus plagues itself :  
The hind, that would be mated by the lion,  
Must die for love. 'Twas pretty, though a plague,  
To see him every hour ; to sit and draw  
His arched brows, his hawking eye, his curls,  
In our heart's table ;<sup>1</sup> heart, too capable  
Of every line and trick<sup>2</sup> of his sweet favour :<sup>3</sup>  
But now he's gone, and my idolatrous fancy  
Must sanctify his relics. Who comes here ?

*Enter Parolles.*

One that goes with him : I love him for his sake ;  
And yet I know him a notorious liar,  
Think him a great way fool, solely a coward ;  
Yet these fix'd evils sit so fit in him,  
That they take place, when virtue's steely bones  
Look bleak in the cold wind : withal, full oft we see  
Cold wisdom waiting on superfluous folly.

*Par.* Save you, fair queen.

*Hel.* And you, monárch.

*Par.* No.

*Hel.* And no.

*Par.* Are you meditating on virginity ?

(1) Helena considers her heart as the tablet on which his resemblance was portrayed.

(2) Peculiarity of feature. (3) Countenance.

*Hel.* Ay. You have some stain of soldier in you ; let me ask you a question : Man is enemy to virginity ; how may we barricado it against him ?

*Par.* Keep him out.

*Hel.* But he assails ; and our virginity, though valiant in the defence, yet is weak : unfold to us some warlike resistance.

*Par.* There is none ; man, sitting down before you, will undermine you, and blow you up.

*Hel.* Bless our poor virginity from underminers, and blowers up !—Is there no military policy, how virgins might blow up men ?

*Par.* Virginity, being blown down, man will quicklier be blown up : marry, in blowing him down again, with the breach yourselves made, you lose your city. It is not politic in the common-wealth of nature, to preserve virginity. Loss of virginity is rational increase ; and there was never virgin got, till virginity was first lost. That, you were made of, is metal to make virgins. Virginity, by being once lost, may be ten times found : by being ever kept, it is ever lost : 'tis too cold a companion ; away with it.

*Hel.* I will stand for't a little, though therefore I die a virgin.

*Par.* There's little can be said in't ; 'tis against the rule of nature. To speak on the part of virginity, is to accuse your mothers ; which is most infallible disobedience. He, that hangs himself, is a virgin : virginity murders itself ; and should be buried in highways, out of all sanctified limit, as a desperate offendress against nature. Virginity breeds mites, much like a cheese ; consumes itself to the very paring, and so dies with feeding his own stomach. Besides, virginity is peevish, proud, idle, made of self-love, which is the most inhibited<sup>1</sup> sin in the canon. Keep it not ; you cannot choose but lose by't : Out with't : within ten years it will make

(1) Forbidden.

itself ten, which is a goodly increase; and the principal itself not much the worse: Away with't.

*Hel.* How might one do, sir, to lose it to her own liking?

*Par.* Let me see: Marry, ill, to like him that ne'er it likes. 'Tis a commodity will lose the gloss with lying; the longer kept, the less worth: off with't, while 'tis vendible: answer the time of request. Virginity, like an old courtier, wears her cap out of fashion; richly suited, but unsuitable: just like the brooch and toothpick, which wear not now: Your date<sup>1</sup> is better in your pie and your porridge, than in your cheek: And your virginity, your old virginity, is like one of our French withered pears; it looks ill, it eats dryly; marry, 'tis a withered pear; it was formerly better; marry, yet, 'tis a withered pear: Will you any thing with it?

*Hel.* Not my virginity yet.

There shall your master have a thousand loves,  
A mother, and a mistress, and a friend,  
A phoenix, captain, and an enemy,  
A guide, a goddess, and a sovereign,  
A counsellor, a traitress, and a dear;  
His humble ambition, proud humility,  
His jarring concord, and his discord dulcet,  
His faith, his sweet disaster; with a world  
Of pretty, fond, adoptious christendoms,  
That blinking Cupid gossips. Now shall he—  
I know not what he shall:—God send him well!—  
The court's a learning-place;—and he is one—

*Par.* What one, i'faith?

*Hel.* That I wish well.—'Tis pity—

*Par.* What's pity?

*Hel.* That wishing well had not a body in't,  
Which might be felt: that we, the poorer born,  
Whose baser stars do shut us up in wishes,  
Might with effects of them follow our friends,

(1) A quibble on date, which means age, and candied fruit.

*Scene I.*      **THAT ENDS WELL.**      **11**

And show what we alone must think ;<sup>1</sup> which never  
Returns us thanks.

*Enter a Page.*

*Page.* Monsieur Parolles, my lord calls for you.

*[Exit Page.]*

*Par.* Little Helen, farewell : if I can remember  
thee, I will think of thee at court.

*Hel.* Monsieur Parolles, you were born under a  
charitable star.

*Par.* Under Mars, I.

*Hel.* I especially think, under Mars.

*Par.* Why under Mars ?

*Hel.* The wars have so kept you under, that you  
must needs be born under Mars.

*Par.* When he was predominant.

*Hel.* When he was retrograde, I think, rather.

*Par.* Why think you so ?

*Hel.* You go so much backward, when you fight.

*Par.* That's for advantage.

*Hel.* So is running away, when fear proposes the  
safety : But the composition, that your valour and  
fear makes in you, is a virtue of a good wing, and  
I like the wear well.

*Par.* I am so full of businesses, I cannot answer  
thee acutely : I will return perfect courtier ; in the  
which, my instruction shall serve to naturalize thee,  
so thou wilt be capable<sup>2</sup> of a courtier's counsel,  
and understand what advice shall thrust upon thee,  
else thou diest in thine unthankfulness, and thine  
ignorance makes thee away : farewell. When thou  
hast leisure, say thy prayers ; when thou hast  
none, remember thy friends : get thee a good hus-  
band, and use him as he uses thee : so farewell.

*[Exit.]*

*Hel.* Our remedies oft in ourselves do lie,

(1) *i. e.* And show by realities what we now  
must only think.

(2) *i. e.* Thou wilt comprehend it.

Which we ascribe to heaven : the fated sky  
 Gives us free scope ; only, doth backward pull  
 Our slow designs, when we ourselves are dull.  
 What power is it, which mounts my love so high ;  
 That makes me see, and cannot feed mine eye ?  
 The mightiest space in fortune nature brings  
 To join like likes, and kiss like native things.<sup>1</sup>  
 Impossible be strange attempts, to those  
 That weigh their pains in sense ; and do suppose,  
 What hath been cannot be : Who ever strove  
 To show her merit, that did miss her love ?  
 The king's disease—my project may deceive me,  
 But my intents are fix'd, and will not leave me.

[*Exit.*

*SCENE II.*—Paris. *A room in the King's palace.*  
*Flourish of cornets. Enter the King of France,*  
*with letters ; Lords and others attending.*

*King.* The Florentines and Senoys<sup>2</sup> are by the  
 ears ;  
 Have fought with equal fortune, and continue  
 A braving war.

*1 Lord.* So 'tis reported, sir.

*King.* Nay, 'tis most credible ; we here receive it  
 A certainty, vouch'd from our cousin Austria,  
 With caution, that the Florentine will move us  
 For speedy aid ; wherein our dearest friend  
 Prejudicates the business, and would seem  
 To have us make denial.

*1 Lord.* His love and wisdom,  
 Approv'd so to your majesty, may plead  
 For amplest credence.

*King.* He hath arm'd our answer,  
 And Florence is denied before he comes :  
 Yet, for our gentlemen, that mean to see  
 The Tuscan service, freely have they leave

(1) Things formed by nature for each other.

(2) The citizens of the small republic of which  
 Sienna is the capital.

To stand on either part.

2 Lord. It may well serve  
A nursery to our gentry, who are sick  
For breathing and exploit.

King. What's he comes here?

*Enter Bertram, Lafeu, and Parolles.*

1 Lord. It is the count Rousillon, my good lord,  
Young Bertram.

King. Youth, thou bear'st thy father's face ;  
Frank nature, rather curious than in haste,  
Hath well compos'd thee. Thy father's moral parts  
May'st thou inherit too ! Welcome to Paris.

Ber. My thanks and duty are your majesty's.

King. I would I had that corporal soundness now,  
As when thy father, and myself, in friendship  
First try'd our soldiership ! He did look far  
Into the service of the time, and was  
Disciplin'd of the bravest : he lasted long ;  
But on us both did haggish age steal on,  
And wore us out of act. It much repairs<sup>1</sup> me  
To talk of your good father : In his youth  
He had the wit, which I can well observe  
To-day in our young lords ; but they may jest  
Till their own scorn return to them unnoted,  
Ere they can hide their levity in honour.  
So like a courtier, contempt nor bitterness  
Were in his pride or sharpness ; if they were,  
His equal had awak'd them ; and his honour,  
Clock to itself, knew the true minute when  
Exception bid him speak, and, at this time,  
His tongue obey'd his<sup>2</sup> hand : who were below him  
He us'd as creatures of another place ;  
And bow'd his eminent-top to their low ranks,  
Making them proud of his humility,  
In their poor praise he humbled : Such a man  
Might be a copy to these younger times ;

(1) To repair, here signifies to renovate.

(2) *His* is put for *its*.



Which, follow'd well, would démonstrate them now  
But goes backward.

*Ber.* His good remembrance, sir,  
Lies richer in your thoughts, than on his tomb;  
So in approof<sup>1</sup> lives not his epitaph,  
As in your royal speech.

*King.* 'Would, I were with him! He would always say,  
(Methinks, I hear him now; his plausible words  
He scatter'd not in ears, but grafted them,  
To grow there, and to bear,)—*Let me not live,*—  
Thus his good melancholy oft began,  
On the catastrophe and heel of pastime,  
When it was out,—*let me not live,* quoth he,  
*After my flame lacks oil, to be the snuff*  
*Of younger spirits, whose apprehensive senses*  
*All but new things disdain: whose judgments are*  
*Mere fathers of their garments;<sup>2</sup> whose constancies*  
*Expire before their fashions:—*This he wish'd.  
I, after him, do after him wish too,  
Since I nor wax, nor honey, can bring home,  
I quickly were dissolved from my hive,  
To give some labourers room.

*2 Lord.* You are lov'd, sir;  
They, that least lend it you, shall lack you first.

*King.* I fill a place, I know't.—How long is't,  
count,

Since the physician at your father's died?  
He was much fam'd.

*Ber.* Some six months since, my lord.

*King.* If he were living, I would try him yet;—  
Lend me an arm;—the rest have worn me out  
With several applications:—nature and sickness  
Debate it at their leisure. Welcome, count;  
My son's no dearer.

*Ber.* Thank your majesty.  
[*Exeunt. Flourish.*]

(1) Approbation.

(2) Who have no other use of their faculties than  
to invent new modes of dress.

SCENE III.—Rousillon. *A Room in the Countess's Palace. Enter Countess, Steward, and Clown.*

*Count.* I will now hear; what say you of this gentlewoman?

*Stew.* Madam, the care I have had to even your content,<sup>1</sup> I wish might be found in the calendar of my past endeavours; for then we wound our modesty, and make foul the clearness of our deservings, when of ourselves we publish them.

*Count.* What does this knave here? Get you gone, sirrah: The complaints, I have heard of you, I do not all believe; 'tis my slowness, that I do not: for, I know, you lack not folly to commit them, and have ability enough to make such knaveries yours.

*Clo.* 'Tis not unknown to you, madam, I am a poor fellow.

*Count.* Well, sir.

*Clo.* No, madam, 'tis not so well, that I am poor; though many of the rich are damned: But, if I may have your ladyship's good will to go to the world,<sup>2</sup> Isbel the woman and I will do as we may.

*Count.* Wilt thou needs be a beggar?

*Clo.* I do beg your good will in this case.

*Count.* In what case?

*Clo.* In Isbel's case, and mine own. Service is no heritage: and, I think, I shall never have the blessing of God, till I have issue of my body; for, they say, bearns<sup>3</sup> are blessings.

*Count.* Tell me thy reason why thou wilt marry.

*Clo.* My poor body, madam, requires it: I am driven on by the flesh; and he must needs go, that the devil drives.

*Count.* Is this all your worship's reason?

*Clo.* Faith, madam, I have other holy reasons, such as they are.

*Count.* May the world know them?

(1) To act up to your desires.

(2) To be married.

(3) Children.

*Clo.* I have been, madam, a wicked creature, as you and all flesh and blood are ; and, indeed, I do marry, that I may repent.

*Count.* Thy marriage, sooner than thy wickedness.

*Clo.* I am out of friends, madam ; and I hope to have friends for my wife's sake.

*Count.* Such friends are thine enemies, knave.

*Clo.* You are shallow, madam ; e'en great friends ; for the knaves come to do that for me, which I am a-weary of. He, that ears<sup>1</sup> my land, spares my team, and gives me leave to inn the crop : If I be his cuckold, he's my drudge : He, that comforts my wife, is the cherisher of my flesh and blood ; he, that cherishes my flesh and blood, loves my flesh and blood ; he, that loves my flesh and blood, is my friend : *ergo*,<sup>2</sup> he that kisses my wife, is my friend. If men could be contented to be what they are, there were no fear in marriage ; for young Charbon the puritan, and old Poysam the papist, howsoe'er their hearts are severed in religion, their heads are both one, they may joll horns together, like any deer i' the herd.

*Count.* Wilt thou ever be a foul-mouthed and calumnious knave ?

*Clo.* A prophet I, madam ; and I speak the truth the next way :<sup>3</sup>

*For I the ballad will repeat,  
Which men full true shall find ;  
Your marriage comes by destiny,  
Your cuckoo sings by kind.*

*Count.* Get you gone, sir ; I'll talk with you more anon.

*Stew.* May it please you, madam, that he bid Helen come to you ; of her I am to speak.

*Count.* Sirrah, tell my gentlewoman, I would speak with her ; Helen I mean.

- (1) Ploughs.      (2) Therefore.  
(3) The nearest way.

*Clo.* Was this fair face the cause, quoth she,  
[Singing.

*Why the Grecians sacked Troy?  
Fond done,<sup>1</sup> done fond,  
Was this king Priam's joy.  
With that she sighed as she stood,  
With that she sighed as she stood,  
And gave this sentence then;  
Among nine bad if one be good,  
Among nine bad if one be good,  
There's yet one good in ten.*

*Count.* What, one good in ten? you corrupt the song, sirrah.

*Clo.* One good woman in ten, madam; which is a purifying o' the song: 'Would God would serve the world so all the year! we'd find no fault with the tythe-woman, if I werc the parson: One in ten, quoth a'! an we might have a good woman born but every blazing star, or at an earthquake, 'twould mend the lottery well; a man may draw his heart out, ere he pluck one.

*Count.* You'll be gone, sir knave, and do as I command you?

*Clo.* That man should be at woman's command, and yet no hurt done!—Though honesty be no puritan, yet it will do no hurt; it will wear the surplice of humility over the black gown of a big heart.—I am going, forsooth: the business is for Helen to come hither.

[Exit Clown.

*Count.* Well, now.

*Stew.* I know, madam, you love your gentlewoman entirely.

*Count.* Faith, I do: her father bequeathed her to me; and she herself, without other advantage, may lawfully make title to as much love as she finds: there is more owing her, than is paid; and more shall be paid her, than she'll demand.

*Stew.* Madam, I was very late more near her

(1) Foolishly done.

VOL. III.

B

than, I think, she wished me : alone she was, and did communicate to herself, her own words to her own ears ; she thought, I dare vow for her, they touched not any stranger sense. Her matter was, she loved your son : Fortune, she said, was no goddess, that had put such difference betwixt their two estates ; Love, no god, that would not extend his might, only where qualities were level ; Diana, no queen of virgins, that would suffer her poor knight to be surprised, without rescue, in the first assault, or ransom afterward : This she delivered in the most bitter touch of sorrow, that e'er I heard virgin exclaim in : which I held my duty, speedily to acquaint you withal ; sithence,<sup>1</sup> in the loss that may happen, it concerns you something to know it.

*Count.* You have discharged this honestly ; keep it to yourself : many likelihoods informed me of this before, which hung so tottering in the balance, that I could neither believe, nor misdoubt : Pray you, leave me : stall this in your bosom, and I thank you for your honest care : I will speak with you further anon. [*Exit Steward.*]

*Enter Helena.*

*Count.* Even so it was with me, when I was young :

If we are nature's, these are ours ; this thorn  
Doth to our rose of youth rightly belong ;

Our blood to us, this to our blood is born ;  
It is the show and seal of nature's truth,  
Where love's strong passion is impress'd in youth :  
By our remembrances of days foregone,  
Such were our faults ;—or then we thought them  
none.

Her eye is sick on't ; I observe her now.

*Hel.* What is your pleasure, madam ?

*Count.* You know, Helen,  
I am a mother to you.

(1) Since.

*Hel.* Mine honourable mistress.

*Count.*

Nay, a mother;

Why not a mother? When I said, a mother,  
Methought you saw a serpent: What's in mother,  
That you start at it? I say, I am your mother;  
And put you in the catalogue of those  
That were enwombed mine: 'Tis often seen,  
Adoption strives with nature; and choice breeds  
A native slip to us from foreign seeds:  
You ne'er oppress'd me with a mother's groan,  
Yet I express to you a mother's care:—  
God's mercy, maiden! does it curd thy blood,  
To say, I am thy mother? What's the matter,  
That this distemper'd messenger of wet,  
The many-colour'd Iris, rounds thine eye?  
Why?—that you are my daughter?

*Hel.*

That I am not.

*Count.* I say, I am your mother.

*Hel.*

Pardon, madam;

The count Rousillon cannot be my brother:  
I am from humble, he from honour'd name;  
No note upon my parents, his all noble:  
My master, my dear lord, he is; and I  
His servant live, and will his vassal die:  
He must not be my brother.

*Count.*

Nor I your mother?

*Hel.* You are my mother, madam; 'Would you  
were

(So that my lord, your son, were not my brother.)  
Indeed, my mother!—or were you both our mothers,  
I care no more for,<sup>1</sup> than I do for heaven,  
So I were not his sister: Can't no other,  
But, I your daughter, he must be my brother?

*Count.* Yes, Helen, you might be my daughter-  
in-law;

God shield, you mean it not! daughter, and mother,  
So strive<sup>2</sup> upon your pulse: What, pale again?

(1) i. e. I care as much for: I wish it equally

(2) Contend.

My fear hath catch'd your fondness : Now I see  
The mystery of your loneliness, and find  
Your salt tears' head.<sup>1</sup> Now to all sense 'tis gross,  
You love my son ; invention is asham'd,  
Against the proclamation of thy passion,  
To say, thou dost not : therefore tell me true ;  
But tell me then, 'tis so :—for, look, thy cheeks  
Confess it, one to the other ; and thine eyes  
See it so grossly shown in thy behaviours,  
That in their kind<sup>2</sup> they speak it : only sin  
And hellish obstinacy tie thy tongue,  
That truth should be suspected : Speak, is't so ?  
If it be so, you have wound a goodly clue ;  
If it be not, forswear't : howe'er, I charge thee,  
As heaven shall work in me for thine avail,  
To tell me truly.

*Hel.* Good madam, pardon me !

*Count.* Do you love my son ?

*Hel.* Your pardon, noble mistress !

*Count.* Love you my son ?

*Hel.* Do not you love him, madam ?

*Count.* Go not about ; my love hath in't a bond,  
Whereof the world takes note : come, come, dis-  
close

The state of your affection ; for your passions  
Have to the full appeach'd.

*Hel.* Then, I confess,  
Here on my knee, before high heaven and you,  
That before you, and next unto high heaven,  
I love your son :—

My friends were poor, but honest ; so's my love :  
Be not offended ; for it hurts not him,  
That he is lov'd of me : I follow him not  
By any token of presumptuous suit ;  
Nor would I have him, till I do deserve him ;  
Yet never know how that desert should be.  
I know I love in vain, strive against hope ;

(1) The source, the cause of your grief.

(2) According to their nature.

Yet, in this captious and intenable sieve,  
I still pour in the waters of my love,  
And lack not to lose still: thus, Indian-like,  
Religious in mine error, I adore  
The sun, that looks upon his worshipper,  
But knows of him no more. My dearest madam,  
Let not your hate encounter with my love,  
For loving where you do: but, if yourself,  
Whose aged honour cites a virtuous youth,<sup>1</sup>  
Did ever, in so true a flame of liking,  
Wish chastely, and love dearly, that your Dian  
Was both herself and love;<sup>2</sup> O then, give pity  
To her, whose state is such, that cannot choose  
But lend and give, where she is sure to lose;  
That seeks not to find that her search implies,  
But, riddle-like, lives sweetly where she dies.

*Count.* Had you not lately an intent, speak truly,  
To go to Paris?

*Hel.* Madam, I had.

*Count.* Wherefore? tell true.

*Hel.* I will tell truth, by grace itself, I swear.  
You know, my father left me some prescriptions  
Of rare and prov'd effects, such as his reading,  
And manifest experience, had collected  
For general sovereignty; and that he will'd me  
In heedfullest reservation to bestow them,  
As notes, whose faculties inclusive were,  
More than they were in note:<sup>3</sup> amongst the rest,  
There is a remedy, approv'd, set down,  
To cure the desperate languishes, whereof  
The king is render'd lost.

*Count.* This was your motive  
For Paris, was it? speak.

*Hel.* My lord your son made me to think of this;

(1) *i. e.* Whose respectable conduct in age proves  
that you were no less virtuous when young.

(2) *i. e.* Venus.

(3) Receipts in which greater virtues were en-  
closed than appeared.



Else Paris, and the medicine, and the king,  
Had, from the conversation of my thoughts,  
Haply, been absent then.

*Count.* But think you, Helen,  
If you should tender your supposed aid,  
He would receive it? He and his physicians  
Are of a mind; be, that they cannot help him,  
They, that they cannot help: How shall they credit  
A poor unlearned virgin, when the schools,  
Embowell'd of their doctrine,<sup>1</sup> have left off  
The danger to itself?

*Hel.* There's something hints,  
More than my father's skill, which was the greatest  
Of his profession, that his good receipt  
Shall, for my legacy, be sanctified  
By the luckiest stars in heaven: and, would your  
honour

But give me leave to try success, I'd venture  
The well-lost life of mine on his grace's cure,  
By such a day, and hour.

*Count.* Dost thou believe't?

*Hel.* Ay, madam, knowingly.

*Count.* Why, Helen, thou shalt have my leave,  
and love,

Means, and attendants, and my loving greetings  
To those of mine in court; I'll stay at home,  
And pray God's blessing into thy attempt:  
Be gone to-morrow; and be sure of this,  
What I can help thee to, thou shalt not miss.

[*Exeunt.*]

(1) Exhausted of their skill.

ACT II.

*SCENE I.*—Paris. *A room in the King's palace. Flourish. Enter King, with young Lords taking leave for the Florentine war; Bertram, Parolles, and attendants.*

*King.* Farewell, young lord, these warlike principles,  
Do not throw from you :—and you, my lord, farewell :—

Share the advice betwixt you ; if both gain all,  
The gift doth stretch itself as 'tis receiv'd,  
And is enough for both.

1 *Lord.* It is our hope, sir,  
After well-enter'd soldiers, to return  
And find your grace in health.

*King.* No, no, it cannot be ; and yet my heart  
Will not confess he owes the malady  
That doth my life besiege. Farewell, young lords ;  
Whether I live or die, be you the sons  
Of worthy Frenchmen : let higher Italy  
(Those 'bated, that inherit but the fall  
Of the last monarchy,<sup>1</sup>) see, that you come  
Not to woo honour, but to wed it ; when  
The bravest questant<sup>2</sup> shrinks, find what you seek,  
That fame may cry you loud : I say, farewell.

2 *Lord.* Health, at your bidding, serve your  
majesty !

*King.* Those girls of Italy, take heed of them ;  
They say, our French lack language to deny,  
If they demand : beware of being captives,  
Before you serve.<sup>3</sup>

*Both.* Our hearts receive your warnings.

(1) *i. e.* Those excepted who possess modern  
Italy, the remains of the Roman empire.

(2) Seeker, inquirer.

(3) Be not captives before you are soldiers.

**King.** Farewell.—Come hither to me.

[*The King retires to a couch.*]

**1 Lord.** O my sweet lord, that you will stay behind us.

**Par.** 'Tis not his fault; the spark——

**2 Lord.** O, 'tis brave wars!

**Par.** Most admirable: I have seen those wars.

**Ber.** I am commanded here, and kept a coil with; *T'oo young, and the next year, and 'tis too early.*

**Par.** An thy mind stand to it, boy, steal away bravely.

**Ber.** I shall stay here the forehorse to a smock, Creaking my shoes on the plain masonry, Till honour be bought up, and no sword worn, But one to dance with! By heaven, I'll steal away.

**1 Lord.** There's honour in the theft.

**Par.** Commit it, count.

**2 Lord.** I am your accessory; and so farewell.

**Ber.** I grow to you, and our parting is a tortured body.

**1 Lord.** Farewell, captain.

**2 Lord.** Sweet monsieur Parolles!

**Par.** Noble heroes, my sword and yours are kin. Good sparks and lustrous, a word, good metals:— You shall find in the regiment of the Spinii, one captain Spurio, with his cicatrice, an emblem of war, here on his sinister cheek; it was this very sword entrenched it: say to him, I live; and observe his reports for me.

**2 Lord.** We shall, noble captain.

**Par.** Mars dote on you for his novices! [*Exeunt Lords.*] What will you do?

**Ber.** Stay; the king—— [*Seeing him rise.*]

**Par.** Use a more spacious ceremony to the noble lords; you have restrained yourself within the list of too cold an adieu: be more expressive to them;

(1) With a noise, bustle.

(2) In Shakspeare's time it was usual for gentlemen to dance with swords on.

for they wear themselves in the cap of time,<sup>1</sup> there, do muster true gait,<sup>2</sup> eat, speak, and move under the influence of the most received star; and though the devil lead the measure,<sup>3</sup> such are to be followed: after them, and take a more dilated farewell.

*Ber.* And I will do so.

*Par.* Worthy fellows; and like to prove most sinewy sword-men. [*Exe. Bertram and Parolles.*]

*Enter Lafeu.*

*Laf.* Pardon, my lord, [*Kneeling.*] for me and for my tidings.

*King.* I'll fee thee to stand up.

*Laf.* Then here's a man  
Stands, that has brought his pardon. I would, you  
Had kneel'd, my lord, to ask me mercy; and  
That, at my bidding, you could so stand up.

*King.* I would I had; so I had broke thy pate,  
And ask'd thee mercy for't.

*Laf.* Good faith, across:<sup>4</sup>  
But, my good lord, 'tis thus; Will you be cur'd  
Of your infirmity?

*King.* No.

*Laf.* O, will you eat  
No grapes, my royal fox? yes, but you will,  
My noble grapes, an if my royal fox  
Could reach them: I have seen a medicine,<sup>5</sup>  
That's able to breath life into a stone;  
Quicken a rock, and make you dance canary,<sup>6</sup>  
With sprightly fire and motion; whose simple touch  
Is powerful to araise king Pepin, nay,  
To give great Charlemain a pen in his hand,  
And write to her a love-line.

*King.* What her is this?

(1) They are the foremost in the fashion.

(2) Have the true military step. (3) The dance.

(4) Unskilfully; a phrase taken from the exercise at a quintaine.

(5) A female physician. (6) A kind of dance.

*Laf.* Why, doctor she: My lord, there's one arriv'd,

If you will see her,—now, by my faith and honour,  
If seriously I may convey my thoughts  
In this my light deliverance, I have spoke  
With one, that, in her sex, her years, profession,<sup>1</sup>  
Wisdom, and constancy, hath amaz'd me more  
Than I dare blame my weakness: Will you see her  
(For that is her demand,) and know her business?  
That done, laugh well at me.

*King.* Now, good Lafeu,  
Bring in the admiration; that we with thee  
May spend our wonder too, or take off thine,  
By wond'ring how thou took'st it.

*Laf.* Nay, I'll fit you,  
And not be all day neither. [*Exit Lafeu.*]

*King.* Thus he his special nothing ever prologues.

*Re-enter Lafeu, with Helena.*

*Laf.* Nay, come your ways.

*King.* This haste hath wings indeed.

*Laf.* Nay, come your ways;  
This is his majesty, say your mind to him:  
A traitor you do look like; but such traitors  
His majesty seldom fears: I am Cressid's uncle,<sup>2</sup>  
That dare leave two together; fare you well. [*Ex.*]

*King.* Now, fair one, does your business follow us?

*Hel.* Ay, my good lord. Gerard de Narbon was  
My father; in what he did profess, well found.<sup>3</sup>

*King.* I knew him.

*Hel.* The rather will I spare my praises towards  
him;

Knowing him, is enough. On his bed of death  
Many receipts he gave me; chiefly one,  
Which, as the dearest issue of his practice,  
And of his old experience the only darling,

(1) By profession is meant her declaration of the  
object of her coming.

(2) I am like Pandarus.

(3) Of acknowledged excellence.

He bade me store up, as a triple eye,<sup>1</sup>  
Safer than mine own two, more dear: I have so:  
And, hearing your high majesty is touch'd  
With that malignant cause wherein the honour  
Of my dear father's gift stands chief in power,  
I come to tender it, and my appliance,  
With all bound humbleness.

*King.* We thank you, maiden;  
But may not be so credulous of cure,—  
When our most learned doctors leave us; and  
The congregated college have concluded  
That labouring art can never ransom nature  
From her inaidable estate,—I say we must not  
So stain our judgment, or corrupt our hope,  
To prostitute our past-cure malady  
To empirics; or to dis sever so  
Our great self and our credit, to esteem  
A senseless help, when help past sense we deem.

*Hel.* My duty then shall pay me for my pains:  
I will no more enforce mine office on you;  
Humbly entreating from your royal thoughts  
A modest one, to bear me back again.

*King.* I cannot give thee less, to be call'd  
grateful;  
Thou thought'st to help me; and such thanks I give,  
As one near death to those that wish him live:  
But, what at full I know, thou know'st no part;  
I knowing all my peril, thou no art.

*Hel.* What I can do, can do no hurt to try,  
Since you set up your rest 'gainst remedy:  
He that of greatest works is finisher,  
Oft does them by the weakest minister:  
So holy writ in babes hath judgment shown,  
When judges have been babes.<sup>2</sup> Great floods have  
flown

From simple sources;<sup>3</sup> and great seas have dried,

(1) A third eye.

(2) An allusion to Daniel judging the two Elders.

(3) i. e. When Moses smote the rock in Horeb.

When miracles have by the greatest been denied.  
 Oft expectation fails, and most oft there  
 Where most it promises ; and oft it hits,  
 Where hope is coldest, and despair most sits.

*King.* I must not hear thee ; fare thee well, kind  
 maid ;

Thy pains, not us'd, must by thyself be paid :  
 Proffers, not took, reap thanks for their reward.

*Hel.* Inspired merit so by breath is barr'd :  
 It is not so with him that all things knows,  
 As 'tis with us that square our guess by shows .  
 But most it is presumption in us, when  
 The help of heaven we count the act of men.  
 Dear sir, to my endeavours give consent ;  
 Of heaven, not me, make an experiment.  
 I am not an impostor, that proclaim  
 Myself against the level of mine aim ;<sup>2</sup>  
 But know I think, and think I know most surc,  
 My art is not past power, nor you past cure.

*King.* Art thou so confident ? Within what space  
 Hop'st thou my cure ?

*Hel.* The greatest grace lending grace,  
 Ere twice the horses of the sun shall bring  
 Their fiery torcher his diurnal ring :  
 Ere twice in murk and occidental damp  
 Moist Hesperus<sup>3</sup> hath quench'd his sleepy lamp ;  
 Or four and twenty times the pilot's glass  
 Hath told the thievish minutes how they pass ;  
 What is infirm from your sound parts shall fly,  
 Health shall live free, and sickness freely die.

*King.* Upon thy certainty and confidence,  
 What dar'st thou venture ?

*Hel.* Tax of impudence,—

(1) This must refer to the children of Israel  
 passing the Red Sea, when miracles had been  
 denied by Pharaoh.

(2) *i. e.* Pretend to greater things than befits the  
 mediocrity of my condition.

(3) The evening star.

A strumpet's boldness, a divulged shame,—  
 Traduc'd by odious ballads ; my maiden's name  
 Sear'd otherwise ; no worse of worst extended,  
 With vilest torture let my life be ended.

*King.* Methinks, in thee some blessed spirit  
 doth speak ;

His powerful sound, within an organ weak :  
 And what impossibility would slay  
 In common sense, sense saves another way.  
 Thy life is dear ; for all, that life can rate  
 Worth name of life, in thee hath estimate ;<sup>1</sup>  
 Youth, beauty, wisdom, courage, virtue, all  
 That happiness and prime<sup>2</sup> can happy call :  
 Thou this to hazard, needs must intimate  
 Skill infinite, or monstrous desperate.  
 Sweet practiser, thy physic I will try ;  
 That ministers thine own death, if I die.

*Hel.* If I break time, or flinch in property  
 Of what I spoke, unpitied let me die ;  
 And well deserv'd : Not helping, death's my fee ;  
 But, if I help, what do you promise me ?

*King.* Make thy demand.

*Hel.* But will you make it even ?

*King.* Ay, by my sceptre, and my hopes of  
 heaven.

*Hel.* Then shalt thou give me, with thy kingly  
 hand,

What husband in thy power I will command :  
 Exempted be from me the arrogance .  
 To choose from forth the royal blood of France ;  
 My low and humble name to propagate  
 With any branch or image of thy state :  
 But such a one, thy vassal, whom I know  
 Is free for me to ask, thee to bestow.

*King.* Here is my hand ; the premises observ'd,  
 Thy will by my performance shall be serv'd ;

(1) *i. e.* May be counted among the gifts enjoyed  
 by thee.

(2) The spring or morning of life.



So make the choice of thy own time ; for I,  
Thy resolv'd patient, on thee still rely.  
More should I question thee, and more I must ;  
Though, more to know, could not be more to trust ;  
From whence thou cam'st, how tended on,—But

rest

Unquestion'd welcome, and undoubted blest.—  
Give me some help here, ho !—If thou proceed  
As high as word, my deed shall match thy deed.

[*Flourish. Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—Rousillon. *A room in the Countess's Palace. Enter Countess and Clown.*

*Count.* Come on, sir ; I shall now put you to the height of your breeding.

*Clo.* I will show myself highly fed, and lowly taught : I know my business is but to the court.

*Count.* To the court ! why, what place make you special, when you put off that with such contempt ? But to the court !

*Clo.* Truly, madam, if God have lent a man any manners, he may easily put it off at court : he that cannot make a leg, put off's cap, kiss his hand, and say nothing, has neither leg, hands, lip, nor cap ; and, indeed, such a fellow, to say precisely, were not for the court ; but, for me, I have an answer will serve all men.

*Count.* Marry, that's a bountiful answer, that fits all questions.

*Clo.* It is like a barber's chair, that fits all buttocks ; the pin-buttock, the quatch-buttock, the brawn-buttock, or any buttock.

*Count.* Will your answer serve fit to all questions ?

*Clo.* As fit as ten groats is for the hand of an attorney, as your French crown for your taffata punk, as Tib's rush for Tom's fore-finger, as a pancake for Shrove-Tuesday, a morris for May-day, as the nail to his hole, the cuckold to his horn, as a scolding quean to a wrangling knave, as the

nun's lip to the friar's mouth ; nay, as the pudding to his skin.

*Count.* Have you, I say, an answer of such fitness for all questions ?

*Clo.* From below your duke, to beneath your constable, it will fit any question.

*Count.* It must be an answer of most monstrous size, that must fit all demands.

*Clo.* But a trifle neither, in good faith, if the learned should speak truth of it : here it is, and all that belongs to't : Ask me, if I am a courtier ; it shall do you no harm to learn.

*Count.* To be young again, if we could : I will be a fool in question, hoping to be the wiser by your answer. I pray you, sir, are you a courtier ?

*Clo.* O Lord, sir,—There's a simple putting off ;—more, more, a hundred of them.

*Count.* Sir, I am a poor friend of yours, that loves you.

*Clo.* O Lord, sir,—Thick, thick, spare not me.

*Count.* I think, sir, you can eat none of this homely meat.

*Clo.* O Lord, sir,—Nay, put me to't, I warrant you.

*Count.* You were lately whipped, sir, as I think.

*Clo.* O Lord, sir,—Spare not me.

*Count.* Do you cry, *O Lord, sir*, at your whipping, and *spare not me* ? Indeed, your *O Lord, sir*, is very sequent<sup>1</sup> to your whipping ; you would answer very well to a whipping, if you were but bound to't.

*Clo.* I ne'er had worse luck in my life, in my—  
*O Lord, sir* : I see, things may serve long, but not serve ever.

*Count.* I play the noble housewife with the time, to entertain it so merrily with a fool.

*Clo.* O Lord, sir,—Why, there't serves well again.

*Count.* An end, sir, to your business : Give Helen this,

(1) Properly follows.

And urge her to a present answer back :  
Commend me to my kinsmen, and my son ;  
This is not much.

*Clo.* Not much commendation to them.

*Count.* Not much employment for you : You understand me ?

*Clo.* Most fruitfully ; I am there before my legs.

*Count.* Haste you again. [*Exeunt severally.*]

*SCENE III.*—Paris. *A room in the King's Palace.* Enter Bertram, Lafeu, and Parolles.

*Laf.* They say, miracles are past ; and we have our philosophical persons, to make modern<sup>1</sup> and familiar things, supernatural and causeless. Hence is it, that we make trifles of terrors ; ensconcing ourselves into seeming knowledge, when we should submit ourselves to an unknown fear.<sup>2</sup>

*Par.* Why, 'tis the rarest argument of wonder, that hath shot out in our latter times.

*Ber.* And so 'tis.

*Laf.* To be relinquish'd of the artists,—

*Par.* So I say ; both of Galen and Paracelsus.

*Laf.* Of all the learned and authentic fellows,—

*Par.* Right, so I say.

*Laf.* That gave him out incurable,—

*Par.* Why, there 'tis ; so say I too.

*Laf.* Not to be helped,—

*Par.* Right : as 'twere, a man assured of an—

*Laf.* Uncertain life, and sure death.

*Par.* Just, you say well ; so would I have said.

*Laf.* I may truly say, it is a novelty to the world.

*Par.* It is, indeed : if you will have it in showing, you shall read it in,—What do you call there ?—

*Laf.* A showing of a heavenly effect in an earthly actor.

*Par.* That's it I would have said : the very same.

(1) Ordinary.

(2) Fear means here the object of fear.

**Scene III. THAT ENDS WELL.**

**33**

*Laf.* Why, your dolphin<sup>1</sup> is not lustier : 'fore me I speak in respect——

*Par.* Nay, 'tis strange, 'tis very strange, that is the brief and the tedious of it ; and he is of a most facinorous<sup>2</sup> spirit, that will not acknowledge it to be the——

*Laf.* Very hand of heaven.

*Par.* Ay, so I say.

*Laf.* In a most weak——

*Par.* And debile minister, great power, great transcendence : which should, indeed, give us a further use to be made, than alone the recovery of the king, as to be——

*Laf.* Generally thankful.

*Enter King, Helena, and attendants.*

*Par.* I would have said it ; you say well : Here comes the king.

*Laf.* Lustick,<sup>3</sup> as the Dutchman says : I'll like a maid the better, whilst I have a tooth in my head : Why, he's able to lead her a coranto. \*

*Par.* *Mort du Vinaigre!* Is not this Helen ?

*Laf.* 'Fore God, I think so.

*King.* Go, call before me all the lords in court.—

*[Exit an attendant.]*

Sit, my preserver, by thy patient's side ;  
And with this healthful hand, whose banish'd sense  
Thou hast repeal'd, a second time receive  
The confirmation of my promis'd gift,  
Which but attends thy naming.

*Enter several Lords.*

Fair maid, send forth thine eye : this youthful parcel  
Of noble bachelors stand at my bestowing,  
O'er whom both sovereign power and father's voice<sup>4</sup>

(1) The dauphin.

(2) Wicked.

(3) Lustigh is the Dutch word for lusty, cheerful.

(4) They were wards as well as subjects.

I have to use thy frank election make ;  
Thou hast power to choose, and they none to forsake.

*Hel.* To each of you one fair and virtuous mistress

Fall, when love please !—marry, to each, but one !

*Laf.* I'd give bay Curtal,<sup>2</sup> and his furniture,  
My mouth no more were broken than these boys',  
And writ as little beard.

*King.* Peruse them well  
Not one of those, but had a noble father.

*Hel.* Gentlemen,  
Heaven hath, through me, restor'd the king to health.

*All.* We understand it, and thank heaven for you.

*Hel.* I am a simple maid ; and therein wealthiest,  
That, I protest, I simply am a maid :—

Please it your majesty, I have done already :  
The blushes in my cheeks thus whisper me,  
*We blush, that thou should'st choose ; but, be re-*  
*fus'd,*

*Let the white death sit on thy cheek for ever ;*  
*We'll ne'er come there again.*

*King.* Make choice ; and, see,  
Who shuns thy love, shuns all his love in me.

*Hel.* Now, Dian, from thy altar do I fly ;  
And to imperial Love, that god most high,  
Do my sighs stream.—Sir, will you hear my suit ?

*1 Lord.* And grant it.

*Hel.* Thanks, sir ; all the rest is mute.<sup>3</sup>

*Laf.* I had rather be in this choice, than throw  
ames-ace<sup>4</sup> for my life.

*Hel.* The honour, sir, that flames in your fair eyes,  
Before I speak, too threateningly replies :  
Love make your fortunes twenty times above  
Her that so wishes, and her humble love !

(1) Except one, meaning Bertram.

(2) A docked horse.

(3), i. e. I have no more to say to you.

(4) The lowest chance of the dice.

2 Lord. No better, if you please.

*Hel.* My wish receive,  
Which great love grant! and so I take my leave.

*Laf.* Do all they deny her? An they were sons  
of mine, I'd have them whipped; or I would send  
them to the Turk, to make eunuchs of.

*Hel.* Be not afraid [*To a Lord*] that I your hand  
should take;

I'll never do you wrong for your own sake:  
Blessing upon your vows! and in your bed  
Find fairer fortune, if you ever wed!

*Laf.* These boys are boys of ice, they'll none  
have her: sure, they are bastards to the English;  
the French ne'er got them.

*Hel.* You are too young, too happy, and too good,  
To make yourself a son out of my blood.

4 Lord. Fair one, I think not so.

*Laf.* There's one grape yet,—I am sure, thy  
father drank wine.—But if thou be'st not an ass,  
I am a youth of fourteen; I have known thee al-  
ready.

*Hel.* I dare not say I take you; [*To Bertram.*]  
but I give

Me, and my service, ever whilst I live,  
Into your guiding power.—This is the man.

*King.* Why then, young Bertram, take her,  
she's thy wife.

*Ber.* My wife, my liege? I shall beseech your  
highness,

In such a business give me leave to use  
The help of mine own eyes.

*King.* Know'st thou not, Bertram,  
What she has done for me?

*Ber.* Yes, my good lord;  
But never hope to know why I should marry her.

*King.* Thou know'st, she has rais'd me from  
my sickly bed.

*Ber.* But follows it my lord, to bring me down,  
Must answer for your raising? I knew her well;  
She had her breeding at my father's charge:

A poor physician's daughter my wife !—Disdain  
Rather corrupt me ever !

*King.* 'Tis only title<sup>1</sup> thou disdain'st in her, the  
which

I can build up. Strange is it, that our bloods,  
Of colour, weight, and heat, pour'd all together,  
Would quite confound distinction, yet stand off  
In differences so mighty : if she be  
All that is virtuous, (save what thou dislik'st,  
A poor physician's daughter,) thou dislik'st  
Of virtue for the name : but do not so :  
From lowest place when virtuous things proceed,  
The place is dignified by the doer's deed :  
Where great additions swell,<sup>2</sup> and virtue none,  
It is a dropsied honour : good alone  
Is good, without a name ; vileness is so :<sup>3</sup>  
The property by what it is should go,  
Not by the title. She is young, wise, fair ;  
In these to nature she's immediate heir ;  
And these breed honour : that is honour's scorn,  
Which challenges itself as honour's born,  
And is not like the sire : Honours best thrive,  
When rather from our acts we them derive  
Than our fore-goers : the mere word's a slave,  
Debauch'd on every tomb ; on every grave,  
A lying trophy, and as oft is dumb,  
Where dust, and damn'd oblivion, is the tomb  
Of honour'd bones indeed. What should be said ?  
If thou canst like this creature as a maid,  
I can create the rest : virtue, and she,  
Is her own dower ; honour, and wealth, from me.

*Ber.* I cannot love her, nor will strive to do't.

*King.* Thou wrong'st thyself, if thou should'st  
strive to choose.

*Hel.* That you are well restor'd, my lord, I am  
glad ;

(1) *i. e.* The want of title. (2) Titles.

(3) Good is good independent of any worldly  
distinction, and so is vileness vile.

Let the rest go.

*King.* My honour's at the stake ; which to defeat,  
I must produce my power : Here, take her hand,  
Proud scornful boy, unworthy this good gift ;  
That dost in vile misprision shackle up  
My love, and her desert ; that canst not dream,  
We, poisoning us in her defective scale,  
Shall weigh thee to the beam : that wilt not know  
It is in us to plant thine honour, where  
We please to have it grow : Check thy contempt :  
Obey our will, which travails in thy good :  
Believe not thy disdain, but presently  
Do thine own fortunes that obedient right,  
Which both thy duty owes, and our power claims ;  
Or I will throw thee from my care for ever,  
Into the staggers, and the careless lapse  
Of youth and ignorance ; both my revenge and hate,  
Loosing upon thee in the name of justice,  
Without all terms of pity : Speak ; thine answer.

*Ber.* Pardon, my gracious lord ; for I submit  
My fancy to your eyes : When I consider,  
What great creation, and what dole of honour,  
Flies where you bid it, I find that she, which late  
Was in my nobler thoughts most base, is now  
The praised of the king ; who, so ennobled,  
Is, as 'twere, born so.

*King.* Take her by the hand,  
And tell her, she is thine : to whom I promise  
A counterpoise ; if not to thy estate,  
A balance more replete.

*Ber.* I take her hand.

*King.* Good fortune, and the favour of the king,  
Smile upon this contract ; whose ceremony  
Shall seem expedient on the now-born brief,  
And be perform'd to-night : the solemn feast  
Shall more attend upon the coming space,  
Expecting absent friends. As thou lov'st her,  
Thy love's to me religious ; else, does err.

[*Exeunt King, Bertram, Helena, Lords, and attendants.*]



*Laf.* Do you hear, monsieur? a word with you.

*Par.* Your pleasure, sir?

*Laf.* Your lord and master did well to make his recantation.

*Par.* Recantation?—My lord? my master?

*Laf.* Ay; Is it not a language, I speak?

*Par.* A most harsh one; and not to be understood without bloody succeeding. My master?

*Laf.* Are you companion to the count Rousillon?

*Par.* To any count; to all counts; to what is man.

*Laf.* To what is count's man; count's master is of another style.

*Par.* You are too old, sir; let it satisfy you, you are too old.

*Laf.* I must tell thee, sirrah, I write man; to which title age cannot bring thee.

*Par.* What I dare too well do, I dare not do.

*Laf.* I did think thee, for two ordinaries,<sup>1</sup> to be a pretty wise fellow; thou didst make tolerable vent of thy travel; it might pass: yet the scarfs, and the bannerets, about thee, did manifoldly dissuade me from believing thee a vessel of too great a burden. I have now found thee; when I lose thee again, I care not: yet art thou good for nothing but taking up; and that thou art scarce worth.

*Par.* Hadst thou not the privilege of antiquity upon thee,—

*Laf.* Do not plunge thyself too far in anger, lest thou hasten thy trial; which if—Lord have mercy on thee for a hen! So, my good window of lattice, fare thee well; thy casement I need not open, for I look through thee. Give me thy hand.

*Par.* My lord, you give me most egregious indignity.

*Laf.* Ay, with all my heart; and thou art worthy of it.

*Par.* I have not, my lord, deserved it.

(1) i. e. While I sat twice with thee at dinner.

*Laf.* Yes, good faith, every dram of it; and I will not bate thee a scruple.

*Par.* Well, I shall be wiser.

*Laf.* E'en as soon as thou canst, for thou hast to pull at a smack o' the contrary. If ever thou be'st bound in thy scarf, and beaten, thou shalt find what it is to be proud of thy bondage. I have a desire to hold my acquaintance with thee, or rather my knowledge; that I may say, in the default,<sup>1</sup> he is a man I know.

*Par.* My lord, you do me most insupportable vexation.

*Laf.* I would it were hell-pains for thy sake, and my poor doing eternal: for doing I am past; as I will by thee, in what motion age will give me leave.

[*Exit.*]

*Par.* Well, thou hast a son shall take this disgrace off me; scurvy, old, filthy, scurvy lord!—Well, I must be patient; there is no fettering of authority. I'll beat him, by my life, if I can meet him with any convenience, an he were double and double a lord. I'll have no more pity of his age, than I would have of—I'll beat him, an if I could but meet him again.

*Re-enter Lafeu.*

*Laf.* Sirrah, your lord and master's married, there's news for you; you have a new mistress.

*Par.* I most unfeignedly beseech your lordship to make some reservation of your wrongs: He is my good lord: whom I serve above, is my master.

*Laf.* Who? God?

*Par.* Ay, sir.

*Laf.* The devil it is, that's thy master. Why dost thou garter up thy arms o' this fashion? dost make hose of thy sleeves? do other servants so? Thou wert best set thy lower part where thy nose stands. By mine honour, if I were but two hours

(1) At a need

younger, I'd beat thee: methinks, thou art a general offence, and every man should beat thee. I think, thou wast created for men to breathe! themselves upon thee.

*Par.* This is hard and undeserved measure, my lord.

*Laf.* Go to, sir; you were beaten in Italy for picking a kernel out of a pomegranate; you are a vagabond, and no true traveller: you are more saucy with lords, and honourable personages, than the heraldry of your birth and virtue gives you commission. You are not worth another word, else I'd call you knave. I leave you. [Exit.]

*Enter Bertram.*

*Par.* Good, very good; it is so then.—Good, very good; let it be concealed a while.

*Ber.* Undone, and forfeited to cares for ever!

*Par.* What is the matter, sweet heart?

*Ber.* Although before the solemn priest I have sworn,

I will not bed her.

*Par.* What? what, sweet heart?

*Ber.* O my Parolles, they have married me:—I'll to the Tuscan wars, and never bed her.

*Par.* France is a dog-hole, and it no more merits The tread of a man's foot: to the wars!

*Ber.* There's letters from my mother; what the import is,

I know not yet.

*Par.* Ay, that would be known: To the wars, my boy, to the wars!

He wears his honour in a box unseen,  
That hugs his kicksy-wicksy<sup>2</sup> here at home;  
Spending his manly marrow in her arms,  
Which should sustain the bound and high curvet  
Of Mars's fiery steed: To other regions!  
France is a stable; we that dwell in't, jades;

(1) Exercise.      (2) A cant term for a wife.

Therefore, to the war !

*Ber.* It shall be so ; I'll send her to my house,  
Acquaint my mother with my hate to her,  
And wherefore I am fled ; write to the king  
That which I durst not speak : His present gift  
Shall furnish me to those Italian fields,  
Where noble fellows strike : War is no strife  
To the dark house,<sup>1</sup> and the detested wife.

*Par.* Will this capricio hold in thee, art sure ?

*Ber.* Go with me to my chamber, and advise me.  
I'll send her straight away : To-morrow  
I'll to the wars, she to her single sorrow.

*Par.* Why, these balls bound ; there's noise in it.  
—'Tis hard ;

A young man, married, is a man that's marr'd :  
Therefore away, and leave her bravely ; go :  
The king has done you wrong ; but, hush ! 'tis so.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*The same. Another room in the same. Enter Helena and Clown.*

*Hel.* My mother greets me kindly : Is she well ?

*Clo.* She is not well ; but yet she has her health ;  
she's very merry ; but yet she is not well : but  
thanks be given, she's very well, and wants nothing  
i' the world ; but yet she is not well.

*Hel.* If she be very well, what does she ail, that  
she's not very well ?

*Clo.* Truly, she's very well, indeed, but for two  
things.

*Hel.* What two things ?

*Clo.* One, that she's not in heaven, whither God  
send her quickly ! the other, that she's in earth,  
from whence God send her quickly !

*Enter Parolles.*

*Par.* Bless you, my fortunate lady !

*Hel.* I hope, sir, I have your good will to have  
mine own good fortunes.

(1) The house made gloomy by discontent.

*Par.* You had my prayers to lead them on : and to keep them on, have them still.—O, my knave ! How does my old lady ?

*Clo.* So that you had her wrinkles, and I her money, I would she did as you say.

*Par.* Why, I say nothing.

*Clo.* Marry, you are the wiser man ; for many a man's tongue shakes out his master's undoing : To say nothing, to do nothing, to know nothing, and to have nothing, is to be a great part of your title ; which is within a very little of nothing.

*Par.* Away, thou art a knave.

*Clo.* You should have said, sir, before a knave thou art a knave ; that is, before me thou art a knave : this had been truth, sir.

*Par.* Go to, thou art a witty fool, I have found thee.

*Clo.* Did you find me in yourself, sir ? or were you taught to find me ? The search, sir, was profitable ; and much fool may you find in you, even to the world's pleasure, and the increase of laughter.

*Par.* A good knave, i'faith, and well fed.—

Madam, my lord will go away to-night ;

A very serious business calls on him.

The great prerogative and rite of love,

Which, as your due, time claims, he does acknowledge ;

But puts it off by a compell'd restraint ;

Whose want, and whose delay, is strewed with sweets,

Which they distil now in the curbed time,

To make the coming hour o'erflow with joy,

And pleasure drown the brim.

*Hel.*

What's his will else ?

*Par.* That you will take your instant leave o' the king,

And make this haste as your own good proceeding,

Strengthen'd with what apology you think

May make it probable need.<sup>1</sup>

(1) A specious appearance of necessity.

Scene V. THAT ENDS WELL. 43

*Hel.* What more commands he?

*Par.* That, having this obtain'd, you presently  
Attend his further pleasure.

*Hel.* In every thing I wait upon his will.

*Par.* I shall report it so.

*Hel.* I pray you.—Come, sirrah.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.—*Another room in the same. Enter*  
*Lafeu and Bertram.*

*Laf.* But, I hope, your lordship thinks not him a  
soldier.

*Ber.* Yes, my lord, and of very valiant approof.

*Laf.* You have it from his own deliverance.

*Ber.* And by other warranted testimony.

*Laf.* Then my dial goes not true; I took this  
lark for a bunting.<sup>1</sup>

*Ber.* I do assure you, my lord, he is very great  
in knowledge, and accordingly valiant.

*Laf.* I have then sinned against his experience,  
and transgressed against his valour; and my state  
that way is dangerous, since I cannot yet find in  
my heart to repent. Here he comes; I pray you,  
make us friends. I will pursue the amity.

*Enter Parolles.*

*Par.* These things shall be done, sir.

[*To Bertram.*]

*Laf.* Pray you, sir, who's his tailor?

*Par.* Sir?

*Laf.* O, I know him well: Ay, sir; he, sir, is a  
good workman, a very good tailor.

*Ber.* Is she gone to the king? [*Aside to Parolles.*]

*Par.* She is.

*Ber.* Will she away to-night?

*Par.* As you'll have her.

(1) The bunting nearly resembles the sky-lark;  
but has little or no song, which gives estimation to  
the sky-lark.

*Ber.* I have writ my letters, casketed my treasure,  
Given order for our horses; and to-night,  
When I should take possession of the bride,—  
And, ere I do begin,—

*Laf.* A good traveller is something at the latter end of a dinner; but one that lies three-thirds, and uses a known truth to pass a thousand nothings with, should be once heard, and thrice beaten.—God save you, captain.

*Ber.* Is there any unkindness between my lord and you, monsieur?

*Par.* I know not how I have deserved to run into my lord's displeasure.

*Laf.* You have made shift to run into't, boots and spurs, and all, like him that leaped into the custard; and out of it you'll run again, rather than suffer question for your residence.

*Ber.* It may be, you have mistaken him, my lord.

*Laf.* And shall do so ever, though I took him at his prayers. Fare you well, my lord; and believe this of me, There can be no kernel in this light nut; the soul of this man is his clothes: trust him not in matter of heavy consequence; I have kept of them tame, and know their natures.—Farewell, monsieur: I have spoken better of you, than you have or will deserve at my hand; but we must do good against evil. [Exit.]

*Par.* An idle lord, I swear.

*Ber.* I think so.

*Par.* Why, do you not know him?

*Ber.* Yes, I do know him well; and common speech

Gives him a worthy pass. Here comes my clog.

*Enter Helena.*

*Hel.* I have, sir, as I was commanded from you, Spoke with the king, and have procur'd his leave For present parting; only, he desires Some private speech with you.

*Ber.* I shall obey his will.  
 You must not marvel, Helen, at my course,  
 Which holds not colour with the time, nor does  
 The ministration and required office  
 On my particular: prepar'd I was not  
 For such a business; therefore am I found  
 So much unsettled: This drives me to entreat you,  
 That presently you take your way for home;  
 And rather muse,<sup>1</sup> than ask, why I entreat you:  
 For my respects are better than they seem;  
 And my appointments have in them a need,  
 Greater than shows itself, at the first view,  
 To you that know them not. This to my mother:

[Giving a letter.

'Twill be two days ere I shall see you; so  
 I leave you to your wisdom.

*Hel.* Sir, I can nothing say,  
 But that I am your most obedient servant.

*Ber.* Come, come, no more of that.

*Hel.* And ever shall  
 With true observance seek to eke out that,  
 Wherein toward me my homely stars have fail'd  
 To equal my great fortune.

*Ber.* Let that go:  
 My haste is very great: Farewell; hie home.

*Hel.* Pray, sir, your pardon.

*Ber.* Well, what would you say?

*Hel.* I am not worthy of the wealth I owe;<sup>2</sup>  
 Nor dare I say, 'tis mine; and yet it is;  
 But, like a timorous thief, most fain would steal  
 What law does vouch mine own.

*Ber.* What would you have?

*Hel.* Something; and scarce so much:—nothing,  
 indeed.—

I would not tell you what I would: my lord—'faith,  
 yes;—

Strangers, and foes, do sunder, and not kiss.

*Ber.* I pray you, stay not, but in haste to horse.

(1) Wonder.

(2) Possess.



*Hel.* I shall not break your bidding, good my lord.

*Ber.* Where are my other men, monsieur?—  
Farewell. *{Exit Helena.}*

Go thou toward home ; where I will never come,  
Whilst I can shake my sword, or hear the drum :—  
Away, and for our flight.

*Par.* Bravely, coragio ! *{Exe.}*

### ACT III.

*SCENE I.*—Florence. *A room in the Duke's Palace. Flourish. Enter the Duke of Florence, attended ; two French Lords, and others.*

*Duke.* So that, from point to point, now have you heard

The fundamental reasons of this war ;  
Whose great decision hath much blood let forth,  
And more thirsts after.

*1 Lord.* Holy seems the quarrel  
Upon your grace's part ; black and fearful  
On the opposer.

*Duke.* Therefore we marvel much, our cousin  
France

Would, in so just a business, shut his bosom  
Against our borrowing prayers.

*2 Lord.* Good my lord,  
The reasons of our state I cannot yield,<sup>1</sup>  
But like a common and an outward man,<sup>2</sup>  
That the great figure of a council frames  
By self-unable motion : therefore dare not  
Say what I think of it ; since I have found  
Myself in my uncertain grounds to fail  
As often as I guess'd.

*Duke.* Be it his pleasure.

(1) *i. e.* I cannot inform you of the reasons.

(2) One not in the secret of affairs.

Scene II. THAT ENDS WELL.

47

2 Lord. But I am sure, the younger of our nature,<sup>1</sup>

That surfeit on their ease, will, day by day,  
Come here for physic.

Duke. Welcome shall they be ;

And all the honours, that can fly from us,  
Shall on them settle. You know your places well ;  
When better fall, for your avails they sell :

To-morrow to the field. [*Flourish. Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—Rousillon. A room in the Countess's Palace. Enter Countess and Clown.

Count. It hath happened all as I would have had it, save, that he comes not along with her.

Clo. By my troth, I take my young lord to be a very melancholy man.

Count. By what observance, I pray you ?

Clo. Why, he will look upon his boot, and sing ; mend the ruff,<sup>2</sup> and sing ; ask questions, and sing : pick his teeth, and sing : I know a man that had this trick of melancholy, sold a goodly manor for a song.

Count. Let me see what he writes, and when he means to come.

[*Opening a letter.*]

Clo. I have no mind to Isbel, since I was at court : our old ling, and our Isbels o' the country, are nothing like your old ling and your Isbels o' the court : the brains of my Cupid's knocked out ; and I begin to love, as an old man loves money, with no stomach.

Count. What have we here ?

Clo. E'en that you have there. [*Exit.*]

Count. [*Reads.*] *I have sent you a daughter-in-law : she hath recovered the king, and undone me. I have wedded her, not bedded her ; and sworn to make the not eternal. You shall hear, I am run away ; know it, before the report come. If there*

(1) As we say at present, our young fellows.

(2) The folding at the top of the boot.

*be breadth enough in the world, I will hold a long distance. My duty to you.*

*Your unfortunate son,*

BERTRAM.

This is not well, rash and unbridled boy,  
To fly the favours of so good a king;  
To pluck his indignation on thy head,  
By the misprizing of a maid too virtuous  
For the contempt of empire.

*Re-enter Clown.*

*Clo.* O madam, yonder is heavy news within,  
between two soldiers and my young lady.

*Count.* What is the matter?

*Clo.* Nay, there is some comfort in the news,  
some comfort; your son will not be killed so soon  
as I thought he would.

*Count.* Why should he be kill'd?

*Clo.* So say I, madam, if he run away, as I hear  
he does: the danger is in standing to't; that's the  
loss of men, though it be the getting of children.  
Here they come, will tell you more: for my part, I  
only hear, your son was run away. [*Exit Clown.*]

*Enter Helena and two Gentlemen.*

*1 Gent.* Save you, good madam.

*Hel.* Madam, my lord is gone, for ever gone.

*2 Gent.* Do not say so.

*Count.* Think upon patience.—'Pray you, gentlemen,—

I have felt so many quirks of joy, and grief,  
That the first face of neither, on the start,  
Can woman<sup>1</sup> me unto't:—Where is my son, I pray  
you?

*2 Gent.* Madam, he's gone to serve the duke of  
Florence:

We met him thitherward; from thence we came,

(1) *i. e.* Affect me suddenly and deeply, as our  
sex are usually affected.

And, after some despatch in hand at court,  
Thither we bend again.

*Hel.* Look on this letter, madam; here's my passport.

[Reads.] *When thou canst get the ring upon my finger,<sup>1</sup> which never shall come off, and show me a child begotten of thy body, that I am father to, then call me husband: but in such a then I write a never.*

This is a dreadful sentence.

*Count.* Brought you this letter, gentlemen?

*1 Gent.* Ay, madam;

And, for the contents' sake, are sorry for our pains.

*Count.* I pry'three, lady, have a better cheer;

If thou engrossest all the griefs are thine.<sup>2</sup>

Thou robb'st me of a moiety: He was my son;

But I do wash his name out of my blood,

And thou art all my child.—Towards Florence is he?

*2 Gent.* Ay, madam.

*Count.* And to be a soldier?

*2 Gent.* Such is his noble purpose: and, believe't,

The duke will lay upon him all the honour

That good convenience claims.

*Count.* Return you thither?

*1 Gent.* Ay, madam, with the swiftest wing of speed.

*Hel.* [Reads.] *Till I have no wife, I have nothing in France.*

'Tis bitter.

*Count.* Find you that there?

*Hel.* Ay, madam.

*1 Gent.* 'Tis but the boldness of his hand, haply, which

His heart was not consenting to.

*Count.* Nothing in France, until he have no wife!

(1) *i. e.* When you can get the ring, which is on my finger, into your possession.

(2) If thou keepest all thy sorrows to thyself.

VOL. III.

D

There's nothing here that is too good for him,  
But only she ; and she deserves a lord,  
That twenty such rude boys might tend upon,  
And call her hourly, mistress. Who was with him?

1 *Gent.* A servant only, and a gentleman  
Which I have some time known.

*Count.* Parolles, was't not?

1 *Gent.* Ay, my good lady, he.

*Count.* A very tainted fellow, and full of wickedness.

My son corrupts a well-derived nature  
With his inducement.

1 *Gent.* Indeed, good lady,  
The fellow has a deal of that, too much,  
Which holds him much to have.

*Count.* You are welcome, gentlemen.  
I will entreat you, when you see my son,  
To tell him, that his sword can never win  
The honour that he loses : more I'll entreat you  
Written to bear along.

2 *Gent.* We serve you, madam,  
In that and all your worthiest affairs.

*Count.* Not so, but as we change our courtesies.  
Will you draw near?

[*Exeunt Countess and Gentlemen.*]

Hel. *Till I have no wife, I have nothing in France.*

Nothing in France, until he has no wife !  
Thou shalt have none, Rousillon, none in France,  
Then hast thou all again. Poor lord ! is't I  
That chase thee from thy country, and expose  
Those tender limbs of thine to the event  
Of the none-sparing war ? and is it I  
That drive thee from the sportive court, where thou  
Wast shot at with fair eyes, to be the mark

(1) In reply to the gentlemen's declaration, that they are her servants, the countess answers—no otherwise than as she returns the same offices of civility.

*Scene.III.*      **THAT ENDS WELL.**      51

Of smoky muskets? O you leaden messengers,  
 That ride upon the violent speed of fire,  
 Fly with false aim; move the still-piercing air,  
 That sings with piercing, do not touch my 'lord!  
 Whoever shoots at him, I set him there;  
 Whoever charges on his forward breast,  
 I am the caitiff, that do hold him to it;  
 And, though I kill him not, I am the cause  
 His death was so effected: better 'twere,  
 I met the ravin<sup>l</sup> lion when he roar'd  
 With sharp constraint of hunger; better 'twere  
 That all the miseries which nature owes,  
 Were mine at once: no, come thou home, Rousillon,  
 Whence honour but of danger wins a scar,  
 As oft it loses all; I will be gone:  
 My being here it is, that holds thee hence:  
 Shall I stay here to do't? no, no, although  
 The air of Paradise did fan the house,  
 And angels offic'd all: I will be gone;  
 That pitiful rumour may report my flight,  
 To console thine ear. Come, night; end, day!  
 For, with the dark, poor thief, I'll steal away.  
 [Exit.]

*SCENE III.*—Florence. *Before the Duke's Palace. Flourish. Enter the Duke of Florence, Bertram, Lords, Officers, Soldiers, and others.*

*Duke.* The general of our horse thou art; and we,  
 Great in our hope, lay our best love and credence,  
 Upon thy promising fortune.

*Ber.* Sir, it is  
 A charge too heavy for my strength; but yet  
 We'll strive to bear it for your worthy sake,  
 To the extreme edge of hazard.

*Duke.* Then go thou forth;  
 And fortune play upon thy prosperous helm,  
 As thy auspicious mistress!

*Ber.* This very day,

(1) Ravenous.

Great Mars, I put myself into thy file :  
 Make me but like my thoughts ; and I shall prove  
 A lover of thy drum, hater of love. [*Exeunt.*]

*SCENE IV.*—Rousillon. *A room in the Countess's Palace. Enter Countess and Steward.*

*Count.* Alas ! and would you take the letter of her ?

Might you not know, she would do as she has done,  
 By sending me a letter ? Read it again.

*Stew.* *I am Saint Jaques' pilgrim, thither gone ;  
 Ambitious love hath so in me offended,  
 That bare-foot plod I the cold ground upon,  
 With sainted vow my faults to have amended.  
 Write, write, that, from the bloody course of war,  
 My dearest master, your dear son may hie ;  
 Bless him at home in peace, whilst I from far,  
 His name with zealous fervour sanctify :  
 His taken labours bid him me forgive ;  
 I, his despiteful Juno,<sup>1</sup> sent him forth  
 From courtly friends, with camping foes to live,  
 Where death and danger dog the heels of worth :  
 He is too good and fair for death and me ;  
 Whom I myself embrace, to set him free.*

*Count.* Ah, what sharp stings are in her mildest words !——

Rinaldo, you did never lack advice<sup>2</sup> so much,  
 As letting her pass so ; had I spoke with her,  
 I could have well diverted her intents,  
 Which thus she hath prevented.

*Stew.* Pardon me, madam :  
 If I had given you this at over-night,  
 She might have been o'erta'en ; and yet she writes,  
 Pursuit would be in vain.

*Count.* What angels shall  
 Bless this unworthy husband ? he cannot thrive,

(1) Alluding to the story of Hercules.

(2) Discretion or thought.

Unless her prayers, whom Heaven delights to hear,  
 And loves to grant, relieve him from the wrath  
 Of greatest justice.—Write, write, Rinaldo,  
 To this unworthy husband of his wife;  
 Let every word weigh heavy of her worth,  
 That he does weigh too light: my greatest grief,  
 Though little he do feel it, set down sharply.  
 Despatch the most convenient messenger:—  
 When, haply, he shall hear that she is gone,  
 He will return; and hope I may, that she,  
 Hearing so much, will speed her foot again,  
 Led hither by pure love: which of them both,  
 Is dearest to me, I have no skill in sense  
 To make distinction:—Provide this messenger:—  
 My heart is heavy, and mine age is weak;  
 Grief would have tears, and sorrow bids me speak.  
 [Exit.]

SCENE V.—Without the walls of Florence.  
*A tucket afar off. Enter an old Widow of  
 Florence, Diana, Violenta, Mariana, and other  
 citizens.*

*Wid.* Nay, come; for if they do approach the  
 city, we shall lose all the sight.

*Dia.* They say, the French count has done most  
 honourable service.

*Wid.* It is reported, that he has taken their  
 greatest commander; and that with his own hand  
 he slew the duke's brother. We have lost our la-  
 bour; they are gone a contrary way: hark! you  
 may know by their trumpets.

*Mar.* Come, let's return again, and suffice our-  
 selves with the report of it. Well, Diana, take heed  
 of this French earl: the honour of a maid is her  
 name; and no legacy is so rich as honesty.

*Wid.* I have told my neighbour, how you have  
 been solicited by a gentleman, his companion.

*Mar.* I know that knave; hang him! one Pa-

(1) Weigh, here means to value or esteem.



rolles: a filthy officer he is in those suggestions<sup>1</sup> for the young earl.—Beware of them, Diana; their promises, enticements, oaths, tokens, and all these engines of lust, are not the things they go under:<sup>2</sup> many a maid hath been seduced by them; and the misery is, example, that so terrible shows in the wreck of maidenhood, cannot for all that dissuade succession, but that they are limed with the twigs that threaten them. I hope, I need not to advise you further; but I hope your own grace will keep you where you are, though there were no further danger known, but the modesty which is so lost.

*Dia.* You shall not need to fear me.

*Enter Helena, in the dress of a pilgrim.*

*Wid.* I hope so.—Look, here comes a pilgrim: I know she will lie at my house: thither they send one another: I'll question her.—

God save you, pilgrim! Whither are you bound?

*Hel.* To Saint Jaques le grand.

Where do the palmers<sup>3</sup> lodge, I do beseech you?

*Wid.* At the Saint Francis here, beside the port.

*Hel.* Is this the way?

*Wid.* Ay, marry, is it.—Hark you!

*[A march afar off.]*

They come this way:—If you will tarry, holy pilgrim,

But till the troops come by,  
I will conduct you where you shall be lodg'd;  
The rather, for, I think, I know your hostess,  
As ample as myself.

*Hel.* Is it yourself?

*Wid.* If you shall please so, pilgrim.

(1) Temptations.

(2) They are not the things for which their names would make them pass.

(3) Pilgrims; so called from a staff or bough of palm they were wont to carry.

*Hel.* I thank you, and will stay upon your leisure.

*Wid.* You came, I think, from France?

*Hel.* I did so.

*Wid.* Here you shall see a countryman of yours,  
That has done worthy service.

*Hel.* His name, I pray you?

*Dia.* The count Rousillon: Know you such a one?

*Hel.* But by the ear, that hears most nobly of him:  
His face I know not.

*Dia.* Whatsoe'er he is,  
He's bravely taken here. He stole from France,  
As 'tis reported, for<sup>1</sup> the king had married him  
Against his liking: Think you it is so?

*Hel.* Ay, surely, mere the truth;<sup>2</sup> I know his  
lady.

*Dia.* There is a gentleman that serves the count,  
Reports but coarsely of her.

*Hel.* What's his name?

*Dia.* Monsieur Parolles.

*Hel.* O, I believe with him,  
In argument of praise, or to the worth  
Of the great count himself, she is too mean  
To have her name repeated; all her deserving  
Is a reserved honesty, and that  
I have not heard examin'd.

*Dia.* Alas, poor lady.  
'Tis a hard bondage, to become the wife  
Of a detesting lord.

*Wid.* A right good creature: wheresoe'er she is,  
Her heart weighs sadly: this young maid might do  
her

A shrewd turn, if she pleas'd.

*Hel.* How do you mean?  
May be, the amorous count solicits her  
In the unlawful purpose.

*Wid.* He does, indeed;  
And brokes<sup>3</sup> with all that can in such a suit

- (1) Because. (2) The exact, the entire truth.  
(3) Deals with panders.

Corrupt the tender honour of a maid :  
But she is arm'd for him, and keeps her guard  
In honestest defence.

*Enter with drum and colours, a party of the  
Florentine army, Bertram, and Parolles.*

*Mar.* The gods forbid else !

*Wid.* So, now they come :—  
That is Antonio, the duke's eldest son ;  
That, Escalus.

*Hel.* Which is the Frenchman ?

*Dia.* He ;  
That with the plume : 'tis a most gallant fellow ;  
I would, he lov'd his wife : if he were honest,  
He were much goodlier :—Is't not a handsome gentleman ?

*Hel.* I like him well.

*Dia.* 'Tis pity he is not honest : Yond's that same  
knave,  
That leads him to these places ; were I his lady,  
I'd poison that vile rascal.

*Hel.* Which is he ?

*Dia.* That jack-an-apes with scarfs : Why is he  
melancholy ?

*Hel.* Perchance he's hurt i' the battle.

*Par.* Lose our drum ! well.

*Mar.* He's shrewdly vex'd at something : Look,  
he has spied us.

*Wid.* Marry, hang you !

*Mar.* And your courtesy, for a ring-carrier !

*[Exeunt Bertram, Parolles, officers, and  
soldiers.]*

*Wid.* The troop is past : Come, pilgrim, I will  
bring you

Where you shall host : of enjoin'd penitents  
There's four or five, to great Saint Jaques bound,  
Already at my house.

*Hel.* I humbly thank you :  
Please it this matron, and this gentle maid,  
To eat with us to-night, the charge, and thanking,

Shall be for me; and, to requite you further,  
I will bestow some precepts on this virgin,  
Worthy the note.

*Both.* We'll take your offer kindly. .  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI.—*Camp before Florence. Enter  
Bertram, and the two French Lords.*

1 *Lord.* Nay, good my lord, put him to't; let  
him have his way.

2 *Lord.* If your lordship find him not a hild-  
ing,<sup>1</sup> hold me no more in your respect.

1 *Lord.* On my life, my lord, a bubble.

*Ber.* Do you think I am so far deceived in him?

1 *Lord.* Believe it, my lord, in mine own direct  
knowledge, without any malice, but to speak of him  
as my kinsman, he's a most notable coward, an infi-  
nite and endless liar, an hourly promise-breaker,  
the owner of no one good quality worthy your lord-  
ship's entertainment.

2 *Lord.* It were fit you knew him; lest, reposing  
too far in his virtue, which he hath not, he might,  
at some great and trusty business, in a main dan-  
ger, fail you.

*Ber.* I would I knew in what particular action  
to try him.

2 *Lord.* None better than to let him fetch off his  
drum, which you hear him so confidently undertake  
to do.

1 *Lord.* I, with a troop of Florentines, will sud-  
denly surprise him; such I will have, whom, I am  
sure, he knows not from the enemy: we will bind  
and hood-wink him so, that he shall suppose no  
other but that he is carried into the leaguer<sup>2</sup> of the  
adversaries, when we bring him to our tents: Be  
but your lordship present at his examination; if he  
do not, for the promise of his life, and in the high-  
est compulsion of base fear, offer to betray you,

(1) A paltry fellow, a coward. (2) The camp.

and deliver all the intelligence in his power against you, and that with the divine forfeit of his soul upon oath, never trust my judgment in any thing.

2 *Lord.* O, for the love of laughter, let him fetch his drum; he says he has a stratagem for't: when your lordship sees the bottom of his success in't, and to what metal this counterfeit lump of ore will be melted, if you give him not John Drum's entertainment, your inclining cannot be removed. Here he comes.

*Enter Parolles.*

1 *Lord.* O, for the love of laughter, hinder not the humour of his design; let him fetch off his drum in any hand.

*Ber.* How now, monsieur? this drum sticks sorely in your disposition.

2 *Lord.* A pox on't, let it go; 'tis but a drum.

*Par.* But a drum! Is't but a drum? A drum so lost?—There was an excellent command! to charge in with our horse upon our own wings, and to rend our own soldiers.

2 *Lord.* That was not to be blamed in the command of the service; it was a disaster of war that Cæsar himself could not have prevented, if he had been there to command.

*Ber.* Well, we cannot greatly condemn our success: some dishonour we had in the loss of that drum; but it is not to be recovered.

*Par.* It might have been recovered.

*Ber.* It might, but it is not now.

*Par.* It is to be recovered: but that the merit of service is seldom attributed to the true and exact performer, I would have that drum or another, or *hic jacet*.<sup>1</sup>

*Ber.* Why, if you have a stomach to't, monsieur, if you think your mystery in stratagem can bring

(1) I would recover the lost drum or another, or die in the attempt.

this instrument of honour again into his native quarter, be magnanimous in the enterprize, and go on ; I will grace the attempt for a worthy exploit : if you speed well in it, the duke shall both speak of it, and extend to you what further becomes his greatness, even to the utmost syllable of your worthiness.

*Par.* By the hand of a soldier, I will undertake it.

*Ber.* But you must not now slumber in it.

*Par.* I'll about it this evening : and I will presently pen down my dilemmas,<sup>1</sup> encourage myself in my certainty, put myself into my mortal preparation, and, by midnight, look to hear further from me.

*Ber.* May I be bold to acquaint his grace, you are gone about it ?

*Par.* I know not what the success will be, my lord ; but the attempt I vow.

*Ber.* I know thou art valiant ; and, to the possibility of thy soldiership, will subscribe for thee. Farewell.

*Par.* I love not many words. [Exit.

*1 Lord.* No more than a fish loves water.—Is not this a strange fellow, my lord ? that so confidently seems to undertake this business, which he knows is not to be done ; damns himself to do, and dares better be damned than to do't.

*2 Lord.* You do not know him, my lord, as we do : certain it is, that he will steal himself into a man's favour, and, for a week, escape a great deal of discoveries ; but when you find him out, you have him ever after.

*Ber.* Why, do you think he will make no deed at all of this, that so seriously he does address himself unto ?

*1 Lord.* None in the world ; but return with an invention, and clap upon you two or three proba-

(1) I will pen down my plans, and the probable obstructions.

ble lies : but we have almost embossed him,<sup>1</sup> you shall see his fall to-night ; for, indeed, he is not for your lordship's respect.

2 *Lord*. We'll make you some sport with the fox, ere we case him.<sup>2</sup> He was first smoked by the old lord Lafau : when his disguise and he is parted, tell me what a sprat you shall find him ; which you shall see this very night.

1 *Lord*. I must go look my twigs ; he shall be caught.

*Ber*. Your brother, he shall go along with me.

1 *Lord*. As't please your lordship : I'll leave you.

[*Exit*.

*Ber*. Now will I lead you to the house, and show you

The lass I spoke of.

2 *Lord*. But, you say, she's honest.

*Ber*. That's all the fault : I spoke with her but once,

And found her wondrous cold ; but I sent to her,  
By this same coxcomb that we have i' the wind,  
Tokens and letters which she did re-send ;  
And this is all I have done : She's a fair creature ;  
Will you go see her ?

2 *Lord*. With all my heart, my lord.  
[*Exeunt*.

SCENE VII.—Florence. *A Room in the Widow's house. Enter Helena and Widow.*

*Hel*. If you misdoubt me that I am not she,  
I know not how I shall assure you further,  
But I shall lose the grounds I work upon.<sup>3</sup>

*Wid*. Though my estate be fallen, I was well born,  
Nothing acquainted with these businesses ;  
And would not put my reputation now

(1) Hunted him down.

(2) Before we strip him naked.

(3) i. e. By discovering herself to the count.

In any staining act.

*Hel.* Nor would I wish you.  
First, give me trust, the count he is my husband;  
And, what to your sworn counsel I have spoken,  
Is so, from word to word; and then you cannot,  
By the good aid that I of you shall borrow,  
Err in bestowing it.

*Wid.* I should believe you;  
For you have show'd me that, which well approves  
You are great in fortune.

*Hel.* Take this purse of gold,  
And let me buy your friendly help thus far,  
Which I will over-pay, and pay again,  
When I have found it. The count he woos your  
daughter,

Lays down his wanton siege before her beauty,  
Resolves to carry her; let her, in fine, consent,  
As we'll direct her how 'tis best to bear it,  
Now his important<sup>1</sup> blood will nought deny  
That she'll demand: A ring the county<sup>2</sup> wears,  
That downward hath succeeded in his house,  
From son to son, some four or five descents  
Since the first father wore it: this ring he holds  
In most rich choice; yet, in his idle fire,  
To buy his will, it would not seem too dear,  
Howe'er repented after.

*Wid.* Now I see  
The bottom of your purpose.

*Hel.* You see it lawful then: It is no more,  
But that your daughter, ere she seems as won,  
Desires this ring; appoints him an encounter;  
In fine, delivers me to fill the time,  
Herself most chastely absent: after this,  
To marry her, I'll add three thousand crowns  
To what is past already.

*Wid.* I have yielded:  
Instruct my daughter how she shall persevere,  
That time and place, with this deceit so lawful,

(1) Importunate.

(2) i. e. Count.



May prove coherent. Every night he comes  
With musics of all sorts, and songs compos'd  
To her unworthiness : It nothing steads us,  
To chide him from our eaves ;<sup>1</sup> for he persists,  
As if his life lay on't.

*Hel.* Why then, to-night  
Let us assay our plot ; which, if it speed,  
Is wicked meaning in a lawful deed,  
And lawful meaning in a lawful act ;  
Where both not sin, and yet a sinful fact :  
But let's about it. [*Exeunt.*

---

### ACT IV.

*SCENE I.—Without the Florentine camp. Enter first Lord, with five or six Soldiers in ambush.*

*1 Lord.* He can come no other way but by this hedge's corner : When you sally upon him, speak what terrible language you will ; though you understand it not yourselves, no matter : for we must not seem to understand him ; unless some one among us, whom we must produce for an interpreter.

*1 Sold.* Good captain, let me be the interpreter.

*1 Lord.* Art not acquainted with him ? knows he not thy voice ?

*1 Sold.* No, sir, I warrant you.

*1 Lord.* But what linsy-woolsy hast thou to speak to us again ?

*1 Sold.* Even such as you speak to me.

*1 Lord.* He must think us some band of strangers i'the adversary's entertainment.<sup>2</sup> Now he hath a smack of all neighbouring languages ; therefore we must every one be a man of his own fancy, not to know what we speak one to another ; so we

(1) From under our windows.

(2) *i. e.* Foreign troops in the enemy's pay.

seem to know, is to know straight our purpose: chough's<sup>1</sup> language, gabble enough, and good enough. As for you, interpreter, you must seem very politic. But couch, ho! here he comes; to beguile two hours in a sleep, and then to return and swear the lies he forges.

*Enter Parolles.*

*Par.* Ten o'clock: within these three hours'twill be time enough to go home. What shall I say I have done? It must be a very plausible invention that carries it: They begin to smoke me; and disgraces have of late knocked too often at my door. I find my tongue is too fool-hardy; but my heart hath the fear of Mars before it, and of his creatures, not daring the reports of my tongue.

*1 Lord.* This is the first truth that e'er thine own tongue was guilty of. *[Aside.*

*Par.* What the devil should move me to undertake the recovery of this drum; being not ignorant of the impossibility, and knowing I had no such purpose? I must give myself some hurts, and say, I got them in exploit: Yet slight ones will not carry it: They will say, Came you off with so little? and great ones I dare not give. Wherefore? what's the instance?<sup>2</sup> Tongue, I must put you into a butter-woman's mouth, and buy another of Bajazet's mule, if you prattle me into these perils.

*1 Lord.* Is it possible he should know what he is, and be that he is? *[Aside.*

*Par.* I would the cutting of my garments would serve the turn; or the breaking of my Spanish sword.

*1 Lord.* We cannot afford you so. *[Aside.*

*Par.* Or the baring of my beard; and to say, it was in stratagem.

*1 Lord.* 'Twould not do. *[Aside.*

*Par.* Or to drown my clothes, and say I was stripped.

(1) A bird like a jack-daw. (2) The proof.

1 Lord. Hardly serve. [Aside.

Par. Though I swore I leaped from the window  
of the citadel——

1 Lord. How deep? [Aside.

Par. Thirty fathom.

1 Lord. Three great oaths would scarce make  
that be believed. [Aside.

Par. I would I had any drum of the enemy's ;  
I would swear I recovered it.

1 Lord. You shall hear one anon. [Aside.

Par. A drum now of the enemy's !

[Alarum within.

1 Lord. *Throca movousus, cargo, cargo, cargo.*

All. *Cargo, cargo, villianda par carbo, cargo.*

Par. O ! ransome, ransome :—Do not hide mine  
eyes. [They seize him and blindfold him.

1 Sold. *Boskos thromuldo boskos.*

Par. I know you are the Muskos' regiment,  
And I shall lose my life for want of language :  
If there be here German, or Dane, low Dutch,  
Italian, or French, let him speak to me,  
I will discover that which shall undo  
The Florentine.

1 Sold. *Boskos vauvado :—*

I understand thee, and can speak thy tongue :—

*Kerelybonto :—*Sir,

Betake thee to thy faith, for seventeen poniards  
Are at thy bosom.

Par. Oh !

1 Sold. O, pray, pray, pray.—

*Manka rewanian dulce.*

1 Lord. *Oscorbi dulchos volivorca*

1 Sold. The general is content to spare thee yet.  
And, hood-wink'd as thou art, will lead thee on  
To gather from thee : haply, thou may'st inform  
Something to save thy life.

Par. O, let me live,

And all the secrets of our camp I'll show,  
Their force, their purposes : nay, I'll speak that  
Which you will wonder at.

**Scene II. THAT ENDS WELL. 65**

1 *Sold.* But wilt thou faithfully ?

*Par.* If I do not, damn me.

1 *Sold.* *Acordo linta.—*

Come on, thou art granted space.

*[Exit, with Parolles guarded.]*

1 *Lord.* Go, tell the count Rousillon, and my brother,  
We have caught the woodcock, and will keep him muffled,

Till we do hear from them.

2 *Sold.* Captain, I will.

1 *Lord.* He will betray us all unto ourselves ;—  
Inform 'em that.

2 *Sold.* So I will, sir.

1 *Lord.* Till then, I'll keep him dark, and safely lock'd. *[Exeunt.]*

**SCENE II.—Florence. A room in the Widow's house. Enter Bertram and Diana.**

*Ber.* They told me, that your name was Fontibell.

*Dia.* No, my good lord, Diana.

*Ber.* Titled goddess ;

And worth it, with addition ! But, fair soul,  
In your fine frame hath love no quality ?  
If the quick fire of youth light not your mind,  
You are no maiden, but a monument :  
When you are dead, you should be such a one  
As you are now, for you are cold and stern ;  
And now you should be as your mother was,  
When your sweet self was got.

*Dia.* She then was honest.

*Ber.* So should you be.

*Dia.* No.

My mother did but duty ; such, my lord,  
As you owe to your wife.

*Ber.* No more of that !

I pr'ythee, do not strive against my vows :!

(1) *i. e.* Against his determined resolution never  
to cohabit with Helena.

VOL. III.

E

I was compell'd to her : but I love thee  
By love's own sweet constraint, and will for ever  
Do thee all rights of service.

*Dia.* Ay, so you serve us,  
Till we serve you : but when you have our roses,  
You barely leave our thorns to prick ourselves,  
And mock us with our bareness.

*Ber.* How have I sworn ?

*Dia.* 'Tis not the many oaths that make the  
truth ;

But the plain single vow, that is vow'd true.  
What is not holy, that we swear not by,  
But take the Highest to witness :<sup>1</sup> Then, pray you,  
tell me,

If I should swear by Jove's great attributes,  
I lov'd you dearly, would you believe my oaths,  
When I did love you ill ? this has no holding,  
To swear by him whom I protest to love,  
That I will work against him : Therefore, your oaths  
Are words, and poor conditions ; but unseal'd ;  
At least, in my opinion.

*Ber.* Change it, change it ;  
Be not so holy-cruel : love is holy ;  
And my integrity ne'er knew the crafts,  
That you do charge men with : Stand no more off,  
But give thyself unto my sick desires,  
Who then recover : Say, thou art mine, and ever  
My love, as it begins, shall so perséver.

*Dia.* I see that men make hopes in such affairs,  
That we'll forsake ourselves. Give me that ring.

*Ber.* I'll lend it thee, my dear, but have no power  
To give it from me.

*Dia.* Will you not, my lord ?

*Ber.* It is an honour 'longing to our house,  
Bequeathed down from many ancestors ;  
Which were the greatest obloquy i<sup>n</sup> the world  
In me to lose.

(1) The sense is—we never swear by what is not  
holy, but take to witness the Highest, the Divinity,

*Dia.* Mine honour's such a ring :  
My chastity's the jewel of our house,  
Bequeathed down from many ancestors ;  
~~Which were the greatest obloquy i' the world~~  
In me to lose : Thus your own proper wisdom  
Brings in the champion honour on my part,  
Against your vain assault.

*Ber.* Here, take my ring  
My house, mine honour, yea, my life be thine,  
And I'll be bid by thee.

*Dia.* When midnight comes, knock at my chamber window ;  
I'll order take, my mother shall not hear.  
Now will I charge you in the band of truth,  
When you have conquer'd my yet maiden bed,  
Remain there but an hour, nor speak to me :  
My reasons are most strong ; and you shall know them,

When back again this ring shall be deliver'd :  
And on your finger, in the night, I'll put  
Another ring ; that, what in time proceeds,  
May token to the future our past deeds.  
Adieu, till then ; then, fail not : you have won  
A wife of me, though there my hope be done.

*Ber.* A heaven on earth I have won, by wooing thee. [Exit.]

*Dia.* For which live long to thank both heaven and me !

You may so in the end.—  
My mother told me just how he would woo,  
As if she sat in his heart ; she says, all men  
Have the like oaths : he had sworn to marry me,  
When his wife's dead ; therefore I'll lie with him,  
When I am buried. Since Frenchmen are so braid,<sup>1</sup>

Marry that will, I'll live and die a maid :  
Only, in this disguise, I think't no sin  
To cozen him, that would unjustly win. [Exit]

(1) Crafty, deceitful.

*SCENE III.—The Florentine camp. Enter the two French Lords, and two or three Soldiers.*

1 *Lord*. You have not given him his mother's letter?

2 *Lord*. I have delivered it an hour since : there is something in't that stings his nature ; for, on the reading it, he changed almost into another man.

1 *Lord*. He has much worthy blame laid upon him, for shaking off so good a wife, and so sweet a lady.

2 *Lord*. Especially he hath incurred the everlasting displeasure of the king, who had even tuned his bounty to sing happiness to him. I will tell you a thing, but you shall let it dwell darkly with you.

1 *Lord*. When you have spoken it, 'tis dead, and I am the grave of it.

2 *Lord*. He hath perverted a young gentlewoman here in Florence, of a most chaste renown ; and this night he fleshes his will in the spoil of her honour : he hath given her his monumental ring, and thinks himself made in the unchaste composition.

1 *Lord*. Now, God delay our rebellion ; as we are ourselves, what things are we !

2 *Lord*. Merely our own traitors. And as in the common course of all treasons, we still see them reveal themselves, till they attain to their abhorred ends ; so he, that in this action contrives against his own nobility, in his proper stream o'erflows himself.<sup>1</sup>

1 *Lord*. Is it not meant damnable<sup>2</sup> in us, to be trumpeters of our unlawful intents ? We shall not then have his company to-night ?

2 *Lord*. Not till after midnight, for he is dieted to his hour.

(1) *i. e.* Betrays his own secrets in his own talk.

(2) Here, as elsewhere, used adverbially.

1 *Lord.* That approaches space: I would gladly have him see his company<sup>1</sup> anatomized; that he might take a measure of his own judgments, wherein so curiously he had set this counterfeit.

2 *Lord.* We will not meddle with him till he come; for his presence must be the whip of the other.

1 *Lord.* In the mean time, what hear you of these wars?

2 *Lord.* I hear, there is an overture of peace.

1 *Lord.* Nay, I assure you, a peace concluded.

2 *Lord.* What will count Rousillon do then? will he travel higher, or return again into France?

1 *Lord.* I perceive, by this demand, you are not altogether of his council.

2 *Lord.* Let it be forbid, sir! so should I be a great deal of his act.

1 *Lord.* Sir, his wife, some two months since, fled from his house: her pretence is a pilgrimage to Saint Jaques le grand; which holy undertaking, with most austere sanctimony, she accomplished; and, there residing, the tenderness of her nature became as a prey to her grief; in fine, made a groan of her last breath, and now she sings in heaven.

2 *Lord.* How is this justified?

1 *Lord.* The stronger part of it by her own letters; which makes her story true, even to the point of her death: her death itself, which could not be her office to say, is come, was faithfully confirmed by the rector of the place.

2 *Lord.* Hath the count all this intelligence?

1 *Lord.* Ay, and the particular confirmations, point from point, to the full arming of the verity.

2 *Lord.* I am heartily sorry, that he'll be glad of this.

1 *Lord.* How mightily, sometimes, we make us comforts of our losses!

2 *Lord.* And how mightily, some other times, we

(1) For companion.



drown our gain in tears ! The great dignity, that his valour hath here acquired for him, shall at home be encountered with a shame as ample.

1 *Lord*. The web of our life is of a mingled yarn, good and ill together : our virtues would be proud, if our faults whipped them not ; and our crimes would despair, if they were not cherish'd by our virtues.—

*Enter a Servant.*

How now ? where's your master ?

*Serv.* He met the duke in the street, sir, of whom he hath taken a solemn leave ; his lordship will next morning for France. The duke hath offered him letters of commendations to the king.

2 *Lord*. They shall be no more than needful there, if they were more than they can commend.

*Enter Bertram.*

1 *Lord*. They cannot be too sweet for the king's tartness. Here's his lordship now. How now, my lord, is't not after midnight ?

*Ber.* I have to-night despatched sixteen businesses, a month's length a-piece, by an abstract of success : I have conge'd with the duke, done my adieu with his nearest ; buried a wife, mourned for her ; writ to my lady mother, I am returning ; entertained my convoy ; and, between these main parcels of despatch, effected many nicer needs ; the last was the greatest, but that I have not ended yet.

2 *Lord*. If the business be of any difficulty, and this morning your departure hence, it requires haste of your lordship.

*Ber.* I mean, the business is not ended, as fearing to hear of it hereafter : But shall we have this dialogue between the fool and the soldier ?—Come, bring forth this counterfeit module ;<sup>1</sup> he has

(1) Model, pattern.

deceived me, like a double-meaning prophet.

2 Lord. Bring him forth: [*Exeunt Soldiers.*] he has sat in the stocks all night, poor gallant knave.

Ber. No matter; his heels have deserv'd it, in usurping his spurs<sup>1</sup> so long. How does he carry himself?

1 Lord. I have told your lordship already; the stocks carry him. But, to answer you as you would be understood; he weeps, like a wench that had shed her milk: he hath confessed himself to Morgan, whom he supposes to be a friar, from the time of his remembrance, to this very instant disaster of his setting i' the stocks: And what think you he hath confessed?

Ber. Nothing of me, has he?

2 Lord. His confession is taken, and it shall be read to his face: if your lordship be in't, as, I believe you are, you must have the patience to hear it.

*Re-enter Soldiers, with Parolles.*

Ber. A plague upon him! muffled! he can say nothing of me; hush! hush!

1 Lord. Hoodman comes!—*Porto tartarossa.*

1 Sold. He calls for the tortures; What will you say without 'em?

Par. I will confess what I know without constraint; if ye pinch me like a pasty, I can say no more.

1 Sold. *Bosko chimurcho.*

2 Lord. *Bebibindo chicurmuco.*

1 Sold. You are a merciful general:—Our general bids you answer to what I shall ask you out of a note.

Par. And truly, as I hope to live.

1 Sold. *First demand of him how many horses the duke is strong.* What say you to that?

Par. Five or six thousand; but very weak and

(1) An allusion to the degradation of a knight by hacking off his spurs.

unserviceable: the troops are all scattered, and the commanders very poor rogues, upon my reputation and credit, and as I hope to live.

1 *Sold.* Shall I set down your answer so?

*Par.* Do; I'll take the sacrament on't, how and which way you will.

*Ber.* All's one to him. What a past-saving slave is this!

1 *Lord.* You are deceived, my lord; this is monsieur Parolles, the gallant militarist (that was his own phrase,) that had the whole theoric<sup>1</sup> of war in the knot of his scarf, and the practice in the chape<sup>2</sup> of his dagger.

2 *Lord.* I will never trust a man again, for keeping his sword clean; nor believe he can have every thing in him, by wearing his apparel neatly.

1 *Sold.* Well, that's set down.

*Par.* Five or six thousand horse, I said,—I will say true,—or thereabouts, set down,—for I'll speak truth.

1 *Lord.* He's very near the truth in this.

*Ber.* But I con him no thanks for't, in the nature he delivers it.

*Par.* Poor rogues, I pray you, say.

1 *Sold.* Well, that's set down.

*Par.* I humbly thank you, sir: a truth's a truth, the rogues are marvellous poor.

1 *Sold.* Demand of him, of what strength they are afoot. What say you to that?

*Par.* By my troth, sir, if I were to live this present hour, I will tell true. Let me see: Spurio a hundred and fifty, Sebastian so many, Corambus so many, Jaques so many; Guiltian, Cosmo, Lodowick, and Gratii, two hundred fifty each: mine own company, Chitopher, Vaumond, Bentii, two hundred and fifty each: so that the muster-file, rotten and sound, upon my life, amounts not to fifteen thousand poll; half of which dare not shake

(1) Theory. (2) The point of the scabbard.

the snow from off their cassocks,<sup>1</sup> lest they shake themselves to pieces.

*Ber.* What shall be done to him.

*1 Lord.* Nothing, but let him have thanks. Demand of him my conditions,<sup>2</sup> and what credit I have with the duke.

*1 Sold.* Well, that's set down. *You shall demand of him, whether one captain Dumain be in the camp, a Frenchman; what his reputation is with the duke, what his valour, honesty, and expertness in wars; or whether he thinks, it were not possible, with well-weighing sums of gold, to corrupt him to a revolt. What say you to this? what do you know of it?*

*Par.* I beseech you, let me answer to the particular of the interrogatories:<sup>3</sup> Demand them singly.

*1 Sold.* Do you know this captain Dumain?

*Par.* I know him: he was a botcher's 'prentice in Paris, from whence he was whipped for getting the sheriff's fool with child; a dumb innocent,<sup>4</sup> that could not say him, nay.

*[Dumain lifts up his hand in anger.]*

*Ber.* Nay, by your leave, hold your hands; though I know, his brains are forfeit to the next title that falls.

*1 Sold.* Well, is this captain in the duke of Florence's camp?

*Par.* Upon my knowledge, he is, and lousy.

*1 Lord.* Nay, look not so upon me; we shall hear of your lordship anon.

*1 Sold.* What is his reputation with the duke?

*Par.* The duke knows him for no other but a poor officer of mine; and writ to me this other day, to turn him out o'the band: I think, I have his letter in my pocket.

(1) Cassock then signified a horseman's loose coat.

(2) Disposition and character.

(3) For interrogatories.

(4) A natural fool.

1 Sold. Marry, we'll search.

Par. In good sadness, I do not know ; either it is there, or it is upon a file, with the duke's other letters, in my tent.

1 Sold. Here 'tis ; here's a paper ? Shall I read it to you ?

Par. I do not know, if it be it, or no.

Ber. Our interpreter does it well.

1 Loru. Excellently.

1 Sold. Dian. *The count's a fool, and full of gold,—*

Par. That is not the duke's letter, sir ; that is an advertisement to a proper maid in Florence, one Diana, to take heed of the allurements of one count Rousillon, a foolish idle boy, but, for all that, very ruttish : I pray you, sir, put it up again.

1 Sold. Nay, I'll read it first, by your favour.

Par. My meaning in't, I protest, was very honest in the behalf of the maid : for I knew the young count to be a dangerous and lascivious boy ; who is a whale to virginity, and devours up all the fry it finds.

Ber. Damnable, both sides rogue !

1 Sold. *When he swears oaths, bid him drop gold, and take it ;*

*After he scores, he never pays the score :*

*Half won, is match well made ; match, and well make it ;<sup>1</sup>*

*He ne'er pays after-debts, take it before ;*

*And say, a soldier, Dian, told thee this,*

*Men are to mell with, boys are not to kiss :*

*For count of this, the count's a fool, I know it,*

*Who pays before, but not when he does owe it.*

*Thine, as he vow'd to thee in thine ear,*

PAROLLES.

Ber. He shall be whipped through the army, with this rhyme in his forehead.

(1) *i. e.* A match well made is half won ; make your match therefore, but make it well.

2 *Lord.* This is your devoted friend, sir, the manifold linguist, and the armipotent soldier.

*Ber.* I could endure any thing before but a cat, and now he's a cat to me.

1 *Sold.* I perceive, sir, by the general's looks, we shall be fain to hang you.

*Par.* My life, sir, in any case: not that I am afraid to die; but that, my offences being many, I would repent out the remainder of nature: let me live, sir, in a dungeon, i' the stocks, or any where, so I may live.

1 *Sold.* We'll see what may be done, so you confess freely; therefore, once more to this captain Dumain: You have answered to his reputation with the duke, and to his valour: What is his honesty?

*Par.* He will steal, sir, an egg out of a cloister;<sup>1</sup> for rapes and ravishments he parallels Nessus.<sup>2</sup> He professes not keeping of oaths; in breaking them, he is stronger than Hercules. He will lie, sir, with such volubility, that you would think truth were a fool: drunkenness is his best virtue; for he will be swine-drunk; and in his sleep he does little harm, save to his bed-clothes about him; but they know his conditions, and lay him in straw. I have but little more to say, sir, of his honesty: he has every thing that an honest man should not have; what an honest man should have, he has nothing.

1 *Lord.* I begin to love him for this.

*Ber.* For this description of thine honesty? A pox upon him for me, he is more and more a cat.

1 *Sold.* What say you to his expertness in war?

*Par.* Faith, sir, he has led the drum before the English tragedians,—to belie him, I will not,—and more of his soldiery I know not; except, in that country, he had the honour to be the officer at a place there call'd Mile-end, to instruct for the

(1) i. e. He will steal any thing however trifling, from any place however holy.

(2) The Centaur killed by Hercules.

doubling of files : I would do the man what honour I can, but of this I am not certain.

1 *Lord*. He hath out-villained villany so far that the rarity redeems him.

*Ber*. A pox on him ! he's a cat still.

1 *Sold*. His qualities being at this poor price, I need not ask you, if gold will corrupt him to revolt.

*Par*. Sir, for a *quart d'ecu*<sup>1</sup> he will sell the fee-simple of his salvation, the inheritance of it ; and cut the entail from all remainders, and a perpetual succession for it perpetually.

1 *Sold*. What's his brother, the other captain Dumain ?

2 *Lord*. Why does he ask him of me ?

1 *Sold*. What's he ?

*Par*. E'en a crow of the same nest ; not altogether so great as the first in goodness, but greater a great deal in evil. He excels his brother for a coward, yet his brother is reputed one of the best that is : In a retreat he outruns any lackey ; marry, in coming on he has the cramp.

1 *Sold*. If your life be saved, will you undertake to betray the Florentine ?

*Par*. Ay, and the captain of his horse, count Rousillon.

1 *Sold*. I'll whisper with the general, and know his pleasure.

*Par*. I'll no more drumming ; a plague of all drums ! Only to seem to deserve well, and to beguile the supposition<sup>2</sup> of that lascivious young boy the count, have I run into this danger : Yet, who would have suspected an ambush where I was taken ?

[*Aside*.

1 *Sold*. There is no remedy, sir, but you must die : the general says, you, that have so traitorously discovered the secrets of your army, and made such pestiferous reports of men very nobly held, can

(1) The fourth part of the smaller French crown.

(2) To deceive the opinion.

serve the world for no honest use; therefore you must die. Come, headsman, off with his head.

*Par.* O Lord, sir; let me live, or let me see my death!

*1 Sold.* That shall you, and take your leave of all your friends. *[Unmuffling him.]*

So, look about you; Know you any here?

*Ber.* Good morrow, noble captain.

*2 Lord.* God bless you, captain Parolles.

*1 Lord.* God save you, noble captain.

*2 Lord.* Captain, what greeting will you to my lord Lafeu? I am for France.

*1 Lord.* Good captain, will you give me a copy of the sonnet you writ to Diana in behalf of the count Rousillon? an I were not a very coward, I'd compel it of you; but fare you well. *[Exe. Ber. Lords, &c.]*

*1 Sold.* You are undone, captain: all but your scarf, that has a knot on't yet.

*Par.* Who cannot be crushed with a plot?

*1 Sold.* If you could find out a country where but women were that had received so much shame, you might begin an impudent nation. Fare you well, sir; I am for France too; we shall speak of you there. *[Exit.]*

*Par.* Yet am I thankful: if my heart were great, 'Twould burst at this: Captain I'll be no more; But I will eat and drink, and sleep as soft As captain shall: simply the thing I am Shall make me live. Who knows himself a braggart, Let him fear this; for it will come to pass, That every braggart shall be found an ass. Rust, sword! cool, blushes! and, Parolles, live Safest in shame! being fool'd, by foolery thrive! There's place, and means, for every man alive. I'll after them. *[Exit.]*

SCENE IV.—Florence. *A room in the Widow's house. Enter Helena, Widow, and Diana.*

*Hel.* That you may well perceive I have not wrong'd you,



One of the greatest in the Christian world  
 Shall be my surety; 'fore whose throne, 'tis needful,  
 Ere I can perfect mine intents, to kneel:  
 Time was, I did him a desired office,  
 Dear almost as his life; which gratitude  
 Through flinty Tartar's bosom would peep forth,  
 And answer, thanks: I duly am inform'd,  
 His grace is at Marseilles; to which place  
 We have convenient convoy. You must know,  
 I am supposed dead: the army breaking,  
 My husband hies him home; where, heaven aiding,  
 And by the leave of my good lord the king,  
 We'll be, before our welcome.

*Wid.* Gentle madam,  
 You never had a servant, to whose trust  
 Your business was more welcome.

*Hel.* Nor you, mistress,  
 Ever a friend, whose thoughts more truly labour  
 To recompense your love; doubt not, but Heaven  
 Hath brought me up to be your daughter's dower,  
 As it hath fated her to be my motive<sup>1</sup>  
 And helper to a husband. But, O strange men!  
 That can such sweet use make of what they hate,  
 When saucy<sup>2</sup> trusting of the cozen'd thoughts  
 Defiles the pitchy night! so lust doth play  
 With what it loaths, for that which is away:  
 But more of this hereafter:—You, Diana,  
 Under my poor instructions yet must suffer  
 Something in my behalf.

*Dia.* Let death and honesty<sup>3</sup>  
 Go with your impositions,<sup>4</sup> I am yours  
 Upon your will to suffer.

*Hel.* Yet, I pray you,—  
 But with the word, the time will bring on summer,  
 When briars shall have leaves as well as thorns,  
 And be as sweet as sharp. We must away;  
 Our waggon is prepar'd, and time revives us:

- (1) For mover.      (2) Lascivious.  
 (3) i. e. An honest death.      (4) Commands.

*All's well that ends well*: still the fine's! the crown;  
Whate'er the course, the end is the renown. [*Exe.*]

SCENE V.—Rousillon. *A room in the Countess's Palace. Enter Countess, Lafeu, and Clown.*

*Laf.* No, no, no, your son was misled with a snipt-taffata fellow there; whose villanous saffron<sup>2</sup> would have made all the unbaked and doughy youth of a nation in his colour: your daughter-in-law had been alive at this hour; and your son here at home, more advanced by the king, than by that red-tailed humble-bee I speak of.

*Count.* I would, I had not known him! it was the death of the most virtuous gentlewoman, that ever nature had praise for creating: if she had partaken of my flesh, and cost me the dearest groans of a mother, I could not have owed her a more rooted love.

*Laf.* 'Twas a good lady, 'twas a good lady: we may pick a thousand salads, ere we light on such another herb.

*Clo.* Indeed, sir, she was the sweet-marjoram of the salad, or, rather the herb of grace.<sup>3</sup>

*Laf.* They are not salad-herbs, you knave, they are nose-herbs.

*Clo.* I am no great Nebuchadnezzar, sir, I have not much skill in grass.

*Laf.* Whether dost thou profess thyself; a knave, or a fool?

*Clo.* A fool, sir, at a woman's service, and a knave at a man's.

*Laf.* Your distinction?

*Clo.* I would cozen the man of his wife, and do his service.

*Laf.* So you were a knave at his service, indeed.

(1) End.

(2) There was a fashion of using yellow starch for bands and ruffles, to which Lafeu alludes.

(3) i. e. Rue.

*Clo.* And I would give his wife my bauble, sir, to do her service.

*Laf.* I will subscribe for thee; thou art both knave and fool.

*Clo.* At your service.

*Laf.* No, no, no.

*Clo.* Why, sir, if I cannot serve you, I can serve as great a prince as you are.

*Laf.* Who's that? a Frenchman?

*Clo.* Faith, sir, he has an English name; but his phisnomy is more hotter in France, than there.

*Laf.* What prince is that?

*Clo.* The black prince, sir, *alias*, the prince of darkness; *alias*, the devil.

*Laf.* Hold thee, there's my purse: I give thee not this to suggest<sup>1</sup> thee from thy master thou talkest of; serve him still.

● *Clo.* I am a woodland fellow, sir, that always loved a great fire; and the master I speak of, ever keeps a good fire. But, sure, he is the prince of the world, let his nobility remain in his court. I am for the house with the narrow gate, which I take to be too little for pomp to enter: some, that humble themselves, may; but the many will be too chill and tender; and they'll be for the flowery way, that leads to the broad gate, and the great fire.

*Laf.* Go thy ways, I begin to be a-weary of thee; and I tell thee so before, because I would not fall out with thee. Go thy ways; let my horses be well looked to, without any tricks.

*Clo.* If I put any tricks upon 'em, sir, they shall be jades' tricks; which are their own right by the law of nature. [*Exit.*]

*Laf.* A shrewd knave, and an unhappy.<sup>2</sup>

*Count.* So he is. My lord, that's gone, made himself much sport out of him: by his authority he remains here, which he thinks is a patent for his

(1) Seduce.

(2) Mischievously unhappy, waggish.

sauciness; and, indeed, he has no pace, but runs where he will.

*Laf.* I like him well: 'tis not amiss: and I was about to tell you. Since I heard of the good lady's death, and that my lord your son was upon his return home, I moved the king my master, to speak in the behalf of my daughter; which, in the minority of them both, his majesty, out of a self-gracious remembrance, did first propose: his highness hath promised me to do it: and, to stop up the displeasure he hath conceived against your son, there is no fitter matter. How does your ladyship like it?

*Count.* With very much content, my lord, and I wish it happily effected.

*Laf.* His highness comes post from Marseilles, of as able body as when he numbered thirty; he will be here to-morrow, or I am deceived by him that in such intelligence hath seldom failed.

*Count.* It rejoices me, that I hope I shall see him ere I die. I have letters, that my son will be here to-night: I shall beseech your lordship, to remain with me till they meet together.

*Laf.* Madam, I was thinking, with what manners I might safely be admitted.

*Count.* You need but plead your honourable privilege.

*Laf.* Lady, of that I have made a bold charter; but, I thank my God, it holds yet.

*Re-enter Clown.*

*Clo.* O madam, yonder's my lord your son with a patch of velvet on's face: whether there be a scar under it, or no, the velvet knows; but 'tis a goodly patch of velvet: his left cheek is a cheek of two pile and a half, but his right cheek is worn bare.

*Laf.* A scar nobly got, or a noble scar, is a good livery of honour; so, belike, is that.

*Clo.* But it is your carbonadoed<sup>1</sup> face.

(1) Scotched like a piece of meat for the gridiron.  
VOL. III. F

*Laf.* Let us go see your son, I pray you ; I long to talk with the young noble soldier.

*Clo.* 'Faith, there's a dozen of 'em, with delicate fine hats, and most courteous feathers, which bow the head, and nod at every man. [*Exeunt.*]

---

ACT V.

*SCENE I.*—Marseilles. *A street. Enter Helena, Widow, and Diana, with two attendants.*

*Hel.* But this exceeding posting, day and night, Must wear your spirits low : we cannot help it ; But, since you have made the days and nights as one,

To wear your gentle limbs in my affairs,  
Be bold, you do so grow in my requital,  
As nothing can unroot you. In happy time ;—

*Enter a gentle Astringer.*<sup>1</sup>

This man may help me to his majesty's ear,  
If he would spend his power.—God save you, sir.

*Gent.* And you.

*Hel.* Sir, I have seen you in the court of France. :

*Gent.* I have been sometimes there.

*Hel.* I do presume, sir, that you are not fallen  
From the report that goes upon your goodness ;  
And therefore, goaded with most sharp occasions,  
Which lay nice manners by, I put you to  
The use of your own virtues, for the which  
I shall continue thankful.

*Gent.* What's your will ?

*Hel.* That it will please you  
To give this poor petition to the king ;  
And aid me with that store of power you have,  
To come to his presence.

*Gent.* The king's not here.

(1) A gentleman Falconer.

*Hel.* Not here, s r?

*Gent.* Not, indeed ;

He hence remov'd last night, and with more haste  
Than is his use.

*Wid.* Lord, how we lose our pains !

*Hel.* *All's well that ends well ;* yet ;  
Though time seem so adverse, and means unfit.—  
I do beseech you, whither is he gone ?

*Gent.* Marry, as I take it, to Rousillon ;  
Whither I am going.

*Hel.* I do beseech you, sir,  
Since you are like to see the king before me,  
Commend the paper to his gracious hand ;  
Which, I presume, shall render you no blame,  
But rather make you thank your pains for it :  
I will come after you, with what good speed  
Our means will make us means.

*Gent.* This I'll do for you.

*Hel.* And you shall find yourself to be well  
thank'd,

Whate'er falls more.—We must to horse again ;—  
Go, go, provide. [ *Exeunt.* ]

SCENE II.—Rousillon. *The inner court of the  
Countess's Palace. Enter Clown and Parolles.*

*Par.* Good monsieur Lavatch, give my lord  
Lafeu this letter : I have ere now, sir, been better  
known to you, when I have held familiarity with  
fresher clothes ; but I am now, sir, muddied in  
fortune's moat, and smell somewhat strong of her  
strong displeasure.

*Clo.* Truly, fortune's displeasure is but sluttish,  
if it smell so strong as thou speakest of : I will  
henceforth eat no fish of fortune's buttering.—  
Pr'ythee, allow the wind.

*Par.* Nay, you need not stop your nose, sir ; I  
spake but by a metaphor.

*Clo.* Indeed, sir, if your metaphor stink, I will  
stop my nose ; or against any man's metaphor.—  
Pr'ythee, get thee further.

*Par.* Pray you, sir, deliver me this paper.

*Clo.* Foh, pr'ythee, stand away; A paper from fortune's close-stool to give to a nobleman! Look, here he comes himself.

*Enter Lafeu.*

Here is a pur of fortune's, sir, or of fortune's cat, (but not a musk-cat,) that has fallen into the unclean fishpond of her displeasure, and, as he says, is muddied withal: Pray you, sir, use the carp as you may; for he looks like a poor, decayed, ingenious, foolish, rascally knave. I do pity his distress in my smiles of comfort, and leave him to your lordship.

*[Exit Clown.]*

*Par.* My lord, I am a man whom fortune hath cruelly scratched.

*Laf.* And what would you have me to do? 'tis too late to pare her nails now. Wherein have you played the knave with fortune, that she should scratch you, who of herself is a good lady, and would not have knaves thrive long under her? There's a *quart d'ecu* for you: Let the justices make you and fortune friends; I am for other business.

*Par.* I beseech your honour, to hear me one single word.

*Laf.* You beg a single penny more: come, you shall ha't; save your word.<sup>1</sup>

*Par.* My name, my good lord, is Parolles.

*Laf.* You beg more than one word then.—Cox' my passion! give me your hand:—How does your drum?

*Par.* O my good lord, you were the first that found me.

*Laf.* Was I, in sooth? and I was the first that lost thee.

*Par.* It lies in you, my lord, to bring me in some grace, for you did bring me out.

(1) You need not ask;—here it is.

*Laf.* Out upon thee, knave ! dost thou put upon me at once both the office of God and the devil ? one brings thee in grace, and the other brings thee out. [*Trumpets sound.*] The king's coming, I know by his trumpets.—Sirrah, inquire further after me ; I had talk of you last night : though you are a fool and a knave, you shall eat ; go to, follow.

*Par.* I praise God for you. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*The same. A Room in the Countess's Palace. Flourish. Enter King, Countess, Lafeu, Lords, Gentlemen, guards, &c.*

*King.* We lost a jewel of her ; and our esteem<sup>1</sup> Was made much poorer by it : but your son, As mad in folly, lack'd the sense to know Her estimation home.<sup>2</sup>

*Count.* 'Tis past, my liege : And I beseech your majesty to make it Natural rebellion, done i'the blaze of youth ; When oil and fire, too strong for reason's force, O'erbears it, and burns on.

*King.* My honour'd lady, I have forgiven and forgotten all ; Though my revenges were high bent upon him, And watch'd the time to shoot.

*Laf.* This I must say,— But first I beg my pardon,—The young lord Did to his majesty, his mother, and his lady, Offence of mighty note ; but to himself The greatest wrong of all : he lost a wife, Whose beauty did astonish the survey Of richest eyes ;<sup>3</sup> whose words all ears took captive ; Whose dear perfection, hearts that scorn'd to serve, Humbly call'd mistress.

(1) Reckoning or estimate.

(2) Completely, in its full extent.

(3) So in As you like it :—to have 'seen much and to have nothing, is to have rich eyes and poor hands.'



*King.* Praising what is lost,  
Makes the remembrance dear.—Well, call him  
hither ;—

We are reconcil'd, and the first view shall kill  
All repetition :—Let him not ask our pardon ;  
The nature of his great offence is dead,  
And deeper than oblivion do we bury  
The incensing relics of it : let him approach,  
A stranger, no offender ; and inform him,  
So 'tis our will he should.

*Gent.*

I shall, my liege.

[*Exit Gentleman.*]

*King.* What says he to your daughter? have  
you spoke?

*Laf.* All that he is hath reference to your high-  
ness.

*King.* Then shall we have a match. I have  
letters sent me,  
That set him high in fame.

*Enter Bertram.*

*Laf.*

He looks well on't.

*King.* I am not a day of season,<sup>2</sup>  
For thou may'st see a sunshine and a hail  
In me at once : But to the brightest beams  
Distracted clouds give way ; so stand thou forth,  
The time is fair again.

*Ber.*

My high-repented blames,<sup>3</sup>  
Dear sovereign, pardon to me.

*King.*

All is whole ;  
Not one word more of the consumed time,  
Let's take the instant by the forward top ;  
For we are old, and on our quick'st decrees  
The inaudible and noiseless foot of time  
Steals ere we can effect them : You remember

(1) *i. e.* The first interview shall put an end to  
all recollection of the past.

(2) *i. e.* Of uninterrupted rain.

(3) Faults repented of to the utmost.

The daughter of this lord?

*Ber.* Admiringly, my liege: at first  
I stuck my choice upon her, ere my heart  
Durst make too bold a herald of my tongue:  
Where the impression of mine eye enfixing,  
Contempt his scornful perspective did lend me,  
Which warp'd the line of every other favour;  
Scorn'd a fair colour, or express'd it stol'n;  
Extended or contracted all proportions,  
To a most hideous object: Thence it came,  
That she, whom all men prais'd, and whom myself,  
Since I have lost, have lov'd, was in mine eye  
The dust that did offend it.

*King.*

Well excus'd:

That thou didst love her, strikes some scores away  
From the great conipt: But love, that comes too late,  
Like a remorseful pardon slowly carried,  
To the great sender turns a sour offence,  
Crying, That's good that's gone: our rash faults,  
Make trivial price of serious things we have,  
Not knowing them, until we know their grave:  
Oft our displeasures, to ourselves unjust,  
Destroy our friends, and after weep their dust:  
Our own love waking cries to see what's done,  
While shameful hate sleeps out the afternoon.  
Be this sweet Helen's knell, and now forget her.  
Send forth your amorous token for fair Mattdlia:  
The main consents are had; and here we'll stay  
To see our widower's second marriage-day.

*Count.* Which better than the first, O dear  
heaven, bless!

Or, ere they meet, in me, O nature, cease!

*Laf.* Come on, my son, in whom my house's name  
Must be digested, give a favour from you,  
To sparkle in the spirits of my daughter,  
That she may quickly come.—By my old beard,  
And every hair that's on't, Helen, that's dead,  
Was a sweet creature; such a ring as this,  
The last that e'er I took her leave at court,  
I saw upon her finger.

*Ber.* Hers it was not.

*King.* Now, pray you, let me see it; for mine eye,

While I was speaking, oft was fastened to't.—  
This ring was mine; and, when I gave it Helen,  
I bade her, if her fortunes ever stood  
Necessitated to help, that by this token  
I would relieve her: Had you that craft, to reave her  
Of what should stead her most?

*Ber.* My gracious sovereign,  
Howe'er it pleases you to take it so,  
The ring was never hers.

*Count.* Son, on my life,  
I have seen her wear it; and she reckon'd it  
At her life's rate.

*Jaf.* I am sure, I saw her wear it.

*Ber.* You are deceiv'd, my lord, she never saw it.  
In Florence was it from a casement thrown me,  
Wrapp'd in a paper, which contain'd the name  
Of her that threw it: noble she was, and thought  
I stood engag'd:<sup>1</sup> but when I had subscrib'd  
To mine own fortune, and inform'd her fully,  
I could not answer in that course of honour  
As she had made the overture, she ceas'd,  
In heavy satisfaction, and would never  
Receive the ring again.

*King.* Plutus himself,  
That knows the tinct and multiplying medicine,<sup>2</sup>  
Hath not in nature's mystery more science,  
Than I have in this ring: 'twas mine, 'twas Helen's,  
Whoever gave it you: Then, if you know  
That you are well acquainted with yourself,<sup>3</sup>  
Confess 'twas hers, and by what rough enforce-  
ment

You got it from her: she call'd the saints to surety,

(1) In the sense of unengaged.

(2) The philosopher's stone.

(3) i. e. That you have the proper consciousness  
of your own actions.

That she would never put it from her finger,  
Unless she gave it to yourself in bed  
(Where you have never come,) or sent it us  
Upon her great disaster.

*Ber.* She never saw it.

*King.* Thou speak'st it falsely, as I love mine  
honour ;

And mak'st conjectural fears to come into me,  
Which I would fain shut out : If it should prove  
That thou art so inhuman,—'twill not prove so :—  
And yet I know not :—thou didst hate her deadly,  
And she is dead ; which nothing, but to close  
Her eyes myself, could win me to believe,  
More than to see this ring.—Take him away.—

[*Guards seize Bertram.*]

My fore-past proofs, howe'er the matter fall,  
Shall tax my fears of little vanity,  
Having vainly fear'd too little.—Away with him ;—  
We'll sift this matter further.

*Ber.* If you shall prove

This ring was ever hers, you shall as easy  
Prove that I husbanded her bed in Florence,  
Where yet she never was. [*Exit Ber. guarded.*]

*Enter a Gentleman.*

*King.* I am wrapp'd in dismal thinkings.

*Gent.* Gracious sovereign,

Whether I have been to blame, or no, I know not ;  
Here's a petition from a Florentine,  
Who hath, for four or five removes,<sup>1</sup> come short  
To tender it herself. I undertook it,  
Vanquish'd thereto by the fair grace and speech  
Of the poor suppliant, who by this, I know,  
Is here attending : her business looks in her  
With an importing visage ; and she told me,  
In a sweet verbal brief, it did concern  
Your highness with herself.

*King.* [*Reads.*] Upon his many protestations to

(1) Post-stages.

marry me, when his wife was dead, I blush to say it, he won me. Now is the count Rousillon a widower; his vows are forfeited to me, and my honour's paid to him. He stole from Florence, taking no leave, and I follow him to his country for justice: Grant it me, O king; in you it best lies; otherwise a seducer flourishes, and a poor maid is undone.

DIANA CAPULET.

*Laf.* I will buy me a son-in-law in a fair, and toll him: for this, I'll none of him.

*King.* The heavens have thought well on thee, Lafen,

To bring forth this discovery.—Seek these suitors:—Go, speedily, and bring again the count.

[*Exeunt Gentleman, and some attendants.*]

I am afraid, the life of Helen, lady,  
Was foully snatch'd.

*Count.*

Now, justice on the doers!

*Enter Bertram, guarded.*

*King.* I wonder, sir, since wives are monsters to you,  
And that you fly them as you swear them lordship,  
Yet you desire to marry.—What woman's that?

*Re-enter Gentleman, with Widow and Diana.*

*Dia.* I am, my lord, a wretched Florentine,  
Derived from the ancient Capulet;  
My suit, as I do understand, you know,  
And therefore know how far I may be pitied.

*Wid.* I am her mother, sir, whose age and honour  
Both suffer under this complaint we bring,  
And both shall cease, without your remedy.

*King.* Come hither, count; do you know these women?

*Ber.* My lord, I neither can, nor will deny  
But that I know them: Do they charge me further?

*Dia.* Why do you look so strange upon your wife?

(1) Pay toll for him. (2) Decease, die.

*Ber.* She's none of mine, my lord.

*Dia.* If you shall marry,  
You give away this hand, and that is mine;  
You give away heaven's vows, and those are mine;  
You give away myself, which is known mine;  
For I by vow am so embodied yours,  
That she which marries you, must marry me,  
Either both, or none.

*Laf.* Your reputation [*To Bertram.*] comes too  
short for my daughter, you are no husband for her.

*Ber.* My lord, this is a fond and desperate creature,  
Whom sometime I have laugh'd with: let your  
highness.

Lay a more noble thought upon mine honour,  
Than for to think that I would sink it here.

*King.* Sir, for my thoughts, you have them ill to  
friend,  
Till your deeds gain them: Fairer prove your  
honour,

Than in my thought it lies!

*Dia.* Good my lord,  
Ask him upon his oath, if he does think  
He had not my virginity.

*King.* What say'st thou to her?

*Ber.* She's impudent, my lord;  
And was a common gamester to the camp.<sup>1</sup>

*Dia.* He does me wrong, my lord; if I were so,  
He might have bought me at a common price:  
Do not believe him: O, behold this ring,  
Whose high respect, and rich validity,<sup>2</sup>  
Did lack a parallel; yet, for all that,  
He gave it to a commoner o' the camp,  
If I be one.

*Count.* He blushes, and 'tis it:  
Of six preceding ancestors, that gem

(1) Gamester when applied to a female, then  
meant a common woman.

(2) Value.

Conferr'd by testament to the sequent issue,  
Hath it been ow'd and worn. This is his wife ;  
That ring's a thousand proofs.

*King.* Methought, you said,  
You saw one here in court could witness it.

*Dia.* I did, my lord, but loath am to produce  
So bad an instrument ; his name's Parolles.

*Laf.* I saw the man to-day, if man he be.

*King.* Find him, and bring him hither.

*Ber.* What of him ?

He's quoted<sup>1</sup> for a most perfidious slave,  
With all the spots o' the world tax'd and debosh'd ;<sup>2</sup>  
Whose nature sickens, but to speak a truth :  
Am I or that, or this, for what he'll utter,  
That will speak any thing ?

*King.* She hath that ring of yours.

*Ber.* I think, she has : certain it is, I hik'd her,  
And boarded her i' the wanton way of youth :  
She knew her distance, and did angle for me,  
Madding my eagerness with her restraint,  
As all impediments in fancy's<sup>3</sup> course  
Are motives of more fancy ; and, in fine,  
Her insult coming with her modern grace<sup>4</sup>  
Subdued me to her rate : she got the ring,  
And I had that, which any inferior might  
At market-price have bought.

*Dia.* I must be patient ;  
You, that turn'd off a first so noble wife,  
May justly diet me.<sup>5</sup> I pray you yet,  
(Since you lack virtue, I will lose a husband,)  
Send for your ring, I will return it home,  
And give me mine again.

*Ber.* I have it not.

*King.* What ring was yours, I pray you ?

*Dia.* Sir, much like

(1) Noted. (2) Debauch'd. (3) Love's.

(4) Her solicitation concurring with her appearance of being common.

(5) May justly make me fast.

The same upon your finger.

*King.* Know you this ring? this ring was his of late.

*Dia.* And this was it I gave him, being a-bed.

*King.* The story then goes false, you threw it him Out of a casement.

*Dia.* I have spoke the truth.

*Enter Parolles.*

*Ber.* My lord, I do confess the ring was hers.

*King.* You boggle shrewdly, every feather starts you.—

Is this the man you speak of?

*Dia.* Ay, my lord.

*King.* Tell me, sirrah, but tell me true, I charge you,

Not fearing the displeasure of your master  
(Which, on your just proceeding, I'll keep off.)

By him, and by this woman here, what know you?

*Par.* So please your majesty, my master hath been an honourable gentleman; tricks he hath had in him, which gentlemen have.

*King.* Come, come, to the purpose: Did he love this woman?

*Par.* 'Faith, sir, he did love her; But how?

*King.* How, I pray you?

*Par.* He did love her, sir, as a gentleman loves a woman.

*King.* How is that?

*Par.* He loved her, sir, and loved her not.

*King.* As thou art a knave, and no knave:—  
What an equivocal companion<sup>1</sup> is this?

*Par.* I am a poor man, and at your majesty's command.

*Laf.* He's a good drum, my lord, but a naughty orator.

*Dia.* Do you know, he promised me marriage?

*Par.* 'Faith, I know more than I'll speak.

*King.* But wilt thou not speak all thou know'st?

(1) Fellow.



*Par.* Yes, so please your majesty ; I did go between them, as I said ; but more than that, he loved her,—for, indeed, he was mad for her, and talked of Satan, and of limbo, and of furies, and I know not what: yet I was in that credit with them at that time, that I knew of their going to bed: and of other motions, as promising her marriage, and things that would derive me ill will to speak of, therefore I will not speak what I know.

*King.* Thou hast spoken all already, unless thou canst say they are married: But thou art too fine! in thy evidence: therefore stand aside.—

This ring, you say, was yours?

*Dia.* Ay, my good lord.

*King.* Where did you buy it? or who gave it you?

*Dia.* It was not given me, nor I did not buy it.

*King.* Who lent it you?

*Dia.* It was not lent me neither.

*King.* Where did you find it then?

*Dia.* I found it not.

*King.* If it were yours by none of all these ways, How could you give it him?

*Dia.* I never gave it him.

*Laf.* This woman's an easy glove, my lord; she goes off and on at pleasure.

*King.* This ring was mine, I gave it his first wife.

*Dia.* It might be yours, or hers, for aught I know.

*King.* Take her away, I do not like her now; To prison with her: and away with him.— Unless thou tell'st me where thou hadst this ring, Thou diest within this hour.

*Dia.* I'll never tell you.

*King.* Take her away.

*Dia.* I'll put in bail, my liege.

*King.* I think thee now some common customer.<sup>2</sup>

*Dia.* By Jove, if ever I knew man, 'twas you.

*King.* Wherefore hast thou accus'd him all this while?

(1) Too artful.

(2) Common woman.

*Dia.* Because he's guilty, and he is not guilty ;  
He knows, I am no maid, and he'll swear to't :  
I'll swear, I am a maid, and he knows not.  
Great king, I am no strumpet, by my life ;  
I am either maid, or else this old man's wife.

[*Pointing to Lafcu.*

*King.* She does abuse our ears ; to prison with her.

*Dia.* Good mother, fetch my bail.—Stay, royal sir ;

[*Exit Widow.*

The jeweller, that owes! the ring, is sent for,  
And he shall surety me. But for this lord,  
Who hath abus'd me, as he knows himself,  
Though yet he never harm'd me, here I quit him :  
He knows himself, my bed he hath defil'd ;  
And at that time he got his wife with child :  
Dead though she be, she feels her young one kick ;  
So there's my riddle, One, that's dead, is quick :  
And now behold the meaning.

*Re-enter Widow, with Helena.*

*King.* Is there no exorcist?  
Beguiles the truer office of mine eyes?  
Is't real, that I see?

*Hel.* No, my good lord ;  
'Tis but the shadow of a wife you see,  
The name, and not the thing.

*Ber.* Both, both ; O, pardon !

*Hel.* O, my good lord, when I was like this maid,  
I found you wondrous kind. There is your ring,  
And, look you, here's your letter ; This it says,  
*When from my finger you can get this ring,  
And are by me with child, &c.*—This is done :  
Will you be mine, now you are doubly won?

*Ber.* If she, my liege, can make me know this  
clearly,

I'll love her dearly, ever, ever dearly.

*Hel.* If it appear not plain, and prove untrue,

(1) *Owne.*

(2) *Enchanter.*

Deadly divorce step between me and you !—

O, my dear mother, do I see you living ?

*Laf.* Mine eyes smell onions, I shall weep anon :  
—Good Tom Drum, [*To Parolles.*] lend me a  
handkerchief : So, I thank thee ; wait on me home,  
I'll make sport with thee : Let thy courtesies alone,  
they are scurvy ones.

*King.* Let us from point to point this story know,  
To make the even truth in pleasure flow :—  
If thou be'st yet a fresh uncropped flower,

[*To Diana.*

Choose thou thy husband, and I'll pay thy dower ;  
For I can guess, that, by the honest aid,  
Thou kept'st a wife herself, thyself a maid.—  
Of that, and all the progress, more and less,  
Resolvedly more leisure shall express :  
All yet seems well ; and if it end so meet,  
The bitter past, more welcome is the sweet.

[*Flourish.*

*Advancing.*

*The king's a beggar, now the play is done :*  
All is well ended, if this suit be won,  
That you express content ; which we will pay,  
With strife to please you, day exceeding day :  
Ours be your patience then, and yours our parts ;<sup>1</sup>  
Your gentle hands lend us, and take our hearts.

[*Exeunt.*

(1) *i. e.* Hear us without interruption, and take  
our parts, that is, support and defend us.

---

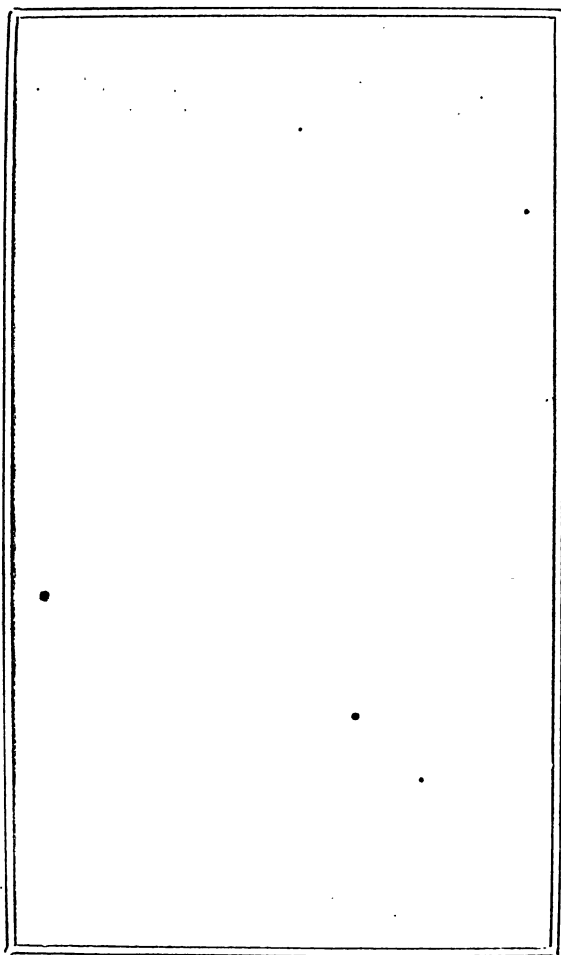
This play has many delightful scenes, though  
not sufficiently probable ; and some happy charac-  
ters, though not new, nor produced by any deep  
knowledge of human nature. Parolles is a boaster  
and a coward, such as has always been the sport

of the stage, but perhaps never raised more laughter or contempt than in the hands of Shakspeare.

I cannot reconcile my heart to Bertram; a man noble without generosity, and young without truth; who marries Helen as a coward, and leaves her as a profligate: when she is dead by his unkindness, sneaks home to a second marriage, is accused by a woman whom he has wronged, defends himself by falsehood, and is dismissed to happiness.

The story of Bertram and Diana had been told before of Mariana and Angelo, and, to confess the truth, scarcely merited to be heard a second time.

JOHNSON.



**TAMING OF THE SHREW.**

PERSONS REPRESENTED.

*A Lord.*

*Christopher Sly, a drunken tinker.*

*Hostess, Page, Players, Huntsmen,  
and other Servants attending on  
the Lord.*

*Persons in  
the Induc-  
tion.*

*Baptista, a rich gentleman of Padua.*

*Vincentio, an old gentleman of Pisa.*

*Lucentio, son to Vincentio, in love with Bianca.*

*Petruchio, a gentleman of Verona, a suitor to  
Katharina.*

*Gremio, } suitors to Bianca.  
Hortensio, }*

*Tranio, } servants to Lucentio.  
Biondello, }*

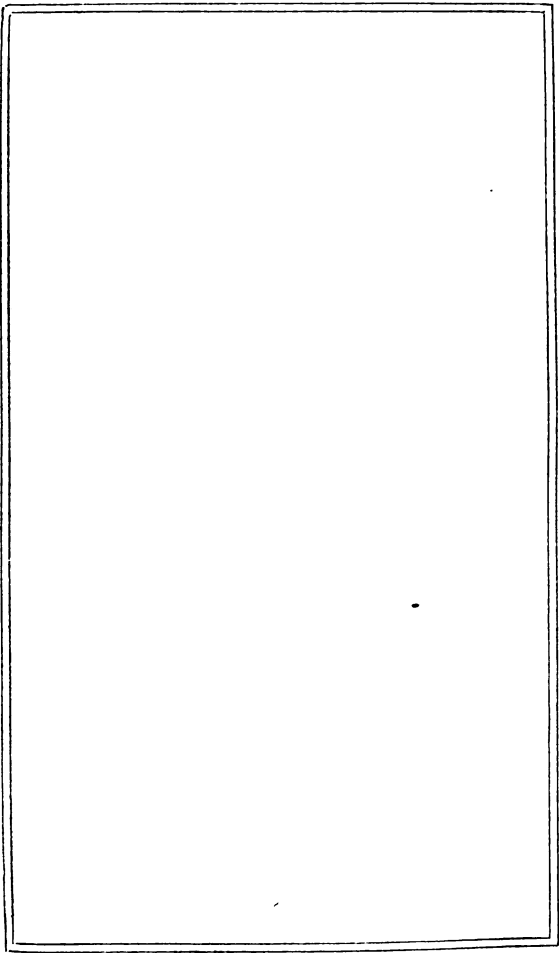
*Grumio, } servants to Petruchio.  
Curtis, }*

*Pedant, an old fellow set up to personate Vincentio.*

*Katharina, the Shrew, } daughters to Baptista.  
Bianca, her sister, }*  
*Widow.*

*Tailor, Haberdasher, and Servants, attending on  
Baptista and Petruchio.*

*Scene, sometimes in Padua; and sometimes in  
Petruchio's House in the Country.*





CHARACTERS IN THE INDUCTION.

To the Original Play of *The Taming of a Shrew*,  
entered on the Stationers' books in 1594, and  
printed in quarto in 1607.

*A Lord, &c.*

*Sly.*

*A Tapster.*

*Page, Players, Huntsmen, &c.*

---

PERSONS REPRESENTED.

*Alphonsus, a merchant of Athens.*

*Jerobel, Duke of Cestus.*

*Aurelius, his son,* } *suitors to the daughters of*  
*Ferando,* } *Alphonsus.*  
*Polidor,*

*Valeria, servant to Aurelius.*

*Sander, servant to Ferando.*

*Phylotus, a merchant who personates the Duke.*

*Kate,* } *daughters to Alphonsus.*  
*Emelia,* }  
*Phylema,*

*Tailor, Haberdasher, and Servants to Ferando*  
*and Alphonsus.*

*Scene, Athens; and sometimes Ferando's Coun-*  
*try House.*

# TAMING OF THE SHREW.

## INDUCTION.

SCENE I.—*Before an Alehouse on a Heath.*  
*Enter Hostess and Sly.*

*Sly.*

I'LL pheeze<sup>1</sup> you, in faith.

*Host.* A pair of stocks, you rogue!

*Sly.* Y'are a baggage; the Slies are no rogues: Look in the chronicles, we came in with Richard Conqueror. Therefore, *paucas pallabris*,<sup>2</sup> let the world slide: *Sessa*.<sup>3</sup>

*Host.* You will not pay for the glasses you have burst?<sup>4</sup>

*Sly.* No, not a denier: Go by, says Jeronimy;—Go to thy cold bed, and warm thee.<sup>5</sup>

*Host.* I know my remedy, I must go fetch the thirdborough.<sup>6</sup> *[Exit.*

*Sly.* Third, or fourth, or fifth borough, I'll answer him by law: I'll not budge an inch, boy; let him come, and kindly.

*[Lies down on the ground, and falls asleep.]*

(1) Beat or knock. (2) Few words.

(3) Be quiet. (4) Broke.

(5) This line and the scrap of Spanish is used in burlesque from an old play called Hieronymo, or the Spanish Tragedy.

(6) An officer whose authority equals a constable.

*Wind horns. Enter a Lord from hunting, with Huntsmen and Servants.*

*Lord.* Huntsman, I charge thee, tender well my hounds:

Brach! Merriman,—the poor cur is emboss'd,<sup>2</sup>  
And couple Clowder with the deep-mouth'd brach.  
Saw'st thou not, boy, how Silver made it good  
At the hedge corner, in the coldest fault?  
I would not lose the dog for twenty pound.

*1 Hun.* Why, Belman is as good as he, my lord;  
He cried upon it at the merest loss,  
And twice to-day pick'd out the dullest scent:  
Trust me, I take him for the better dog.

*Lord.* Thou art a fool; if Echo were as fleet,  
I would esteem him worth a dozen such.  
But sup them well, and look unto them all;  
To-morrow I intend to hunt again.

*1 Hun.* I will, my lord.

*Lord.* What's here? one dead, or drunk? See,  
doth he breathe?

*2 Hun.* He breathes, my lord: Were he not  
warm'd with ale,  
This were a bed but cold to sleep so soundly.

*Lord.* O monstrous beast! how like a swine he  
lies!

Grim death, how foul and loathsome is thine image!  
Sirs, I will practise on this drunken man.—  
What think you, if he were convey'd to bed,  
Wrapp'd in sweet clothes, rings put upon his fingers,  
A most delicious banquet by his bed,  
And brave attendants near him when he wakes,  
Would not the beggar then forget himself?

*1 Hun.* Believe me, lord, I think he cannot  
choose.

*2 Hun.* It would seem strange unto him when  
he wak'd.

*Lord.* Even as a flattering dream, or worthless  
fancy.

(1) Bitch.

(2) Strained.

Then take him up, and manage well the jest :—  
 Carry him gently to my fairest chamber,  
 And hang it round with all my wanton pictures :  
 Balm his foul head with warm distilled waters,  
 And burn sweet wood to make the lodging sweet :  
 Procure me music ready when he wakes,  
 To make a dulcet and a heavenly sound ;  
 And if he chance to speak, be ready straight,  
 And, with a low submissive reverence,  
 Say,—What is it your honour will command ?  
 Let one attend him with a silver bason,  
 Full of rose-water, and bestrew'd with flowers ;  
 Another bear the ewer,<sup>1</sup> the third a diaper,<sup>2</sup>  
 And say,—Will't please your lordship cool your  
 hands ?

Some one be ready with a costly suit,  
 And ask him what apparel he will wear ;  
 Another tell him of his hounds and horse,  
 And that his lady mourns at his disease :  
 Persuade him, that he hath been lunatic ;  
 And, when he says he is,—say, that he dreams,  
 For he is nothing but a mighty lord.  
 This do, and do it kindly,<sup>3</sup> gentle sirs ;  
 It will be pastime passing excellent,  
 If it be husbanded with modesty.<sup>4</sup>

1 *Hun.* My lord, I warrant you, we'll play our  
 part,  
 As he shall think, by our true diligence,  
 He is no less than what we say he is.

*Lord.* Take him up gently, and to bed with him ;  
 And each one to his office, when he wakes.—

[*Some bear out Sly. A trumpet sounds.*  
*Sirrah,* go see what trumpet 'tis that sounds :—

[*Exit Servant.*  
*Belike,* some noble gentleman ; that means,  
*Travelling* some journey, to repose him here.—

(1) Pitcher. (2) Napkin. (3) Naturally.

(4) Moderation.

*Re-enter a Servant.*

How now? who is it?

*Serv.* An it please your honour,  
Players that offer service to your lordship.*Lord.* Bid them come near:—*Enter Players.*

Now, fellows, you are welcome.

1 *Play.* We thank your honour.*Lord.* Do you intend to stay with me to-night?2 *Play.* So please your lordship to accept our duty.*Lord.* With all my heart.—This fellow I remember,

Since once he play'd a farmer's eldest son;—

'Twas where you woo'd the gentlewoman so well;  
I have forgot your name; but, sure, that part  
Was aptly fitted, and naturally perform'd.1 *Play.* I think, 'twas Soto that your honour means.*Lord.* 'Tis very true;—thou didst it excellent.--Well, you are come to me in happy time;  
The rather for I have some sport in hand,  
Wherein your cunning can assist me much.  
There is a lord will hear you play to-night:  
But I am doubtful of your modesties;  
Lest, over-eyeing of his odd behaviour  
(For yet his honour never heard a play,)  
You break into some merry passion,  
And so offend him; for I tell you, sirs,  
If you should smile, he grows impatient.1 *Play.* Fear not, my lord; we can contain ourselves,

Were he the veriest antic in the world.

*Lord.* Go, sirrah, take them to the buttery,  
And give them friendly welcome every one:  
Let them want nothing that my house affords.—[*Exeunt Servant and Players.*]

Sirrah, go you to Bartholomew my page,

[*Te a Servant.*]

And see him dress'd in all suits like a lady :  
That done, conduct him to the drunkard's chamber,

And call him—madam, do him obeisance,  
Tell him from me (as he will win my love,)  
He bear himself with honourable action,  
Such as he hath observ'd in noble ladies  
Unto their lords, by them accomplished :  
Such duty to the drunkard let him do,  
With soft low tongue, and lowly courtesy ;  
And say,—What is't your honour will command,  
Wherein your lady, and your humble wife,  
May show her duty, and make known her love ?  
And then—with kind embracements, tempting  
kisses,

And with declining head into his bosom,—  
Bid him shed tears, as being overjoy'd  
To see her noble lord restor'd to health,  
Who, for twice seven years, hath esteemed him  
No better than a poor and loathsome beggar :  
And if the boy have not a woman's gift,  
To rain a shower of commanded tears,  
An onion will do well for such a shift ;  
Which in a napkin being close convey'd,  
Shall in despite enforce a watery eye.  
See this despatch'd with all the haste thou canst .  
Anon I'll give thee more instructions.—

[Exit Servant.

I know, the boy will well usurp the grace,  
Voice, gait, and action of a gentlewoman :  
I long to hear him call the drunkard, husband ;  
And how my men will stay themselves from  
laughter,

When they do homage to this simple peasant.  
I'll in to counsel them : haply,<sup>1</sup> my presence  
May well abate the over-merry spleen,  
Which otherwise would grow into extremes.

[Exeunt.

(1) Perhaps.

**SCENE II.—A Bedchamber in the Lord's house.**

*Sly is discovered in a rich nightgown, with attendants ; some with apparel, others with bason, ewer, and other appurtenances. Enter Lord, dressed like a Servant.*

*Sly.* For God's sake, a pot of small ale.

1 *Serv.* Will't please your lordship drink a cup of sack?

2 *Serv.* Will't please your honour taste of these conserves?

3 *Serv.* What raiment will your honour wear to-day?

*Sly.* I am Christophero Sly ; call not me—honour, nor lordship : I never drank sack in my life ; and if you give me any conserves, give me conserves of beef : Ne'er ask me what raiment I'll wear ; for I have up more doublets than backs, no more stockings than legs, nor no more shoes than feet ; nay, sometimes, more feet than shoes, or such shoes as my toes look through the overleather.

*Lord.* Heaven cease this idle humour in your honour !

O, that a mighty man, of such descent,  
Of such possessions, and so high esteem,  
Should be infused with so foul a spirit !

*Sly.* What, would you make me mad ? Am not I Christopher Sly, old Sly's son of Burton-heath ; by birth a pedler, by education a card-maker, by transmutation a bear-herd, and now by present profession a tinker ? Ask Marian Hacket, the fat ale-wife of Wincot, if she know me not : if she say I am not fourteen pence on the score for sheer ale, score me up for the lyingest knave in Christendom. What, I am not bestraught :<sup>1</sup> Here's—

1 *Serv.* O, this it is that makes your lady mourn.

2 *Serv.* O, this it is that makes your servants droop.

(1) Distracted.

*Lord.* Hence comes it that your kindred shun  
your house,

As beaten hence by your strange lunacy.

O, noble lord, bethink thee of thy birth;

Call home thy ancient thoughts from banishment,

And banish hence these abject lowly dreams:

Look how thy servants do attend on thee,

Each in his office ready at thy beck.

Wilt thou have music? hark! Apollo plays,  
[*Music.*

And twenty caged nightingales do sing:

Or wilt thou sleep? we'll have thee to a couch,

Softer and sweeter than the lustful bed

On purpose trimm'd up for Semiramis.

Say, thou wilt walk; we will bestrew the ground:

Or wilt thou ride? thy horses shall be trapp'd,

Their harness studded all with gold and pearl.

Dost thou love hawking? thou hast hawks will soar

Above the morning lark: Or wilt thou hunt?

Thy hounds shall make the welkin answer them,

And fetch shrill echoes from the hollow earth.

1 *Serv.* Say, thou wilt course; thy greyhounds  
are as swift

As breathed stags, ay, fleetier than the roe.

2 *Serv.* Dost thou love pictures? we will fetch  
thee straight

Adonis, painted by a running brook:

And Cytherea all in sedges hid;

Which seem to move and wanton with her breath,

Even as the waving sedges play with wind.

*Lord.* We'll show thee Io, as she was a maid;

And how she was beguiled and surpris'd,

As lively painted as the deed was done.

3 *Serv.* Or Daphne, roaming through a thorny  
wood;

Scratching her legs that one shall swear she bleeds:

And at that sight shall sad Apollo weep,

So workmanly the blood and tears are drawn.

*Lord.* Thou art a lord, and nothing but a lord:  
Thou hast a lady far more beautiful



Than any woman in this waning age.

1 *Serv.* And, till the tears that she hath shed for thee,

Like envious floods, o'er-ran her lovely face,  
She was the fairest creature in the world;  
And yet she is inferior to none.

*Sly.* Am I a lord? and have I such a lady?  
Or do I dream? or have I dream'd till now?  
I do not sleep: I see, I hear, I speak;  
I smell sweet savours, and I feel soft things:—  
Upon my life, I am a lord, indeed;  
And not a tinker, nor Christophero Sly.—  
Well, bring our lady hither to our sight;  
And once again, a pot o' the smallest ale.

2 *Serv.* Will't please your mightiness to wash  
your hands?

[*Servants present an ewer, bason, and napkin.*

O, how we joy to see your wit restor'd!  
O, that once more you knew but what you are!  
These fifteen years you have been in a dream;  
Or, when you wak'd, so wak'd as if you slept.

*Sly.* These fifteen years! by my fay,<sup>1</sup> a goodly  
nap.

But did I never speak of all that time?

1 *Serv.* O, yes, my lord; but very idle words:—  
For though you lay here in this goodly chamber,  
Yet would you say, ye were beaten out of door;  
And rail upon the hostess of the house;  
And say, you would present her at the leet,<sup>2</sup>  
Because she brought stone jugs and no seal'd quarts:  
Sometimes you would call out for Cicely Hacket.

*Sly.* Ay, the woman's maid of the house.

3 *Serv.* Why, sir, you know no house, nor no  
such maid;

Nor no such men, as you have reckon'd up,—  
As Stephen Sly, and old John Naps of Greece,  
And Peter Turf, and Henry Pimpernell;  
And twenty more such names and men as these,

(1) Faith.

(2) Court-leet.

Which never were, nor no man ever saw.

*Sly.* Now, Lord be thanked for my good amends!

*All.* Amen.

*Sly.* I thank thee; thou shalt not lose by it.

*Enter the Page, as a lady, with attendants.*

*Page.* How fares my noble lord?

*Sly.* Marry, I fare well; for here is cheer enough.

Where is my wife?

*Page.* Here, noble lord; What is thy will with her?

*Sly.* Are you my wife, and will not call me—  
husband?

My men should call me—lord; I am your goodman.

*Page.* My husband and my lord, my lord and  
husband;

I am your wife in all obedience.

*Sly.* I know it well:—What must I call her?

*Lord.* Madam.

*Sly.* Al'ce madam, or Joan madam?

*Lord.* Madam, and nothing else; so lords call  
ladies.

*Sly.* Madam wife, they say that I have dream'd,  
and slept

Above some fifteen year and more.

*Page.* Ay, and the time seems thirty unto me:

Being all this time abandon'd from your bed.

*Sly.* 'Tis much;—Servants, leave me and her  
alone.—

Madam, undress you, and come now to bed.

*Page.* Thrice noble lord, let me entreat of you,  
To pardon me yet for a night or two;

Or, if not so, until the sun be set:

For your physicians have expressly charg'd,

In peril to incur your former malady,

That I should yet absent me from your bed:

I hope, this reason stands for my excuse.

*Sly.* Ay, it stands so, that I may hardly tarry so  
long. But I would be loath to fall into my dreams  
again; I will therefore tarry, in despite of the flesh  
and the blood.

*Enter a Servant.*

*Serv.* Your honour's players, hearing your amendment,  
Are come to play a pleasant comedy,  
For so your doctors hold it very meet;  
Seeing too much sadness hath congeal'd your blood,  
And melancholy is the nurse of frenzy,  
Therefore, they thought it good you hear a play,  
And frame your mind to mirth and merriment,  
Which bars a thousand harms, and lengthens life.

*Sly.* Marry, I will; let them play it. Is not a common<sup>1</sup> a Christmas gambol, or a tumbling-trick?

*Page.* No, my good lord; it is more pleasing stuff.

*Sly.* What, household stuff?

*Page.* It is a kind of history.

*Sly.* Well, we'll see't: Come, madam wife, sit by my side, and let the world slip; we shall ne'er be younger. *[They sit down.]*

---

## ACT I.

*SCENE I.—Padua. A Public Place. Enter Lucentio and Tranio.*

*Luc.* Tranio, since—for the great desire I had  
To see fair Padua, nursery of arts,—  
I am arriv'd for fruitful Lombardy,  
The pleasant garden of great Italy;  
And, by my father's love and leave, am arm'd  
With his good will, and thy good company,  
Most trusty servant, well approv'd in all;  
Here let us breathe, and happily institute  
A course of learning, and ingenious<sup>2</sup> studies.  
Pisa, renowned for grave citizens,

(1) For comedy.

(2) Ingenious.

Gave me my being, and my father first,  
 A merchant of great traffic through the world,  
 Vincentio, come of the Bentivolii.  
 Vincentio his son, brought up in Florence,  
 It shall become, to serve all hopes conceiv'd,  
 To deck his fortune with his virtuous deeds:  
 And therefore, Tranio, for the time I study,  
 Virtue, and that part of philosophy  
 Will I apply, that treats of happiness  
 By virtue 'specially to be achiev'd.  
 Tell me thy mind: for I have Pisa left,  
 And am to Padua come; as he that leaves  
 A shallow plash,<sup>1</sup> to plunge him in the deep,  
 And with satiety seeks to quench his thirst.

*Tra.* *Mi perdonate,*<sup>2</sup> gentle master mine,  
 I am in all affected as yourself;  
 Glad that you thus continue your resolve,  
 To suck the sweets of sweet philosophy.  
 Only, good master, while we do admire  
 This virtue, and this moral discipline,  
 Let's be no stoics, nor no stocks, I pray;  
 Or so devote to Aristotle's checks,<sup>3</sup>  
 As Ovid be an outcast quite abjur'd:  
 Talk logic with acquaintance that you have,  
 And practice rhetoric in your common talk:  
 Music and poesy use to quicken<sup>4</sup> you;  
 The mathematics, and the metaphysics,  
 Fall to them, as you find your stomach serves you:  
 No profit grows, where is no pleasure ta'en;—  
 In brief, sir, study what you most affect.

*Luc.* Gramercies, Tranio, well dost thou advise.  
 If, Biondello, thou wert come ashore,  
 We could at once put us in readiness;  
 And take a lodging, fit to entertain  
 Such friends, as time in Padua shall beget.  
 But stay awhile: What company is this?

*Tra.* Master, some show, to welcome us to town

(1) Small piece of water. (2) Pardon me. .

(3) Harsh rules. (4) Animate.

*Enter* Baptista, Katharina, Bianca, Gremio, and Hortensio. *Lucentio and Tranio stand aside.*

*Bap.* Gentlemen, importune me no further,  
For how I firmly am resolv'd you know ;  
That is,—not to bestow my youngest daughter,  
Before I have a husband for the elder :  
If either of you both love Katharina,  
Because I know you well, and love you well,  
Leave shall you have to court her at your pleasure.

*Gre.* To cart her rather : She's too rough for me :  
There, there, Hortensio, will you any wife ?

*Kath.* I pray you, sir, [*To Bap.*] is it your will  
To make a stale<sup>1</sup> of me amongst these mates ?

*Hor.* Mates, maid ! how mean you that ? no  
mates for you,

Unless you were of gentler, milder mould.

*Kath.* I'faith, sir, you shall never need to fear ;  
I wis,<sup>2</sup> it is not half way to her heart :

But, if it were, doubt not her care should be  
To comb your noddle with a three-legg'd stool,  
And paint your face, and use you like a fool.

*Hor.* From all such devils, good Lord, deliver us

*Gre.* And me too, good Lord !

*Tra.* Hush, master ! here is some good pastime  
toward ;

That wench is stark mad, or wonderful froward.

*Luc.* But in the other's silence I do see  
Maids' mild behaviour and sobriety.

Peace, Tranio.

*Tra.* Well said, master ; mum ! and gaze your fill.

*Bap.* Gentlemen, that I may soon make good  
What I have said,—Bianca, get you in :  
And let it not displease thee, good Bianca ;  
For I will love thee ne'er the less, my girl.

*Kath.* A pretty peat !<sup>3</sup> 'tis best  
Put finger in the eye,—an she knew why.

*Bian.* Sister, content you in my discontent.—  
Sir, to your pleasure humbly I subscribe :

(1) A bait or decoy. (2) Think. (3) Pet.

My books, and instruments, shall be my company ;  
On them to look, and practise by myself.

*Luc.* Hark, Tranio ! thou may'st hear Minerva  
speak. [*Aside.*]

*Hor.* Signior Baptista, will you be so strange ?  
Sorry am I, that our good will effects  
Bianca's grief.

*Gra.* Why, will you mew<sup>1</sup> her up,  
Signior Baptista, for this fiend of hell,  
And make her bear the penance of her tongue ?

*Bap.* Gentlemen, content ye ; I am resolv'd :—  
Go in, Bianca. [*Exit* Bianca.]

And for I know, she taketh most delight  
In music, instruments, and poetry,  
Schoolmasters will I keep within my house,  
Fit to instruct her youth.—If you, Hortensio,  
Or signior Gremio, you,—know any such,  
Prefer<sup>2</sup> them hither ; for to cunning<sup>3</sup> men  
I will be very kind, and liberal  
To mine own children in good bringing-up ;  
And so farewell. Katharina, you may stay ;  
For I have more to commune with Bianca. [*Exit.*]

*Kath.* Why, and I trust, I may go too ; May I not ?  
What, shall I be appointed hours ; as though, belike,  
I knew not what to take, and what to leave ? Ha !  
[*Exit.*]

*Gra.* You may go to the devil's dam ; your gifts<sup>4</sup>  
are so good, here is none will hold you. Their love  
is not so great, Hortensio, but we may blow our  
nails together, and fast it fairly out ; our cake's  
dough on both sides. Farewell :—Yet, for the love  
I bear my sweet Bianca, if I can by any means  
light on a fit man, to teach her that wherein she  
delights, I will wish him to her father.

*Hor.* So will I, signior Gremio : But a word, I  
pray. Though the nature of our quarrel yet never

(1) Shut. (2) Recommend.

(3) Knowing, learned. (4) Endowments.

brook'd parle, know now, upon advice,<sup>1</sup> it toucheth us both,—that we may yet again have access to our fair mistress, and be happy rivals in Bianca's love.—to labour and effect one thing 'specially.

*Gre.* What's that, I pray?

*Hor.* Marry, sir, to get a husband for her sister.

*Gre.* A husband! a devil.

*Hor.* I say, a husband.

*Gre.* I say, a devil: Think'st thou, Hortensio, though her father be very rich, any man is so very a fool to be married to hell?

*Hor.* Tush, Gremio, though it pass your patience, and mine, to endure her loud alarms, why, man, there be good fellows in the world, an a man could light on them, would take her with all faults, and money enough.

*Gre.* I cannot tell; but I had as lief take her dowry with this condition,—to be whipped at the high-cross every morning.

*Hor.* 'Faith, as you say, there's small choice in rotten apples. But, come; since this bar in law makes us friends, it shall be so far forth friendly maintained,—till by helping Baptista's eldest daughter to a husband, we set his youngest free for a husband, and then have to't afresh.—Sweet Bianca!—Happy man be his dole!<sup>2</sup> He that runs fastest, gets the ring. How say you, signior Gremio?

*Gre.* I am agreed: and 'would I had given him the best horse in Padua to begin his wooing, that would thoroughly woo her, wed her, and bed her, and rid the house of her. Come on.

[*Exeunt Gremio and Hortensio.*]

*Tra.* [*Advancing.*] I pray, sir, tell me,—Is it possible

That love should of a sudden take such hold?

*Luc.* O Tranio, till I found it to be true,  
I never thought it possible, or likely;  
But see! while idly I stood looking on,

(1) Consideration.      (2) Gain or lot.

I found the effect of love in idleness :  
And now in plainness do confess to thee,—  
That art to me as secret, and as dear,  
As Anna to the queen of Carthage was,—  
Tranio, I burn, I pine, I perish, Tranio,  
If I achieve not this young modest girl :  
Counsel me, Tranio, for I know thou canst ;  
Assist me, Tranio, for I know thou wilt.

*Tra.* Master, it is no time to chide you now ;  
Affection is not rated<sup>1</sup> from the heart :  
If love have touch'd you, nought remains but so,—  
*Redime et captum quam queas minimo.*

*Luc.* Gramercies, lad ; go forward : this contents ;  
The rest will comfort, for thy counsel's sound.

*Tra.* Master, you look'd so longly<sup>2</sup> on the maid,  
Perhaps you mark'd not what's the pith of all.

*Luc.* O yes, I saw sweet beauty in her face,  
Such as the daughter<sup>3</sup> of Agenor had,  
That made great Jove to humble him to her hand,  
When with his knees he kiss'd the Cretan strand.

*Tra.* Saw you no more ? mark'd you not, how  
her sister

Began to scold ; and raise up such a storm,  
That mortal ears might hardly endure the din ?

*Luc.* Tranio, I saw her coral lips to move,  
And with her breath she did perfume the air ;  
Sacred, and sweet, was all I saw in her.

*Tra.* Nay, then, 'tis time to stir him from his  
trance.

I pray, awake, sir ; If you love the maid,  
Bend thoughts and wits to achieve her. Thus it  
stands :—

Her elder sister is so curst and shrewd,  
That, till the father rid his hands of her,  
Master, your love must live a maid at home ;  
And therefore has he closely mew'd her up,  
Because she shall not be annoy'd with suitors.

- (1) Driven out by chiding.      (2) Longingly.  
(3) Eurona.



*Luc.* Ah, Tranio, what a cruel father's he !  
But art thou not advis'd, he took some care  
To get her cunning schoolmasters to instruct her?

*Tra.* Ay, marry, am I, sir ; and now 'tis plotted.

*Luc.* I have it, Tranio.

*Tra.* Master, for my hand,  
Both our inventions meet and jump in one.

*Luc.* Tell me thine first.

*Tra.* You will be schoolmaster,  
And undertake the teaching of the maid :  
That's your device.

*Luc.* It is : May it be done ?

*Tra.* Not possible ; for who shall bear your part,  
And be in Padua here Vincentio's son ?  
Keep house, and ply his book ; welcome his friends ;  
Visit his countrymen, and banquet them ?

*Luc.* Basta ;<sup>1</sup> content thee ; for I have it full.  
We have not yet been seen in any house ;  
Nor can we be distinguished by our faces,  
For man, or master : then it follows thus ;—  
Thou shalt be master, Tranio, in my stead,  
Keep house, and port,<sup>2</sup> and servants, as I should .  
I will some other be ; some Florentine,  
Some Neapolitan, or mean man of Pisa.  
'Tis hatch'd, and shall be so :—Tranio, at once  
Uncase thee ; take my colour'd hat and cloak :  
When Biondello comes, he waits on thee ;  
But I will charm him first to keep his tongue.

*Tra.* So had you need. [*They exchange habits.*]  
In brief then, sir, sith<sup>3</sup> it your pleasure is,  
And I am tied to be obedient  
(For so your father charg'd me at our parting ;  
*Be serviceable to my son*, quoth he,  
Although, I think, 'twas in another sense ;)  
I am content to be Lucentio,  
Because so well I love Lucentio.

*Luc.* Tranio, be so, because Lucentio loves :

(1) 'Tis enough. (2) Show, appearance.

(3) Since.

And let me be a slave, to achieve that maid,  
Whose sudden sight hath thrall'd my wounded eye.

*Enter Biondello.*

Here comes the rogue.—Sirrah, where have you been?

*Bion.* Where have I been? Nay, how now, where are you?

Master, has my fellow Tranio stol'n your clothes?  
Or you stol'n his? or both? pray, what's the news?

*Luc.* Sirrah, come hither; 'tis no time to jest,  
And therefore frame your manners to the time.  
Your fellow Tranio here, to save my life,  
Puts my apparel and my countenance on,  
And I for my escape have put on his;  
For in a quarrel, since I came ashore,  
I kill'd a man, and fear I was descried:  
Wait you on him, I charge you, as becomes,  
While I make way from hence to save my life:  
You understand me?

*Bion.* I, sir? ne'er a whit.

*Luc.* And not a jot of Tranio in your mouth;  
Tranio is chang'd into Lucentio.

*Bion.* The better for him; 'Would I were so too!

*Tra.* So would I, 'faith, boy, to have the next wish after,—

That Lucentio indeed had Baptista's youngest daughter.

But, sirrah,—not for my sake, but your master's,—  
I advise

You use your manners discreetly in all kind of companies:

When I am alone, why, then I am Tranio;  
But in all places else, your master Lucentio.

*Luc.* Tranio, let's go:—

One thing more rests, that thyself execute;—  
To make one among these wooers: If thou ask me why,—

Sufficeth, my reasons are both good and weighty.

*[Exeunt.]*

(1) Observed.

1 Serv. *My lord, you nod; you do not mind the play.*

Sly. *Yes, by saint Anne, do I. A good matter, surely; Comes there any more of it?*

Page. *My lord, 'tis but begun.*

Sly. *'Tis a very excellent piece of work, madam lady; 'Would't were done!*

SCENE II.—*The same. Before Hortensio's house. Enter Petruchio and Grumio.*

Pet. Verona, for a while I take my leave,  
To see my friends in Padua; but of all,  
My best beloved and approved friend,  
Hortensio; and, I trow, this is his house:  
Here, sirrah Grumio; knock, I say.

Gru. Knock, sir! whom should I knock? is there any man has rebused your worship?

Pet. Villain, I say, knock me here soundly.

Gru. Knock you here, sir? why, sir, what am I, sir, that I should knock you here, sir?

Pet. Villain, I say, knock me at this gate,  
And rap me well, or I'll knock your knave's pate.

Gru. My master is grown quarrelsome: I should knock you first,

And then I know after who comes by the worst.

Pet. Will it not be?

'Faith, sirrah, and you'll not knock, I'll wring it;  
I'll try how you can *sol, fa*, and sing it.

[*He wrings Grumio by the ears.*]

Gru. Help, masters, help! my master is mad.

Pet. Now, knock when I bid you: sirrah! villain!

*Enter Hortensio.*

Hor. How now? what's the matter?—My old friend Grumio! and my good friend Petruchio!—How do you all at Verona?

Pet. Signior Hortensio, come you to part the fray?  
*Con tutto il core bene trovato*, may I say.

Hor. *Alla nostra casa bene venulo,  
Molto honorato signor mio Petruchio.*

Rise, Grumio, rise ; we will compound this quarrel.

*Gru.* Nay, 'tis no matter, what he 'leges<sup>1</sup> in Latin.—if this be not a lawful cause for me to leave his service,—Look you, sir,—he bid me knock him, and rap him soundly, sir : Well, was it fit for a servant to use his master so ; being perhaps (for aught I see,) two and thirty,—a pip out ?

Whom, 'would to God, I had well knock'd at first, Then had not Grumio come by the worst.

*Pet.* A senseless villain !—Good Hortensio, I bade the rascal knock upon your gate, And could not get him for my heart to do it.

*Gru.* Knock at the gate ?—O heavens ! Spake you not these words plain,—Sirrah, knock me here, Rap me here, knock me well, and knock me soundly ?

And come you now with—knocking at the gate ?

*Pet.* Sirrah, be gone, or talk not, I advise you.

*Hor.* Petruchio, patience ; I am Grumio's pledge : Why, this is a heavy chance 'twixt him and you ; Your ancient, trusty, pleasant servant Grumio. And tell me now, sweet friend,—what happy gale Blows you to Padua here, from old Verona ?

*Pet.* Such wind as scatters young men through the world,

To seek their fortunes further than at home, Where small experience grows. But, in a few,<sup>2</sup> Signior Hortensio, thus it stands with me :—

Antonio, my father, is deceas'd ; And I have thrust myself into this maze, Haply to wive, and thrive, as best I may : Crowns in my purse I have, and goods at home, And so am come abroad to see the world.

*Hor.* Petruchio, shall I then come roundly to thee,

And wish thee to a shrewd ill-favour'd wife ? Thou'dst thank me but a little for my counsel :

(1) Alleges.

(2) Few words.

And yet I'll promise thee she shall be rich,  
And very rich :—but thou'rt too much my friend,  
And I'll not wish thee to her.

*Pet.* Signior Hortensio, 'twixt such friends as we,  
Few words suffice : and, therefore, if thou know  
One rich enough to be Petruchio's wife  
(As wealth is burthen of my wooing dance,) <sup>1</sup>  
Be she as foul as was Florentius' love,<sup>1</sup>  
As old as Sybil, and as curst and shrewd  
As Socrates' Xantippe, or a worse,  
She moves me not, or not removes, at least,  
Affection's edge in me ; were she as rough  
As are the swelling Adriatic seas :  
I come to wive it wealthily in Padua ;  
If wealthily, then happily in Padua.

*Gru.* Nay, look you, sir, he tells you flatly what  
his mind is : Why, give him gold enough, and  
marry him to a puppet, or an aglet-baby ;<sup>2</sup> or an  
old trot with ne'er a tooth in her head, though she  
have as many diseases as two and fifty horses : why,  
nothing comes amiss, so money comes withal.

*Hor.* Petruchio, since we have stepp'd thus far in,  
I will continue that I broach'd in jest.  
I can, Petruchio, help thee to a wife  
With wealth enough, and young, and beauteous ;  
Brought up, as best becomes a gentlewoman :  
Her only fault (and that is faults enough,)  
Is,—that she is intolerably curst,  
And shrewd, and froward ; so beyond all measure,  
That, were my state far worser than it is,  
I would not wed her for a mine of gold.

*Pet.* Hortensio, peace ; thou know'st not gold's  
effect :—  
Tell me her father's name, and 'tis enough ;  
For I will board her, though she chide as loud  
As thunder, when the clouds in autumn crack.

(1) See the story, No. 39, of '*A Thousand Notable Things*.'

(2) A small image on the tag of lace.

*Hor.* Her father is Baptista Minola,  
An affable and courteous gentleman :  
Her name is Katharina Minola,  
Renown'd in Padua for her scolding tongue.

*Pet.* I know her father, though I know not her ;  
And he knew my deceased father well :—  
I will not sleep, Hortensio, till I see her ;  
And therefore let me be thus bold with you,  
To give you over at this first encounter,  
Unless you will accompany me thither.

*Gru.* I pray you, sir, let him go while the humour lasts. O' my word, an she knew him as well as I do, she would think scolding would do little good upon him : She may, perhaps, call him half a score knaves, or so : why, that's nothing ; an he begin once, he'll rail in his rope-tricks.<sup>1</sup> I'll tell you what, sir,—an she stand<sup>2</sup> him but a little, he will throw a figure in her face, and so disfigure her with it, that she shall have no more eyes to see with than a cat : you know him not, sir.

*Hor.* Tarry, Petruchio, I must go with thee ;  
For in Baptista's keep<sup>3</sup> my treasure is :  
He hath the jewel of my life in hold,  
His youngest daughter, beautiful Bianca ;  
And her withholds from me, and other more  
Suitors to her, and rivals in my love :  
Supposing it a thing impossible  
(For those defects I have before rehears'd,)  
That ever Katharina will be woo'd,  
Therefore this order<sup>4</sup> hath Baptista ta'en ;—  
That none shall have access unto Bianca,  
Till Katharine the curst have got a husband.

*Gru.* Katharine the curst !  
A title for a maid, of all titles the worst.

*Hor.* Now shall my friend Petruchio do me grace ;  
And offer me, disguis'd in sober robes,  
To old Baptista as a schoolmaster

- (1) Abusive language.      (2) Withstand.  
(3) Custody.                (4) These measures.

Well seen<sup>1</sup> in music, to instruct Bianca :  
That so I may by this device, at least,  
Have leave and leisure to make love to her,  
And, unsuspected, court her by herself.

*Enter Gremio ; with him Lucentio disguised, with  
books under his arm.*

*Gru.* Here's no knavery ! See ; to beguile the  
old folks, how the young folks lay their heads to-  
gether ! Master, master, look about you : Who  
goes there ? ha !

*Hor.* Peace, Grumio ; 'tis the rival of my love :—  
Petruchio, stand by a while.

*Gru.* A proper stripling, and an amcrous !

*[They retire.]*

*Gre.* O, very well ; I have perus'd the note.  
Hark you, sir ; I'll have them very fairly bound :  
All books of love, see that at any hand ;<sup>2</sup>  
And see you read no other lectures to her :  
You understand me :—Over and beside  
Signior Baptista's liberality,  
I'll mend it with a largess :<sup>3</sup>—Take your papers too,  
And let me have them very well perfum'd ;  
For she is sweeter than perfume itself,  
To whom they go. What will you read to her ?

*Luc.* Whate'er I read to her, I'll plead for you,  
As for my patron (stand you so assur'd,)  
As firmly as yourself were still in place :  
Yea, and (perhaps) with more successful words  
Than you, unless you were a scholar, sir.

*Gre.* O this learning ! what a thing it is !

*Gru.* O this woodcock ! what an ass it is !

*Pet.* Peace, sirrah.

*Hor.* Grumio, mum !—God save you, signior  
Gremio !

*Gre.* And you're well met, signior Hortensio.  
Trow you,

Whither I am going ?—To Baptista Minola.

(1) Versed.      (2) Rate.      (3) Present.

I promis'd to inquire carefully  
About a schoolmaster for fair Bianca :  
And, by good fortune, I have lighted well  
On this young man ; for learning, and behaviour,  
Fit for her turn ; well read in poetry,  
And other books,—good ones, I warrant you.

*Hor.* 'Tis well : and I have met a gentleman,  
Hath promis'd me to help me to another,  
A fine musician to instruct our mistress ;  
So shall I no whit be behind in duty  
To fair Bianca, so belov'd of me.

*Gre.* Belov'd of me,—and that my deeds shall  
prove.

*Gru.* And that his bags shall prove. [*Aside.*

*Hor.* Gremio, 'tis now no time to vent our love :  
Listen to me, and if you speak me fair,  
I'll tell you news indifferent good for either.  
Here is a gentleman, whom by chance I met,  
Upon agreement from us to his liking,  
Will undertake to woo curst Katharine ;  
Yea, and to marry her, if her dowry please.

*Gre.* So said, so done, is well :—  
Hortensio, have you told him all her faults ?

*Pet.* I know, she is an irksome brawling soold,  
If that be all, masters, I hear no harm.

*Gre.* No, say'st me so, friend ? What country-  
man ?

*Pet.* Born in Verona, old Antonio's son :  
My father dead, my fortune lives for me ;  
And I do hope good days, and long, to see.

*Gre.* O, sir, such a life, with such a wife, were  
strange :

But, if you have a stomach, to't, o' God's name ;  
You shall have me assisting you in all.  
But will you woo this wild cat ?

*Pet.* Will I live ?

*Gru.* Will he woo her ? ay, or I'll hang her.

[*Aside.*

*Pet.* Why came I hither, but to that intent ?  
Think you, a little din can daunt mine ears ?



Have I not in my time heard lions roar?  
Have I not heard the sea, puff'd up with winds,  
Rage like an angry boar, chafed with sweat?  
Have I not heard great ordnance in the field,  
And heaven's artillery thunder in the skies?  
Have I not in a pitched battle heard  
Loud 'larums, neighing steeds, and trumpets' clang?  
And do you tell me of a woman's tongue;  
That gives not half so great a blow to the ear,  
As will a chesnut in a farmer's fire?  
Tush! tush! fear boys with bugs.<sup>1</sup>

*Gru.*

For he fears none.

[*Aside.*]

*Gre.* Hortensio, hark!

This gentleman is happily arriv'd,  
My mind presumes, for his own good, and yours.

*Hor.* I promis'd, we would be contributors,  
And bear his charge of wooing, whatsoe'er.

*Gre.* And so we will; provided, that he win her.

*Gru.* I would, I were as sure of a good dinner.

[*Aside.*]

*Enter Tranio, bravely apparelled; and Biondello.*

*Tra.* Gentlemen, God save you! If I may be bold,  
Tell me, I beseech you, which is the readiest way  
To the house of signior Baptista Minola?

*Gre.* He that has the two fair daughters:—is't  
[*Aside to Tranio.*] he you mean?

*Tra.* Even he. Biondello!

*Gre.* Hark you, sir; You mean not her to—

*Tra.* Perhaps, him and her, sir; What have  
you to do?

*Pet.* Not her that chides, sir, at any hand, I pray.

*Tra.* I love no chiders, sir:—Biondello, let's  
away.

*Luc.* Well begun, Tranio.

[*Aside.*]

*Hor.* Sir, a word ere you go;—

Are you a suitor to the maid you talk of, yea, or no?

(1) Fright boys with bug-bears.

*Tra.* An if I be, sir, is it any offence?

*Gre.* No; if, without more words, you will get you hence.

*Tra.* Why, sir, I pray, are not the streets as free for me, as for you?

*Gre.* But so is not she.

*Tra.* For what reason, I beseech you?

*Gre.* For this reason, if you'll know,—  
That she's the choice love of signior Gremio.

*Hor.* That she's the chosen of signior Hortensio.

*Tra.* Softly, my masters! if you be gentlemen,  
Do me this right,—hear me with patience.

Baptista is a noble gentleman,  
To whom my father is not all unknown;  
And, were his daughter fairer than she is,  
She may more suitors have, and me for one.  
Fair Leda's daughter had a thousand wooers;  
Then well one more may fair Bianca have:  
And so she shall; Lucentio shall make one,  
Though Paris came, in hope to speed alone.

*Gre.* What! this gentleman will out-talk us all.

*Luc.* Sir, give him head; I know, he'll prove a  
jade.

*Pet.* Hortensio, to what end are all these words?

*Hor.* Sir, let me be so bold as to ask you,  
Did you yet ever see Baptista's daughter?

*Tra.* No, sir; but hear I do, that he hath two;  
The one as famous for a scolding tongue,  
As is the other for beauteous modesty.

*Pet.* Sir, sir, the first's for me; let her go by.

*Gre.* Yea, leave that labour to great Hercules,  
And let it be more than Alcides' twelve.

*Pet.* Sir, understand you this of me, insooth;—  
The youngest daughter, whom you hearken for,  
Her father keeps from all access of suitors;  
And will not promise her to any man,  
Until the elder sister first be wed:

The younger then is free, and not before.

*Tra.* If it be so, sir, that you are the man  
Must stead us all, and me among the rest;

An if you break the ice, and do this feat,—  
Achieve the elder, set the younger free  
For our access,—whose hap shall be to have her,  
Will not so graceless be, to be ingrate.<sup>1</sup>

*Hor.* Sir, you say well, and well you do conceive;  
And since you do profess to be a suitor,  
You must, as we do, gratify this gentleman,  
To whom we all rest generally beholden.

*Tra.* Sir, I shall not be slack: in sign whereof,  
Please ye we may contrive this afternoon,  
And quaff carouses to our mistress' health;  
And do as adversaries do in law,—  
Strive mightily, but eat and drink as friends.

*Gru. Bion.* O excellent motion!—Fellows,<sup>2</sup> let's  
begone.

*Hor.* The motion's good indeed, and be it so;—  
Petruchio, I shall be your *ben venuto*. [*Exeunt.*]

---

## ACT II.

*SCENE I.*—*The same. A room in Baptista's house. Enter Katharina and Bianca.*

*Bian.* Good sister, wrong me not, nor wrong  
yourself,  
To make a bondmaid and a slave of me;  
That I disdain: but for these other gawds,<sup>3</sup>  
Unbind my hands, I'll pull them off myself,  
Yea, all my raiment, to my petticoat;  
Or, what you will command me, will I do,  
So well I know my duty to my elders.

*Kath.* Of all thy suitors, here I charge thee, tell  
Whom thou lov'st best: see thou dissemble not.

*Bian.* Believe me, sister, of all the men alive,  
I never yet beheld that special face  
Which I could fancy more than any other.

- (1) Ungrateful.                      (2) Companions.  
(3) Trifling ornaments.

*Kath.* Minion, thou liest ; Is't not Hortensio ?

*Bian.* If you affect<sup>1</sup> him, sister, here I swear,  
I'll plead for you myself, but you shall have him.

*Kath.* O, then, belike, you fancy riches more ;  
You will have Gremio to keep you fair.

*Bian.* Is it for him you do envy me so ?  
Nay, then you jest ; and now I well perceive,  
You have but jested with me all this while :  
I pr'ythee, sister Kate, untie my hands.

*Kath.* If that be jest, then all the rest was so.  
[*Strikes her.*]

*Enter Baptista.*

*Bap.* Why, how now, dame ! whence grows  
this insolence ?——

Bianca, stand aside ;—poor girl ! she weeps :—  
Go ply thy needle ; meddle not with her.—  
For shame, thou hilding<sup>2</sup> of a devilish spirit,  
Why dost thou wrong her that did ne'er wrong thee ?  
When did she cross thee with a bitter word ?

*Kath.* Her silence flouts me, and I'll be reveng'd.  
[*Flies after Bianca.*]

*Bap.* What, in my sight ?—Bianca, get thee in.  
[*Exit Bianca.*]

*Kath.* Will you not suffer me ? Nay, now I see,  
She is your treasure, she must have a husband ?  
I must dance bare-foot on her wedding-day,  
And, for your love to her, lead apes in hell.  
Talk not to me ; I will go sit and weep,  
Till I can find occasion of revenge. [*Exit Kath.*]

*Bap.* Was ever gentleman thus griev'd as I ?  
But who comes here ?

*Enter Gremio, with Lucentio in the habit of a  
mean man ; Petruchio, with Hortensio as a mu-  
sician ; and Tranio, with Biondello bearing a  
lute and books.*

*Gre.* Good-morrow, neighbour Baptista.

(1) Love.

VOL. III.

(2) A worthless woman.

I

*Bap.* Good-morrow, neighbour Gremio: God save you, gentlemen!

*Pet.* And you, good sir! Pray, have you not a daughter

Call'd Katharina, fair, and virtuous?

*Bap.* I have a daughter, sir, call'd Katharina.

*Gre.* You are too blunt, go to it orderly.

*Pet.* You wrong me, signior Gremio; give me leave.—

I am a gentleman of Verona, sir,  
That,—hearing of her beauty, and her wit,  
Her affability, and bashful modesty,  
Her wondrous qualities, and mild behaviour,—  
Am bold to show myself a forward guest  
Within your house, to make mine eye the witness  
Of that report which I so oft have heard.  
And, for an entrance to my entertainment,  
I do present you with a man of mine,

[*Presenting Hortensio.*

Cunning in music, and the mathematics,  
To instruct her fully in those sciences,  
Whereof, I know, she is not ignorant:  
Accept of him, or else you do me wrong;  
His name is Licio, born in Mantua.

*Bap.* You're welcome, sir; and he, for your good sake:

But for my daughter Katharine,—this I know,  
She is not for your turn, the more my grief.

*Pet.* I see, you do not mean to part with her;  
Or else you like not of my company.

*Bap.* Mistake me not, I speak but as I find.

Whence are you, sir? what may I call your name?

*Pet.* Petruchio is my name; Antonio's son,  
A man well known throughout all Italy.

*Bap.* I know him well: you are welcome for his sake.

*Gre.* Saving your tale, Petruchio, I pray,  
Let us, that are poor petitioners, speak too:  
Baccare!<sup>1</sup> you are marvellous forward.

(1) A proverbial exclamation then in use.

*Pet.* O, pardon me, signior Gremio; I would fain be doing.

*Gre.* I doubt it not, sir; but you will curse your wooing.—

Neighbour, this is a gift very grateful, I am sure of it. To express the like kindness myself, that have been more kindly beholden to you than any, I freely give unto you this young scholar [*Presenting Lucentio.*] that hath been long studying at Rheims; as cunning in Greek, Latin, and other languages, as the other in music and mathematics: his name is Cambio; pray, accept his service.

*Bap.* A thousand thanks, signior Gremio: welcome, good Cambio.—But, gentle sir [*To Tranio.*] methinks you walk like a stranger; May I be so bold to know the cause of your coming?

*Tra.* Pardon me, sir, the boldness is mine own; That, being a stranger in this city here, Do make myself a suitor to your daughter, Unto Bianca, fair, and virtuous.

Nor is your firm resolve unknown to me,  
In the preferment of the eldest sister:

This liberty is all that I request,—

That, upon knowledge of my parentage,  
I may have welcome 'mongst the rest that woo,  
And free access and favour as the rest.

And, toward the education of your daughters,  
I here bestow a simple instrument,  
And this small packet of Greek and Latin books:  
If you accept them, then their worth is great.

*Bap.* Lucentio is your name? of whence, I pray?

*Tra.* Of Pisa, sir; son to Vincentio.

*Bap.* A mighty man of Pisa; by report  
I know him well: you are very welcome, sir.—  
Take you [*To Hor.*] the lute, and you [*To Luc.*]  
the set of books,

You shall go see your pupils presently.  
Holla, within!

*Enter a Servant.*

Sirrah, lead

These gentlemen to my daughters ; and tell them  
both,

These are their tutors ; bid them use them well.

[*Exit Servant, with Hortensio, Lucentio, and  
Biondello.*

We will go walk a little in the orchard,

And then to dinner : You are passing welcome,

And so I pray you all to think yourselves.

*Pet.* Signior Baptista, my business asketh haste,  
And every day I cannot come to woo.

You knew my father well ; and in him, me,

Left solely heir to all his lands and goods,

Which I have better'd rather than decreas'd :

Then tell me,—if I get your daughter's love,

What dowry shall I have with her to wife ?

*Bap.* After my death, the one half of my lands :  
And, in possession, twenty thousand crowns.

*Pet.* And, for that dowry, I'll assure her of  
Her widowhood,—be it that she survive me,—  
In all my lands and leases whatsoever :

Let specialties be therefore drawn between us,  
That covenants may be kept on either hand.

*Bap.* Ay, when the special thing is well obtain'd,  
This is,—her love ; for that is all in all.

*Pet.* Why, that is nothing ; for I tell you, father,  
I am as peremptory as she proud-minded ;

And where two raging fires meet together,

They do consume the thing that feeds their fury :

Though little fire grows great with little wind,

Yet extreme gusts will blow out fire and all :

So I to her, and so she yields to me :

For I am rough, and woo not like a babe.

*Bap.* Well may'st thou woo, and happy be thy  
speed !

But be thou arm'd for some unhappy words.

*Pet.* Ay, to the proof ; as mountains are for winds,  
That shake not, though they blow perpetually.

*Re-enter Hortensio, with his head broken.*

*Bap.* How now, my friend? why dost thou look so pale?

*Hor.* For fear, I promise you, if I look pale.

*Bap.* What, will my daughter prove a good musician?

*Hor.* I think she'll sooner prove a soldier; Iron may hold with her, but never lutes.

*Bap.* Why, then thou canst not break her to the lute?

*Hor.* Why, no; for she hath broke the lute to me. I did but tell her, she mistook her frets,<sup>1</sup>

And bow'd her hand to teach her fingering;

When, with a most impatient devilish spirit,

*Frets, call you these?* quoth she: *I'll fume with them:*

And, with that word, she struck me on the head,

And through the instrument my pate made way;

And there I stood amaz'd for a while,

As on a pillory, looking through the lute:

While she did call me,—rascal fiddler,

And—twangling Jack;<sup>2</sup> with twenty such vile terms,

As she had studied to misuse me so.

*Pet.* Now, by the world, it is a lusty wench;

I love her ten times more than e'er I did:

O, how I long to have some chat with her!

*Bap.* Well, go with me, and be not so discomfited:

Proceed in practice with my younger daughter;

She's apt to learn, and thankful for good turns

Signior Petruchio, will you go with us;

Or shall I send my daughter Kate to you?

*Pet.* I pray you do; I will attend her here,—

[*Exe. Bap. Gre. Tra. and Hor.*]

And woo her with some spirit when she comes.

Say, that she rail; Why, then I'll tell her plain,

(1) A fret in music is the stop which causes or regulates the vibration of the string.

(2) Paltry musician.



She sings as sweetly as a nightingale :  
Say, that she frown ; I'll say, she looks as clear  
As morning roses newly wash'd with dew :  
Say, she be mute, and will not speak a word ;  
Then I'll commend her volubility,  
And say—she uttereth piercing eloquence :  
If she do bid me pack, I'll give her thanks,  
As though she bid me stay by her a week ;  
If she deny to wed, I'll crave the day  
When I shall ask the banns, and when be married:—  
But here she comes ; and now, Petruchio, speak.

*Enter Katharina.*

Good-morrow, Kate ; for that's your name, I hear.

*Kath.* Well have you heard, but something hard  
of hearing ;

They call me—Katharine, that do talk of me.

*Pet.* You lie, in faith ; for you are call'd plain  
Kate,

And bonny Kate, and sometimes Kate the curst ;  
But Kate, the prettiest Kate in Christendom,  
Kate of Kate-hall, my super-dainty Kate,  
For dainties are all cates : and therefore, Kate,  
Take this of me, Kate of my consolation ;—  
Hearing thy mildness prais'd in every town,  
Thy virtues spoke of, and thy beauty sounded,  
(Yet not so deeply as to thee belongs,)  
Myself am mov'd to woo thee for my wife.

*Kath.* Mov'd ! in good time : let him that mov'd  
you hither,

Remove you hence : I knew you at the first,  
You were a moveable.

*Pet.* Why, what's a moveable ?

*Kath.* A joint-stool.

*Pet.* Thou hast hit it : come, sit on me.

*Kath.* Asses are made to bear, and so are you.

*Pet.* Women are made to bear, and so are you.

*Kath.* No such jade, sir, as you, if me you mean.

*Pet.* Alas, good Kate ! I will not burden thee :  
For, knowing thee to be but young and light,—

*Kath.* Too light for such a swain as you to catch;  
And yet as heavy as my weight should be.

*Pet.* Should be? should buz.

*Kath.* Well ta'en, and like a buzzard.

*Pet.* O, slow-wing'd turtle! shall a buzzard take thee?

*Kath.* Ay, for a turtle; as he takes a buzzard.

*Pet.* Come, come, you wasp; i'faith, you are too angry.

*Kath.* If I be waspish, best beware my sting.

*Pet.* My remedy is then, to pluck it out.

*Kath.* Ay, if the fool could find it where it lies.

*Pet.* Who knows not where a wasp doth wear his sting?

In his tail.

*Kath.* In his tongue.

*Pet.* Whose tongue?

*Kath.* Yours, if you talk of tails; and so farewell.

*Pet.* What, with my tongue in your tail? nay, come again,

Good Kate; I am a gentleman.

*Kath.* That I'll try.

[Striking him.]

*Pet.* I swear I'll cuff you, if you strike again.

*Kath.* So may you lose your arms:

If you strike me, you are no gentleman;

And if no gentleman, why, then no arms.

*Pet.* A herald, Kate? O, put me in thy books.

*Kath.* What is your crest? a coxcomb?

*Pet.* A combless cock, so Kate will be my hen.

*Kath.* No cock of mine, you crow too like a craven.<sup>1</sup>

*Pet.* Nay, come, Kate, come; you must not look so sour.

*Kath.* It is my fashion, when I see a crab.

*Pet.* Why, here's no crab; and therefore look not sour.

(1) A degenerate cock.

*Kath.* There is, there is.

*Pet.* Then show it me.

*Kath.* Had I a glass, I would.

*Pet.* What, you mean my face?

*Kath.* Well aim'd of<sup>1</sup> such a young one.

*Pet.* Now, by Saint George, I am too young for you.

*Kath.* Yet you are wither'd.

*Pet.* 'Tis with cares.

*Kath.* I care not.

*Pet.* Nay, hear you, Kate : in sooth, you 'scape not so.

*Kath.* I chafe you, if I tarry ; let me go.

*Pet.* No, not a whit ; I find you passing gentle.

'Twas told me, you were rough, and coy, and sullen,  
And now I find report a very liar ;

For thou art pleasaut, gamesome, passing court-  
teous ;

But slow in speech, yet sweet as spring-time flowers :

Thou canst not frown, thou canst not look askance,

Nor bite the lip, as angry wenches will ;

Nor hast thou pleasure to be cross in talk ;

But thou with mildness entertain'st thy wooers,

With gentle conference, soft and affable.

Why does the world report, that Kate doth limp ?

O slanderous world ! Kate, like the hazle-twig,

Is straight and slender ; and as brown in hue

As hazle nuts, and sweeter than the kernels.

O, let me see thee walk : thou dost not halt.

*Kath.* Go, fool, and whom thou keep'st command.

*Pet.* Did ever Dian so become a grove,

As Kate this chamber with her princely gait ?

O, be thou Dian, and let her be Kate ;

And then let Kate be chaste, and Dian sportful !

*Kath.* Where did you study all this goodly  
speech ?

*Pet.* It is extempore, from my mother-wit.

*Kath.* A witty mother ! witless else her son.

(1) By.

*Pet.* Am I not wise?

*Kath.* Yes; keep you warm.

*Pet.* Marry, so I mean, sweet Katharine, in thy bed:

And therefore, setting all this chat aside,  
Thus in plain terms:—Your father hath consented  
That you shall be my wife; your dowry 'greed on;  
And, will you, nill you, I will marry you.  
Now, Kate, I am a husband for your turn;  
For, by this light, whereby I see thy beauty  
(Thy beauty, that doth make me like thee well,) Thou must be married to no man but me:  
For I am he, am born to tame you, Kate,  
And bring you from a wild cat to a Kate  
Conformable, as other household Kates.  
Here comes your father; never make denial,  
I must and will have Katharine to my wife.

*Re-enter Baptista, Gremio, and Tranio.*

*Bap.* Now,  
Signior Petruchio: How speed you with  
My daughter?

*Pet.* How but well, sir? how but well?  
It were impossible I should speed amiss.

*Bap.* Why, how now, daughter Katharine? in  
your dumps?

*Kath.* Call you me daughter? now I promise you,  
You have show'd a tender fatherly regard,  
To wish me wed to one half lunatic:  
A mad-cap ruffian, and a swearing Jack,  
That thinks with oaths to face the matter out.

*Pet.* Father, 'tis thus,—yourself and all the world,  
That talk'd of her, have talk'd amiss of her;  
If she be curst, it is for policy:  
For she's not froward, but modest as the dove;  
She is not hot, but temperate as the morn;  
For patience she will prove a second Grissel;  
And Roman Lucrece for her chastity:  
And to conclude,—we have 'greed so well together  
That upon Sunday is the wedding-day.

*Kath.* I'll see thee hang'd on Sunday first.

*Gre.* Hark, Petruchio ! she says, she'll see thee hang'd first.

*Tra.* Is this your speeding ? nay, then, good night our part !

*Pet.* Be patient, gentlemen ; I choose her for myself ;

If she and I be pleas'd, what's that to you ?

'Tis bargain'd 'twixt us twain, being alone,

That she shall still be curst in company.

I tell you, 'tis incredible to believe

How much she loves me : O, the kindest Kate !—

She hung about my neck ; and kiss on kiss

She vied<sup>1</sup> so fast, protesting oath on oath,

That in a twink she won me to her love.

O, you are novices ! 'tis a world to see,<sup>2</sup>

How tame, when men and women are alone,

A meacock<sup>3</sup> wretch can make the curtest shrew.—

Give me thy hand, Kate : I will unto Venice,

To buy apparel 'gainst the wedding-day :—

Provide<sup>4</sup> the feast, father, and bid the guests ;

I will be sure, my Katharine shall be fine.

*Bap.* I know not what to say : but give me your hands ;

God send you joy, Petruchio ! 'tis a match.

*Gre. Tra.* Amen, say we ; we will be witnesses.

*Pet.* Father, and wife, and gentlemen, adieu ;

I will to Venice, Sunday comes apace :—

We will have rings, and things, and fine array ;

And kiss me, Kate, we will be married o'Sunday.

[*Exeunt Petruchio and Katharine, severally.*]

*Gre.* Was ever match clapp'd up so suddenly ?

*Bap.* Faith, gentlemen, now I play a merchant's part,

And venture madly on a desperate mart.

(1) To vie and revie were terms at cards now superseded by the word brag.

(2) It is well worth seeing.

(3) A dastardly creature.

*Tra.* 'Twas a commodity lay fretting by you :  
'Twill bring you gain, or perish on the seas.

*Bap.* The gain I seek is—quiet in the match.

*Gre.* No doubt, but he hath got a quiet catch.  
But now, Baptista, to your younger daughter ;—  
Now is the day we long have looked for ;  
I am your neighbour, and was suitor first.

*Tra.* And I am one, that love Bianca more  
Than words can witness, or your thoughts can guess.

*Gre.* Youngling ! thou canst not love so dear as I.

*Tra.* Grey-beard ! thy love doth freeze.

*Gre.* But thine doth fry.

*Skipper,* stand back ; 'tis age that nourisheth.

*Tra.* But youth, in ladies' eyes that flourisheth.

*Bap.* Content you, gentlemen ; I'll compound  
this strife :

'Tis deeds, must win the prize ; and he, of both,  
That can assure my daughter greatest dower,  
Shall have Bianca's love.—

Say, signior Gremio, what can you assure her ?

*Gre.* First, as you know, my house within the  
city,

Is richly furnish'd with plate and gold ;  
Basons, and ewers, to lave her dainty hands ;  
My hangings all of Tyrian tapestry :  
In ivory coffers I have stuff'd my crowns ;  
In cypress chests my arras, counterpoints,<sup>1</sup>  
Costly apparel, tents, and canopies,  
Fine linen, Turkey cushions boss'd with pearl,  
Valance of Venice gold in needle-work,  
Pewter and brass, and all things that belong  
To house, or housekeeping : then, at my farm,  
I have a hundred milch-kine to the pail,  
Sixscore fat oxen standing in my stalls,  
And all things answerable to this portion.  
Myself am struck in years, I must confess ;  
And, if I die to-morrow, this is hers,  
If, whilst I live, she will be only mine.

(1) Coverings for beds ; now called counterpanes.

*Tra.* That *only* came well in—Sir, list to me,  
I am my father's heir, and only son :  
If I may have your daughter to my wife, .  
I'll leave her houses three or four as good,  
Within rich Pisa walls, as any one  
Old signior Gremio has in Padua ;  
Besides two thousand ducats by the year,  
Of fruitful land, all which shall be her jointure.—  
What, have I pinch'd you, signior Gremio ?

*Gre.* Two thousand ducats by the year, of land !  
My land amounts not to so much in all :  
That she shall have ; besides an argosy,<sup>1</sup>  
That now is lying in Marseilles' road :—  
What, have I chok'd you with an argosy ?

*Tra.* Gremio, 'tis known, my father hath no less  
Than three great argosies ; besides two galliasses,<sup>2</sup>  
And twelve tight gallies : these I will assure her,  
And twice as much, whate'er thou offer'st next.

*Gre.* Nay, I have offer'd all, I have no more ;  
And she can have no more than all I have ;—  
If you like me, she shall have me and mine.

*Tra.* Why, then the maid is mine from all the  
world,  
By your firm promise ; Gremio is out-vied.

*Bap.* I must confess, your offer is the best ;  
And, let your father make her the assurance,  
She is your own ; else, you must pardon me :  
If you should die before him, where's her dower ?

*Tra.* That's but a cavil ; he is old, I young.

*Gre.* And may not young men die, as well as old ?

*Bap.* Well, gentlemen,  
I am thus resolv'd :—On Sunday next you know,  
My daughter Katharine is to be married :  
Now, on the Sunday following, shall Bianca  
Be bride to you, if you make this assurance ;  
If not, to signior Gremio :

(1) A large merchant-ship.

(2) A vessel of burthen worked both with sails  
and oars.

And so I take my leave, and thank you both. [*Ex.*

*Gre.* Adieu, good neighbour.—Now I fear thee not;

Sirrah, young gamester, your father were a fool  
To give thee all, and, in his waning age,  
Set foot under thy table: Tut! a toy!

An old Italian fox is not so kind, my boy. [*Exit.*

*Tra.* A vengeance on your crafty wither'd hide!

Yet I have faced it with a card of ten.<sup>1</sup>

'Tis in my head to do my master good:—

I see no reason, but suppos'd Lucentio

Must get a father, call'd—suppos'd Vincentio;

And that's a wonder: fathers, commonly,

Do get their children; but, in this case of wooing,

A child shall get a sire, if I fail not of my cunning.  
[*Exit.*

---

### ACT III.

*SCENE I.*—*A room in Baptista's house. Enter*  
*Lucentio, Hortensio, and Bianca.*

*Luc.* Fiddler, forbear; you grow too forward, sir:  
Have you so soon forgot the entertainment  
Her sister Katharine welcom'd you withal?

*Hor.* But, wrangling pedant, this is  
The patroness of heavenly harmony:  
Then give me leave to have prerogative;  
And when in music we have spent an hour,  
Your lecture shall have leisure for as much.

*Luc.* Preposterous ass! that never read so far  
To know the cause why music was ordain'd!  
Was it not, to refresh the mind of man,  
After his studies, or his usual pain?  
Then give me leave to read philosophy,  
And, while I pause, serve in your harmony.

*Hor.* Sirrah, I will not bear these braves of thine.

(1) The highest card.



*Bian.* Why, gentlemen, you do me double wrong,  
To strive for that which resteth in my choice :  
I am no breeching scholar<sup>1</sup> in the schools ;  
I'll not be tied to hours, nor 'pointed times,  
But learn my lessons as I please myself.  
And, to cut off all strife, here sit we down :—  
Take you your instrument, play you the whites ;  
His lecture will be done ere you have tun'd.

*Hor.* You'll leave his lecture when I am in tune ?

[*To Bianca.*—*Hortensio retires.*

*Luc.* That will be never ;—tune your instrument.

*Bian.* Where left we last ?

*Luc.* Here, madam :—

*Hac ibat Simois ; hic est Sigeia tellus ;*

*Hic steterat Priami regia celsa senis.*

*Bian.* Construe them.

*Luc.* *Hac ibat*, as I told you before,—*Simois*, I  
am Lucentio,—*hic est*, son unto Vincentio of Pisa,  
—*Sigeia tellus*, disguised thus to get your love ;—  
*Hic steterat*, and that Lucentio that comes a woo-  
ing,—*Priami*, is my man Tranio,—*regia*, bearing  
my port,—*celsa senis*, that we might beguile the old  
pantaloon.<sup>2</sup>

*Hor.* Madam, my instrument's in tune.

[*Returning.*

*Bian.* Let's hear ;—

[*Hortensio plays.*

O fie ! the treble jars.

*Luc.* Spit in the hole, man, and tune again.

*Bian.* Now let me see if I can construe it : *Hac  
ibat Simois*, I know you not ; *hic est Sigeia tellus*,  
I trust you not,—*Hic steterat Priami*, take heed he  
hear us not ;—*regia*, presume not ;—*celsa senis*,  
despair not.

*Hor.* Madam, 'tis now in tune.

*Luc.*

All but the base.

*Hor.* The base is right ; 'tis the base knave that  
jars.

(1) No schoolboy, liable to be whipped.

(2) The old cully in Italian farces.

How fiery and forward our pedant is !  
Now, for my life, the knave doth court my love :  
*Pedascule*,<sup>1</sup> I'll watch you better yet.

*Bian.* In time I may believe, yet I mistrust.

*Luc.* Mistrust it not ; for, sure, *Æacides*  
Was Ajax,—call'd so from his grandfather.

*Bian.* I must believe my master ; else, I promise  
you,

I should be arguing still upon that doubt :  
But let it rest.—Now, *Licio*, to you :—  
Good masters, take it not unkindly, pray,  
That I have been thus pleasant with you both.

*Hor.* You may go walk, [*To Lucentio.*] and  
give me leave a while ;

My lessons make no music in three parts.

*Luc.* Are you so formal, sir ? well, I must wait,  
And watch withal ; for, but I be deceiv'd,  
Our fine musician groweth amorous. [*Aside.*

*Hor.* Madam, before you touch the instrument,  
To learn the order of my fingering,  
I must begin with rudiments of art ;  
To teach you gamut in a briefer sort,  
More pleasant, pithy, and effectual,  
Than hath been taught by any of my trade :  
And there it is in writing, fairly drawn.

*Bian.* Why, I am past my gamut long ago.

*Hor.* Yet read the gamut of *Hortensio*.

*Bian.* [*Reads.*] Gamut I am, the ground of all  
accord,

A re, to plead *Hortensio's* passion ;

B mi, *Bianca*, take him for thy lord,

C faut, that loves with all affection ;

D sol re, one cliff, two notes have I ;

E la mi, show pity, or I die.

Call you this—gamut ? tut ! I like it not :  
Old fashions please me best ; I am not so nice,<sup>2</sup>  
To change true rules for odd inventions.

(1) Pedant.

(2) Fantastical.

*Enter Servant.*

*Serv.* Mistress, your father prays you leave your books,

And help to dress your sister's chamber up;  
You know, to-morrow is the wedding-day.

*Bian.* Farewell, sweet masters, both; I must be gone. [*Exeunt Bianca and Servant.*]

*Luc.* 'Faith, mistress, then I have no cause to stay. [*Exit.*]

*Hor.* But I have cause to pry into this pedant;  
Methinks he looks as though he were in love:—

Yet if thy thoughts, Bianca, be so humble,

To cast thy wand'ring eyes on every stale,<sup>1</sup>

Seize thee, that list: If once I find thee ranging,

Hortensio will be quit with thee by changing.

[*Exit.*]

**SCENE II.**—*The same. Before Baptista's house.*

*Enter Baptista, Gremio, Tranio, Katharina, Bianca, Lucentio, and attendants.*

*Bap.* Signior Lucentio, [*To Tranio.*] this is the 'pointed day

That Katharine and Petruchio should be married,  
And yet we hear not of our son-in-law:

What will be said? what mockery will it be,

To want the bridegroom, when the priest attends

To speak the ceremonial rites of marriage?

What says Lucentio to this shame of ours?

*Kath.* No shame but mine: I must, forsooth, be forc'd

To give my hand, oppos'd against my heart,

Unto a mad-brain'd rudesby, full of spleen;<sup>2</sup>

Who woo'd in haste, and means to wed at leisure.

I told you, I, he was a frantic fool,

Hiding his bitter jests in blunt behaviour:

And, to be noted for a merry man,

He'll woo a thousand, 'point the day of marriage,

Make friends, invite, yes, and proclaim the banns;

(1) Bait, decoy.      (2) Caprice, inconstancy.

Yet never means to wed where he hath woo'd.  
Now must the world point at poor Katharine,  
And say,—*Lo, there is mad Petruchio's wife,*  
*If it would please him come and marry her.*

*Tra.* Patience, good Katharine, and Baptista  
too ;

Upon my life, Petruchio means but well,  
Whatever fortune stays him from his word :  
Though he be blunt, I know him passing wise ;  
Though he be merry, yet withal he's honest.

*Kath.* 'Would Katharine had never seen him  
though !

[*Exit, weeping, followed by Bianca, and others.*

*Bap.* Go, girl ; I cannot blame thee now to weep :  
For such an injury would vex a saint,  
Much more a shrew of thy impatient humour.

*Enter Biondello.*

*Bion.* Master, master ! news, old news, and such  
news as you never heard of !

*Bap.* Is it new and old too ? how may that be ?

*Bion.* Why, is it not news, to hear of Petruchio's  
coming ?

*Bap.* Is he come ?

*Bion.* Why, no, sir.

*Bap.* What then ?

*Bion.* He is coming.

*Bap.* When will he be here ?

*Bion.* When he stands where I am, and sees  
you there.

*Tra.* But, say, what :—To thine old news.

*Bion.* Why, Petruchio is coming, in a new hat  
and an old jerkin ; a pair of old breeches, thrice  
turned ; a pair of boots that have been candle-cases,  
one buckled, another laced ; an old rusty sword  
ta'en out of the town armory, with a broken hilt,  
and chapeless ; with two broken points : His horse  
hipped with an old mothy saddle, the stirrups of no  
kindred : besides, possessed with the glanders, and  
like to mose in the chine ; troubled with the lampass,

VOL. III.

K

infected with the fashions,<sup>1</sup> full of wind-galls, sped with spavins, raied with the yellows, past cure of the fives,<sup>2</sup> stark spoil'd with the staggers, begnawn with the bots; swayed in the back, and shoulder-shotten; ne'er-legged before, and with a half-checked bit, and a head-stall of sheep's leather; which, being restrained to keep him from stumbling, hath been often burst, and now repaired with knots: one girt six times pieced, and a woman's crupper of velure,<sup>3</sup> which hath two letters for her name, fairly set down in studs, and here and there pieced with packthread.

*Bap.* Who comes with him?

*Bion.* O, sir, his lackey, for all the world caparisoned like the horse; with a linen stock<sup>4</sup> on one leg, and a kersey boot-hose on the other, gartered with a red and blue list: an old hat, and *The humour of forty fancies* pricked in't for a feather: a monster, a very monster in apparel; and not like a Christian footboy, or a gentleman's lackey.

*Tra.* 'Tis some odd humour pricks him to this fashion;—

Yet oftentimes he goes but mean apparell'd.

*Bap.* I am glad he is come, howsoe'er he comes.

*Bion.* Why, sir, he comes not.

*Bap.* Didst thou not say, he comes?

*Bion.* Who? that Petruchio came?

*Bap.* Ay, that Petruchio came.

*Bion.* No, sir; I say, his horse comes with him on his back.

*Bap.* Why, that's all one.

*Bion.* Nay, By Saint Jamy, I hold you a penny,  
A horse and a man is more than one, and yet not many.

(1) Farcy.

(2) Vives; a distemper in horses, little differing from the strangles.

(3) Velvet.

(4) Stocking.

*Enter Petruchio and Grunio.*

*Pet.* Come, where be these gallants? who is at home?

*Bap.* You are welcome, sir.

*Pet.* And yet I come not well.

*Bap.* And yet you halt not.

*Tra.* Not so well apparell'd

As I wish you were.

*Pet.* Were it better I should rush in thus.

But where is Kate? where is my lovely bride?

How does my father?—Gentles, methinks you frown:

And wherefore gaze this goodly company;

As if they saw some wondrous monument,

Some comet, or unusual prodigy?

*Bap.* Why, sir, you know, this is your wedding day:

First were we sad, fearing you would not come;

Now sadder, that you come so unprovided.

Fie! doff this habit, shame to your estate,

An eye-sore to our solemn festival.

*Tra.* And tell us, what occasion of import

Hath all so long detain'd you from your wife,

And sent you hither so unlike yourself?

*Pet.* Tedious it were to tell, and harsh to hear:

Sufficeth, I am come to keep my word,

Though in some part enforced to digress;<sup>1</sup>

Which, at more leisure, I will so excuse

As you shall well be satisfied withal.

But, where is Kate? I stay too long from her;

The morning wears, 'tis time we were at church.

*Tra.* See not your bride in these unreverent robes;

Go to my chamber, put on clothes of mine.

*Pet.* Not I, believe me; thus I'll visit her.

*Bap.* But thus, I trust, you will not marry her.

*Pet.* Good sooth, even thus; therefore have done with words;

(1) *i. e.* To deviate from my promise.

To me she's married, not unto my clothes :  
Could I repair what she will wear in me,  
As I can change these poor accoutrements,  
'Twere well for Kate, and better for myself.  
But what a fool am I, to chat with you,  
When I should bid good-morrow to my bride,  
And seal the title with a lovely kiss ?

[*Exeunt Petruchio, Grumio, and Biondello.*]

*Tra.* He hath some meaning in his mad attire :  
We will persuade him, be it possible,  
To put on better ere he go to church.

*Bap.* I'll after him, and see the event of this.

[*Exit.*]

*Tra.* But, sir, to her love concerneth us to add  
Her father's liking : Which to bring to pass,  
As I before imparted to your worship,  
I am to get a man,—whate'er he be,  
It skills<sup>1</sup> not much : we'll fit him to our turn,—  
And he shall be Vincentio of Pisa ;  
And make assurance, here in Padua,  
Of greater sums than I have promised.  
So shall you quietly enjoy your hope,  
And marry sweet Bianca with consent.

*Luc.* Were it not that my fellow schoolmaster  
Doth watch Bianca's steps so narrowly,  
'Twere good, methinks, to steal our marriage ;  
Which once perform'd, let all the world say—no,  
I'll keep mine own, despite of all the world.

*Tra.* That by degrees we mean to look into,  
And watch our vantage in this business :  
We'll over-reach the greybeard, Grumio,  
The narrow-prying father, Minola ;  
The quaint<sup>2</sup> musician, amorous Licio ;  
All for my master's sake, Lucentio.—

*Re-enter Grumio.*

Signior Grumio ! came you from the church ?

*Gre.* As willingly as e'er I came from school.

(1) Matters.

(2) Strange.

*Tra.* And is the bride and bridegroom coming home?

*Gre.* A bridegroom, say you? 'tis a groom, indeed,

A grumbling groom, and that the girl shall find.

*Tra.* Curster than she? why, 'tis impossible.

*Gre.* Why, he's a devil, a devil, a very fiend.

*Tra.* Why, she's a devil, a devil, the devil's dam.

*Gre.* Tut! she's a lamb, a dove, a fool to him.

I'll tell you, sir Lucentio; When the priest  
Should ask—if Katharine should be his wife,  
*Ay, by gogs-wouns*, quoth he; and swore so loud,  
That all amaz'd, the priest let fall the book:

And, as he stoop'd again to take it up,  
The mad-brain'd bridegroom took him such a cuff,  
That down fell priest and book, and book and priest;  
*Now take them up*, quoth he, *if any list*.

*Tra.* What said the wench, when he arose again?

*Gre.* Trembled and shook; for why, he stamp'd,  
and swore,

As if the vicar meant to cozen him.

But after many ceremonies done,

He calls for wine:—*A health*, quoth he; as if

He had been aboard carousing to his mates

After a storm:—Quaff'd off the muscadel,<sup>1</sup>

And threw the sops all in the sexton's face;

Having no other reason,—

But that his beard grew thin and hungerly,

And seem'd to ask him sops as he was drinking.

This done, he took the bride about the neck;

And kiss'd her lips with such a clamorous smack,

That, at the parting, all the church did echo.

I, seeing this, came thence for very shame;

And after me, I know, the rout is coming:

Such a mad marriage never was before;

Hark, hark! I hear the minstrels play. [*Music.*]

(1) It was the custom for the company present to drink wine immediately after the marriage ceremony.



*Enter* Petruchio, Katharina, Bianca, Baptista,  
Hortensio, Grumio, *and train.*

*Pet.* Gentlemen and friends, I thank you for  
your pains:

I know, you think to dine with me to-day,  
And have prepar'd great store of wedding cheer;  
But so it is, my haste doth call me hence,  
And therefore here I mean to take my leave.

*Bap.* Is't possible, you will away to-night?

*Pet.* I must away to-day, before night come:—  
Make it no wonder; if you knew my business,  
You would entreat me rather go than stay.  
And, honest company, I thank you all,  
That have beheld me give away myself  
To this most patient, sweet, and virtuous wife:  
Dine with my father, drink a health to me;  
For I must hence, and farewell to you all.

*Tra.* Let us entreat you stay till after dinner.

*Pet.* It may not be.

*Gre.* Let me entreat you.

*Pet.* It cannot be.

*Kath.* Let me entreat you.

*Pet.* I am content.

*Kath.* Are you content to stay?

*Pet.* I am content you shall entreat me stay;  
But yet not stay, entreat me how you can.

*Kath.* Now, if you love me, stay.

*Pet.* Grumio, my horses.

*Gru.* Ay, sir, they be ready; the oats have  
eaten the horses.

*Kath.* Nay, then,  
Do what thou canst, I will not go to-day;  
No, nor to-morrow, nor till I please myself.  
The door is open, sir, there lies your way.  
You may be jogging, whiles your boots are green;  
For me, I'll not be gone, till I please myself:—  
'Tis like, you'll prove a jolly surly groom,  
That take it on you at the first so roundly.

*Pet.* O, Kate, content thee; pr'ythee, be not  
angry.

*Kath.* I will be angry ; What hast thou to do?—  
Father, be quiet ; he shall stay my leisure.

*Gre.* Ay, marry, sir : now it begins to work.

*Kath.* Gentlemen, forward to the bridal dinner :—  
I see a woman may be made a fool,  
If she had not a spirit to resist.

*Pet.* They shall go forward, Kate, at thy command :—

Obeys the bride, you that attend on her :  
Go to the feast, revel and domineer,  
Carouse full measure to her maidenhead,  
Be mad and merry,—or go hang yourselves ;  
But for my bonny Kate, she must with me.  
Nay, look not big, nor stamp, nor stare, nor fret ;  
I will be master of what is mine own :  
She is my goods, my chattels ; she is my house,  
My household-stuff, my field, my barn,  
My horse, my ox, my ass, my any thing ;  
And here she stands, touch her whoever dare ;  
I'll bring my action on the proudest he  
That stops my way in Padua.—Grumio,  
Draw forth thy weapon, we're beset with thieves ;  
Rescue thy mistress, if thou be a man :—  
Fear not, sweet wench, they shall not touch thee,  
Kate ;

I'll buckler thee against a million.

[*Exeunt Petruchio, Katharine, and Grumio.*]

*Bap.* Nay, let them go, a couple of quiet ones.

*Gre.* Went they not quickly, I should die with  
laughing.

*Tra.* Of all mad matches, never was the like !

*Luc.* Mistress, what's your opinion of your sister ?

*Bian.* That, being mad herself, she's madly  
mated.

*Gre.* I warrant him, Petruchio is Kated.

*Bap.* Neighbours and friends, though bride and  
bridegroom wants

For to supply the places at the table,  
You know, there wants no junkets<sup>1</sup> at the feast ;—

(1) Delicacies.

Lucentio, you shall supply the bridegroom's place;  
And let Bianca take her sister's room.

*Tra.* Shall sweet Bianca practise how to bride it?

*Bap.* She shall, Lucentio.—Come, gentlemen,  
let's go. [*Exeunt.*]

---

## ACT IV.

*SCENE I.*—*A hall in Petruchio's country house.*

*Enter Grumio.*

*Gru.* Fie, fie, on all tired jades! on all mad masters! and all foul ways! Was ever man so beaten? was ever man so rayed?<sup>1</sup> was ever man so weary? I am sent before to make a fire, and they are coming after to warm them. Now, were not I a little pot, and soon hot, my very lips might freeze to my teeth, my tongue to the roof of my mouth, my heart in my belly, ere I should come by a fire to thaw me:—But I, with blowing the fire, shall warm myself; for, considering the weather, a taller man than I will take cold.—Holla, hoa! Curtis!

*Enter Curtis.*

*Curt.* Who is that, calls so coldly?

*Gru.* A piece of ice: If thou doubt it, thou may'st slide from my shoulder to my heel, with no greater a run but my head and my neck. A fire, good Curtis.

*Curt.* Is my master and his wife coming, Grumio?

*Gru.* O, ay, Curtis, ay: and therefore fire, fire; cast on no water.

*Curt.* Is she so hot a shrew as she's reported?

*Gru.* She was, good Curtis, before this frost: but, thou know'st, winter tames man, woman, and beast; for it hath tamed my old master, and my new mistress, and myself, fellow Curtis.

(1) Bewrayed, dirty.

*Curt.* Away, you three-inch fool ! I am no beast.

*Gru.* Am I but three inches ? why, thy horn is a foot ; and so long am I, at the least. But wilt thou make a fire, or shall I complain on thee to our mistress, whose hand (she being now at hand) thou shalt soon feel, to thy cold comfort, for being slow in thy hot office.

*Curt.* I pr'ythee, good Grumio, tell me, How goes the world ?

*Gru.* A cold world, Curtis, in every office but thine ; and, therefore, fire : Do thy duty, and have thy duty ; for my master and mistress are almost frozen to death.

*Curt.* There's fire ready ; And therefore, good Grumio, the news ?

*Gru.* Why, *Jack boy ! ho boy !* and as much news as thou wilt.

*Curt.* Come, you are so full of conycatching :—

*Gru.* Why, therefore, fire ; for I have caught extreme cold. Where's the cook ? is supper ready, the house trimmed, rushes strewed, cobwebs swept ; the serving-men in their new fustian, their white stockings, and every officer his wedding-garment on ? Be the jacks fair within, the jills fair without, the carpets laid, and every thing in order ?

*Curt.* All ready ; And therefore, I pray thee, news ?

*Gru.* First, know, my horse is tired ; my master and mistress fallen out.

*Curt.* How ?

*Gru.* Out of their saddles into the dirt ; And thereby hangs a tale.

*Curt.* Let's ha't, good Grumio.

*Gru.* Lend thine ear.

*Curt.* Here.

*Gru.* There. [Striking him.

*Curt.* This is to feel a tale, not to hear a tale.

*Gru.* And therefore 'tis called, a sensible tale . and this cuff was but to knock at your ear, and be

speech listening. Now I begin : *Imprimis*, we came down a foul hill, my master riding behind my mistress :—

*Curt.* Both on one horse ?

*Gru.* What's that to thee ?

*Curt.* Why, a horse.

*Gru.* Tell thou the tale :—But hadst thou not crossed me, thou should'st have heard how her horse fell, and she under her horse ; thou should'st have heard, in how miry a place : how she was bemoiled ;<sup>1</sup> how he left her with the horse upon her ; how he beat me because her horse stumbled ; how she waded through the dirt to pluck him off me ; how he swore ; how she prayed—that never prayed before ; how I cried ; how the horses ran away ; how her bridle was burst ;<sup>2</sup> how I lost my crupper ;—with many things of worthy memory ; which now shall die in oblivion, and thou return unexperienced to thy grave.

*Curt.* By this reckoning, he is more shrew than she.

*Gru.* Ay ; and that, thou and the proudest of you all shall find, when he comes home. But what talk I of this ?—call forth Nathaniel, Joseph, Nicholas, Philip, Walter, Sugarsop, and the rest ; let their heads be sleekly combed, their blue coats brushed, and their garters of an indifferent<sup>3</sup> knit : let them curtsy with their left legs ; and not presume to touch a hair of my master's horse-tail, till they kiss their hands. Are they all ready ?

*Curt.* They are.

*Gru.* Call them forth.

*Curt.* Do you hear, ho ? you must meet my master, to countenance my mistress.

*Gru.* Why, she hath a face of her own.

*Curt.* Who knows not that ?

*Gru.* Thou, it seems ; that callest for company to countenance her.

(1) Bemired.

(2) Broken.

(3) Not different one from the other.

*Curt.* I call them forth to credit her.

*Gru.* Why, she comes to borrow nothing of them.

*Enter several Servants.*

*Nath.* Welcome home, Grumio.

*Phil.* How now, Grumio?

*Jos.* What, Grumio!

*Nich.* Fellow Grumio!

*Nath.* How now, old lad?

*Gru.* Welcome, you ;—how now, you ;—what, you ;—fellow, you ; and thus much for greeting. Now, my spruce companions, is all ready, and all things neat?

*Nath.* All things is ready : How near is our master?

*Gru.* E'en at hand, alighted by this ; and therefore be not,—Cock's passion, silence !—I hear my master.

*Enter Petruchio and Katharina.*

*Pet.* Where be these knaves ? What, no man at door,

To hold my stirrup, nor to take my horse ?

Where is Nathaniel, Gregory, Philip ?—

*All Serv.* Here, here, sir ; here, sir.

*Pet.* Here, sir ! here, sir ! here, sir ! here, sir !—You logger-headed and unpolish'd grooms !

What, no attendance ? no regard ? no duty ?—

Where is the foolish knave I sent before ?

*Gru.* Here, sir ; as foolish as I was before.

*Pet.* You peasant swain ! you whoreson malt-horse drudge !

Did I not bid thee meet me in the park,

And bring along these rascal knaves with thee ?

*Gru.* Nathaniel's coat, sir, was not fully made,  
And Gabriel's pumps were all unpink'd i'the heel ;  
There was no link<sup>1</sup> to colour Peter's hat,  
And Walter's dagger was not come from sheathing :

(1) A torch of pitch.

There were none fine, but Adam, Ralph, and Gregory ;

The rest were ragged, old, and beggarly ;  
Yet, as they are, here are they come to meet you.

*Pet.* Go, rascals, go, and fetch my supper in.—

[*Exeunt some of the Servants.*]

*Where is the life that late I led—* [Sings.

Where are those—Sit down, Kate, and welcome.  
Soud, soud, soud, soud !<sup>1</sup>

*Re-enter Servants, with supper.*

Why, when, I say?—Nay, good sweet Kate, be merry.

Off with my boots, you rogues, you villains ; When?

*It was the friar of orders grey,* [Sings.

*As he forth walked on his way :—*

Out, out, you rogue ! you pluck my foot awry :

Take that, and mend the plucking off the other.—

[*Strikes him.*]

Be merry, Kate :—Some water, here ; what, ho !—

Where's my spaniel Troilus?—Sirrah, get you hence,

And bid my cousin Ferdinand come hither :—

[*Exit Servant.*]

One, Kate, that you must kiss, and be acquainted with.—

Where are my slippers?—Shall I have some water?

[*A bason is presented to him.*]

Come, Kate, and wash, and welcome heartily :—

[*Servant lets the ewer fall.*]

You whoreson villain ! will you let it fall?

[*Strikes him.*]

*Kath.* Patience, I pray you ; 'twas a fault unwilling.

*Pet.* A whoreson, beetle-headed, flap-ear'd knave!

Come, Kate, sit down ; I know you have a stomach.

Will you give thanks, sweet Kate ; or else shall I?—

(1) A word coined by Shakspeare to express the noise made by a person heated and fatigued.

What is this? mutton?

1 *Serv.*

Ay.

*Pet.*

Who brought it?

1 *Serv.*

I.

*Pet.* 'Tis burnt; and so is all the meat:

What dogs are these?—Where is the rascal cook?

How durst you, villains, bring it from the dresser,

And serve it thus to me that love it not?

There, take it to you, trenchers, cups, and all:

[*Throws the meat, &c. about the stage.*]

You heedless joltheads, and unmanner'd slaves!

What, do you grumble? I'll be with you straight.

*Kath.* I pray you, husband, be not so disquiet;

The meat was well, if you were so contented.

*Pet.* I tell thee, Kate, 'twas burnt and dried away;

And I expressly am forbid to touch it,

For it engenders choler, planteth anger;

And better 'twere, that both of us did fast,—

Since, of ourselves, ourselves are choleric,—

Than feed it with such over-roasted flesh.

Be patient; to-morrow it shall be mended,

And, for this night, we'll fast for company:—

Come, I will bring thee to thy bridal chamber.

[*Exeunt Petruchio, Katharina, and Curtis.*]

*Nath.* [*Advancing.*] Peter, didst ever see the like?

*Peter.* He kills her in her own humour.

*Re-enter Curtis.*

*Gru.* Where is he?

*Curt.* In her chamber,

Making a sermon of continency to her:

And rails and swears, and rates; that she, poor soul,

Knows not which way to stand, to look, to speak;

And sits as one new-risen from a dream.

Away, away! for he is coming hither. [*Exeunt.*]

*Re-enter Petruchio.*

*Pet.* Thus have I politically begun my reign,



And 'tis my hope to end successfully :  
 My falcon now is sharp, and passing empty ;  
 And till she stoop, she must not be full-gorg'd,  
 For then she never looks upon her lure.<sup>1</sup>  
 Another way I have to man my haggard,<sup>2</sup>  
 To make her come, and know her keeper's call,  
 That is,—to watch her, as we watch these kites,  
 That bate,<sup>3</sup> and beat, and will not be obedient.  
 She eat no meat to-day, nor none shall eat ;  
 Last night she slept not, nor to-night she shall not ;  
 As with the meat, some undeserved fault  
 I'll find about the making of the bed ;  
 And here I'll fling the pillow, there the bolster,  
 This way the coverlet, another way the sheets :—  
 Ay, and amid this hurly, I intend,<sup>4</sup>  
 That all is done in reverent care of her ;  
 And, in conclusion, she shall watch all night :  
 And, if she chance to nod, I'll rail, and brawl,  
 And with the clamour keep her still awake.  
 This is the way to kill a wife with kindness ;  
 And thus I'll curb her mad and headstrong  
 humour :—

He that knows better how to tame a shrew,  
 Now let him speak ; 'tis charity to show. [*Exit.*]

**SCENE II.**—Padua. *Before Baptista's house.*

*Enter Tranio and Hortensio.*

*Tra.* Is't possible, friend Licio, that Bianca  
 Doth fancy any other but Lucentio ?  
 I tell you, sir, she bears me fair in hand.

*Hor.* Sir, to satisfy you in what I have said,  
 Stand by, and mark the manner of his teaching.  
 [*They stand aside.*]

*Enter Bianca and Lucentio.*

*Luc.* Now, mistress, profit you in what you read ?

(1) A thing stuffed to look like the game which  
 the hawk was to pursue.

(2) To tame my wild hawk.

(3) Flutter.

(4) Pretend.

*Bian.* What, master, read you? first resolve me that.

*Luc.* I read that I profess the art to love.

*Bian.* And may you prove, sir, master of your art!

*Luc.* While you, sweet dear, prove mistress of my heart. *[They retire.]*

*Hor.* Quick proceeders, marry! Now, tell me, I pray,

You that durst swear that your mistress Bianca  
Lov'd none in the world so well as Lucentio.

*Tra.* O despicable love! unconstant woman  
kind!—

I tell thee, Licio, this is wonderful.

*Hor.* Mistake no more: I am not Licio,  
Nor a musician, as I seem to be;  
But one that scorn to live in this disguise,  
For such a one as leaves a gentleman,  
And makes a god of such a cullion:<sup>1</sup>  
Know, sir, that I am call'd—Hortensio.

*Tra.* Signior Hortensio, I have often heard  
Of your entire affection to Bianca;  
And since mine eyes are witness of her lightness,  
I will with you,—if you be so contented,—  
Forswear Bianca and her love for ever.

*Hor.* See, how they kiss and court!—Signior  
Lucentio,

Here is my hand, and here I firmly vow—  
Never to woo her more; but do forswear her,  
As one unworthy all the former favours  
That I have fondly flatter'd her withal.

*Tra.* And here I take the like unfeigned oath,—  
Ne'er to marry with her though she would entreat:  
Fie on her! see, how beastly she doth court him.

*Hor.* 'Would, all the world, but he, had quite  
forsworn!

For me,—that I may surely keep mine oath,  
I will be married to a wealthy widow,

(1) Despicable fellow.

Ere three days pass ; which hath as long lov'd me,  
As I have lov'd this proud disdainful haggard :  
And so farewell, signior Lucentio.—  
Kindness in women, not their beauteous looks,  
Shall win my love :—and so I take my leave,  
In resolution as I swore before.

[*Exit Hortensio.—Luc. and Bian. advance.*]

*Tra.* Mistress Bianca, bless you with such grace  
As 'longeth to a lover's blessed case !  
Nay, I have ta'en you napping, gentle love ;  
And have forsworn you, with Hortensio.

*Bian.* Tranio, you jest ; But have you both forsworn me ?

*Tra.* Mistress, we have,

*Luc.* Then we are rid of Licio.

*Tra.* I'faith, he'll have a lusty widow now,  
That shall be woo'd and wedded in a day.

*Bian.* God give him joy !

*Tra.* Ay, and he'll tame her.

*Bian.* He says so, Tranio.

*Tra.* 'Faith, he is gone unto the taming-school.

*Bian.* The taming-school ! what, is there such a place ?

*Tra.* Ay, mistress, and Petruchio is the master ;  
That teacheth tricks eleven and twenty long,—  
To tame a shrew, and charm her chattering tongue.

*Enter Biondello, running.*

*Bion.* O master, master, I have watch'd so long  
That I'm dog-weary ; but at last I spied  
An ancient angel<sup>1</sup> coming down the hill,  
Will serve the turn.

*Tra.* What is he, Biondello ?

*Bion.* Master, a mercatantè, or a pedant,<sup>2</sup>  
I know not what ; but formal in apparel,  
In gait and countenance surely like a father.

*Luc.* And what of him, Tranio ?

*Tra.* If he be credulous, and trust my tale,

(1) Messenger. (2) A merchant or a schoolmaster.

I'll make him glad to seem Vincentio;  
And give assurance to Baptista Minola,  
As if he were the right Vincentio.  
Take in your love, and then let me alone.  
[*Exeunt* Lucentio and Bianca.

*Enter* a Pedant.

*Ped.* God save you, sir!

*Tra.* And you, sir! you are welcome.  
Travel you far on, or are you at the furthest?

*Ped.* Sir, at the furthest for a week or two.  
But then up further, and as far as I come;  
And so to Tripoly, if God lend me life.

*Tra.* What countryman, I pray?

*Ped.* Of Mantua.

*Tra.* Of Mantua, sir?—marry, God forbid!  
And come to Padua, careless of your life?

*Ped.* My life, sir! how, I pray? for that goes hard.

*Tra.* 'Tis death for any one in Mantua  
To come to Padua; Know you not the cause?  
Your ships are staid at Venice; and the duke  
(For private quarrel 'twixt your duke and him,)  
Hath publish'd and proclaim'd it openly:  
'Tis marvel; but that you're but newly come,  
You might have heard it else proclaim'd about.

*Ped.* Alas, sir, it is worse for me than so;  
For I have bills for money by exchange  
From Florence, and must here deliver them.

*Tra.* Well, sir, to do you courtesy,  
This will I do, and this will I advise you;—  
First, tell me, have you ever been at Pisa?

*Ped.* Ay, sir, in Pisa have I often been;  
Pisa, renowned for grave citizens.

*Tra.* Among them, know you one Vincentio?

*Ped.* I know him not, but I have heard of him;  
A merchant of incomparable wealth.

*Tra.* He is my father, sir; and, sooth to say,  
In countenance somewhat doth resemble you.

*Bion.* As much as an apple doth an oyster, and  
all one.

[*Aside.*

*Tra.* To save your life in this extremity,  
This favour will I do you for his sake;  
And think it not the worst of all your fortunes,  
That you are like to sir Vincentio.  
His name and credit shall you undertake,  
And in my house you shall be friendly lodg'd;—  
Look, that you take upon you as you should;  
You understand me, sir;—so shall you stay  
Till you have done your business in the city:  
If this be courtesy, sir, accept of it.

*Ped.* O, sir, I do; and will repute you ever  
The patron of my life and liberty.

*Tra.* Then go with me, to make the matter good.  
This, by the way, I let you understand;—  
My father is here look'd for every day,  
To pass assurance of a dower in marriage  
'Twixt me and one Baptista's daughter here:  
In all these circumstances I'll instruct you:  
Go with me, sir, to clothe you as becomes you.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*A room in Petruchio's house. Enter Katharina and Grumio.*

*Gru.* No, no; forsooth; I dare not, for my life.

*Kath.* The more my wrong, the more his spite  
appears:

What, did he marry me to famish me?  
Beggars, that come unto my father's door,  
Upon entreaty, have a present alms;  
If not, elsewhere they meet with charity:  
But I,—who never knew how to entreat,—  
Am starv'd for meat, giddy for lack of sleep;  
With oaths kept waking, and with brawling fed:  
And that which spites me more than all these wants,  
He does it under name of perfect love;  
As who should say,—If I should sleep, or eat,  
'Twere deadly sickness, or else present death.—  
I pr'ythee go, and get me some repast;  
I care not what, so it be wholesome food.

*Gru.* What say you to a neat's foot?

*Kath.* 'Tis passing good; I pr'ythee let me have it.

*Gru.* I fear it is too choleric a meat :—  
How say you to a fat tripe, finely broil'd?

*Kath.* I like it well; good Grumio, fetch it me.

*Gru.* I cannot tell; I fear 'tis choleric.

What say you to a piece of beef, and mustard?

*Kath.* A dish that I do love to feed upon.

*Gru.* Ay, but the mustard is too hot a little.

*Kath.* Why, then the beef, and let the mustard rest.

*Gru.* Nay, then I will not; you shall have the mustard,

Or else you get no beef of Grumio.

*Kath.* Then both, or one, or any thing thou wilt.

*Gru.* Why, then the mustard without the beef.

*Kath.* Go, get thee gone, thou false deluding slave, [Beats him.

That feed'st me with the very name of meat:

Sorrow on thee, and all the pack of you,

That triumph thus upon my misery!

Go, get thee gone, I say.

*Enter Petruchio with a dish of meat; and Hortensio.*

*Pet.* How fares my Kate? What, sweeting, all amort?<sup>1</sup>

*Hor.* Mistress, what cheer?

*Kath.* 'Faith, as cold as can be.

*Pet.* Pluck up thy spirits, look cheerfully upon me.

Here, love; thou see'st how diligent I am,  
To dress thy meat myself, and bring it thee:

[Sets the dish on a table.

I am sure, sweet Kate, this kindness merits thanks.

What, not a word? Nay, then, thou lov'st it not;

And all my pains is sorted to no proof:--

Here, take away this dish.

‡(1) Dispirited; a gallicism.

*Kath.* 'Pray you, let it stand.

*Pet.* The poorest service is repaid with thanks ;  
And so shall mine, before you touch the meat.

*Kath.* I thank you, sir.

*Hor.* Signior Petruchio, fie ! you are to blame !  
Come, mistress Kate, I'll bear you company.

*Pet.* Eat it up all, Hortensio, if thou lov'st me.—  
[*Aside.*

Much good do it unto thy gentle heart !  
Kate, eat apace :—And now, my honey love,  
Will we return unto thy father's house ;  
And revel it as bravely as the best,  
With silken coats, and caps, and golden rings,  
With ruffs, and cuffs, and farthingales, and things ;  
With scarfs, and fans, and double change of bra-  
very,<sup>1</sup>

With amber bracelets, beads, and all this knavery.  
What, hast thou din'd ? The tailor stays thy leisure,  
To deck thy body with his ruffling<sup>2</sup> treasure.

*Enter Tailor.*

Come, tailor, let us see these ornaments.

*Enter Haberdasher.*

Lay forth the gown.—What news with you, sir ?

*Hab.* Here is the cap your worship did bespeak.

*Pet.* Why, this was moulded on a porringer ;  
A velvet dish ;—fie, fie ! 'tis lewd and filthy :  
Why, 'tis a cockle, or a walnut shell,  
A knack, a toy, a trick, a baby's cap ;  
Away with it, come, let me have a bigger.

*Kath.* I'll have no bigger ; this doth fit the time,  
And gentlewomen wear such caps as these.

*Pet.* When you are gentle, you shall have one  
too,  
And not till then.

*Hor.* That will not be in haste. [*Aside.*

*Kath.* Why, sir, I trust I may have leave to  
speak ;

(1) Finery.

(2) Rustling.

And speak I will ; I am no child, no babe :  
Your betters have endur'd me say my mind ;  
And, if you cannot, best you stop your ears.  
My tongue will tell the anger of my heart ;  
Or else my heart, concealing it, will break :  
And, rather than it shall, I will be free  
Even to the uttermost, as I please, in words.

*Pet.* Why, thou say'st true ; it is a paltry cap,  
A custard-coffin,<sup>1</sup> a bauble, a silken pie :  
I love thee well, in that thou lik'st it not.

*Kath.* Love me, or love me not, I like the cap ;  
And it I will have, or I will have none.

*Pet.* Thy gown ? why, ay :—Come, tailor, let us  
see't.

O mercy, God ! what masking stuff is here ?  
What's this ? a sleeve ? 'tis like a demi-cannon :  
What ! up and down, carv'd like an apple-tart ?  
Here's snip, and nip, and cut, and slish, and slash,  
Like to a censer<sup>2</sup> in a barber's shop :—  
Why, what, o'devil's name, tailor, call'st thou this ?

*Hor.* I see, she's like to have neither cap nor  
gown. [*Aside.*]

*Tai.* You bid me make it orderly and well,  
According to the fashion, and the time.

*Pet.* Marry, and did ; but if you be remembered,  
I did not bid you mar it to the time.  
Go, hop me over every kennel home,  
For you shall hop without my custom, sir :  
I'll none of it ; hence, make your best of it.

*Kath.* I never saw a better-fashion'd gown,  
More quaint,<sup>3</sup> more pleasing, nor more commend-  
able :

Belike you mean to make a puppet of me.

*Pet.* Why, true ; he means to make a puppet of  
thee.

*Tai.* She says, your worship means to make a  
puppet of her.

(1) A coffin was the culinary term for raised crust.

(2) These censers resembled our brasiers in shape.

(3) Curious



*Pet.* O monstrous arrogance! Thou liest, thou thread,  
Thou thimble,  
Thou yard, three-quarters, half-yard, quarter, nail,  
Thou flea, thou nit, thou winter cricket thou :—  
Brav'd in mine own house with a skein of thread!  
Away, thou rag, thou quantity, thou remnant;  
Or I shall so be-metel<sup>1</sup> thee with thy yard,  
As thou shalt think on prating whilst thou liv'st!  
I tell thee, I, that thou hast marr'd her gown.

*Tai.* Your worship is deceiv'd; the gown is made  
Just as my master had direction :

*Grumio* gave order how it should be done.

*Gru.* I gave him no order, I gave him the stuff.

*Tai.* But how did you desire it should be made?

*Gru.* Marry, sir, with needle and thread.

*Tai.* But did you not request to have it cut?

*Gru.* Thou hast faced many things.<sup>2</sup>

*Tai.* I have.

*Gru.* Face not me : thou hast brav'd many men ;  
brave not me ; I will neither be faced nor braved.  
I say unto thee,—I bid thy master cut out the  
gown ; but I did not bid him cut it to pieces : *ergo*,  
thou liest.

*Tai.* Why, here is the note of the fashion to  
testify.

*Pet.* Read it.

*Gru.* The note lies in his throat, if he say I said so.

*Tai.* *Imprimis, a loose-bodied gown :*

*Gru.* Master, if ever I said loose-bodied gown,  
sew me in the skirts of it, and beat me to death  
with a bottom of brown thread : I said, a gown.

*Pet.* Proceed.

*Tai.* *With a small compassed cape ;<sup>3</sup>*

*Gru.* I confess the cape.

*Tai.* *With a trunk sleeve ;—*

(1) Be-measure.

(2) Turned up many garments with facings.

(3) A round cape.

*Gru.* I confess two sleeves.

*Tai.* *The sleeves curiously cut.*

*Pet.* Ay, there's the villany.

*Gru.* Error i'the bill, sir; error i'the bill. I commanded the sleeves should be cut out, and sewed up again; and that I'll prove upon thee, though thy little finger be arm'd in a thimble.

*Tai.* This is true, that I say; an I had thee in place where, thou should'st know it.

*Gru.* I am for thee straight: take thou the bill, give me thy mete-yard,<sup>1</sup> and spare not me.

*Hor.* God-a-mercy, Grumio! then he shall have no odd's.

*Pet.* Well, sir, in brief, the gown is not for me.

*Gru.* You are i'the right, sir; 'tis for my mistress.

*Pet.* Go, take it up unto thy master's use.

*Gru.* Villain, not for thy life: Take up my mistress's gown for thy master's use!

*Pet.* Why, sir, what's your conceit in that?

*Gru.* O, sir, the conceit is deeper than you think for:

Take up my mistress' gown to his master's use!

O, fie, fie, fie!

*Pet.* Hortensio, say thou wilt see the tailor paid:— *[Aside.*

Go take it hence; be gone, and say no more.

*Hor.* Tailor, I'll pay thee for thy gown to-morrow.

Take no unkindness of his hasty words:

Away, I say; commend me to thy master.

*[Exit Tailor.*

*Pet.* Well, come, my Kate; we will unto your father's,

Even in these honest mean habiliments;  
Our purses shall be proud, our garments poor:  
For 'tis the mind that makes the body rich;  
And as the sun breaks through the darkest clouds,  
So honour peereth<sup>2</sup> in the meanest habit.

(1) Measuring-yard. (2) Appeareth.

What, is the jay more precious than the lark,  
Because his feathers are more beautiful?  
Or is the adder better than the eel,  
Because his painted skin contents the eye?  
O, no, good Kate; neither art thou the worse  
For this poor furniture, and mean array.  
If thou account'st it shame, lay it on me:  
And therefore, frolic; we will hence forthwith,  
To feast and sport us at thy father's house.—  
Go, call my men, and let us straight to him;  
And bring our horses unto Long-lane end,  
There will we mount, and thither walk on foot.—  
Let's see; I think, 'tis now some seven o'clock,  
And well we may come there by dinner-time.

*Kath.* I dare assure you, sir, 'tis almost two;  
And 'twill be supper-time, ere you come there.

*Pet.* It shall be seven, ere I go to horse:  
Look, what I speak, or do, or think to do,  
You are still crossing it.—Sirs, let't alone:  
I will not go to-day; and ere I do,  
It shall be what o'clock I say it is.

*Hor.* Why so! this gallant will command the sun.  
[*Exeunt.*]

**SCENE IV.**—Padua. *Before Baptista's house.*

*Enter Tranio, and the Pedant dressed like Vincentio.*

*Tra.* Sir, this is the house; Please it you, that I  
call?

*Ped.* Ay, what else? and, but I be deceived,  
Signior Baptista may remember me,  
Near twenty years ago, in Genoa, where  
We were lodgers at the Pegasus.

*Tra.* 'Tis well;  
And hold your own, in any case, with such  
Austerity as 'longeth to a father.

*Enter Biondello.*

*Ped.* I warrant you: But, sir, here comes your  
boy;  
'Twere good he were school'd.

*Tra.* Fear you not him. Sirrah, Biondello,  
Now do your duty thoroughly, I advise you;  
Imagine 'twere the right Vincentio.

*Bion.* Tut! fear not me.

*Tra.* But hast thou done thy errand to Baptista?

*Bion.* I told him, that your father was at Venice;  
And that you look'd for him this day in Padua.

*Tra.* Thou'rt a tall<sup>1</sup> fellow; hold thee that to  
drink.

Here comes Baptista:—set your countenance, sir.—

*Enter Baptista and Lucentio.*

Signior Baptista, you are haply met:—

Sir, [*To the Pedant.*]

This is the gentleman I told you of;  
I pray you, stand good father to me now,  
Give me Bianca for my patrimony.

*Ped.* Soft, son!—

Sir, by your leave: having come to Padua  
To gather in some debts, my son Lucentio  
Made me acquainted with a weighty cause  
Of love between your daughter and himself:  
And,—for the good report I hear of you;  
And for the love he beareth to your daughter,  
And she to him,—to stay him not too long,  
I am content, in a good father's care,  
To have him match'd; and,—if you please to like  
No worse than I, sir,—upon some agreement,  
Me shall you find most ready and most willing  
With one consent to have her so bestow'd;  
For curious<sup>2</sup> I cannot be with you,  
Signior Baptista, of whom I hear so well.

*Bap.* Sir, pardon me in what I have to say;—  
Your plainness, and your shortness, please me well.  
Right true it is, your son Lucentio here  
Doth love my daughter, and she loveth him,  
Or both dissemble deeply their affections:  
And, therefore, if you say no more than this,

(1) Brave.

(2) Scrupulous.

That like a father you will deal with him,  
 And pass<sup>1</sup> my daughter a sufficient dower,  
 The match is fully made, and all is done :  
 \* Your son shall have my daughter with consent.  
 † *T'ra.* I thank you, sir. Where then do you know

best,  
 We be affied;<sup>2</sup> and such assurance ta'en,  
 As shall with either part's agreement stand ?

*Bap.* Not in my house, Lucentio ; for, you know,  
 Pitchers have ears, and I have many servants :  
 Besides, old Gremio is heark'ning still ;  
 And, happily,<sup>3</sup> we might be interrupted.

*T'ra.* Then at my lodging, an it like you, sir :  
 There doth my father lie ; and there, this night,  
 We'll pass the business privately and well :  
 Send for your daughter by your servant here,  
 My boy shall fetch the scrivener presently.  
 The worst is this,—that, at so slender warning,  
 You're like to have a thin and slender pittance.

*Bap.* It likes me well :—Cambio, hie you home,  
 And bid Bianca make her ready straight ;  
 And, if you will, tell what hath happened :—  
 Lucentio's father is arriv'd in Padua,  
 And how she's like to be Lucentio's wife.

*Luc.* I pray the gods she may, with all my heart !

*T'ra.* Dally not with the gods, but get thee gone.  
 Signior Baptista, shall I lead the way ?  
 Welcome ! one mess is like to be your cheer :  
 Come, sir ; we'll better it in Pisa.

*Bap.* I follow you.

[*Exeunt* Tranio, Pedant, and Baptista.

*Bion.* Cambio.—

*Luc.* What say'st thou, Biondello ?

*Bion.* You saw my master wink and laugh upon  
 you ?

*Luc.* Biondello, what of that ?

*Bion.* 'Faith, nothing ; but he has left me here

(1) Assure or convey.

(2) Betrothed.

(3) Accidentally.

behind, to expound the meaning or moral<sup>l</sup> of his signs and tokens.

*Luc.* I pray thee, moralize them.

*Bion.* Then thus. Baptista is safe, talking with the deceiving father of a deceitful son.

*Luc.* And what of him?

*Bion.* His daughter is to be brought by you to the supper.

*Luc.* And then?—

*Bion.* The old priest at Saint Luke's church is at your command at all hours.

*Luc.* And what of all this?

*Bion.* I cannot tell; except they are busied about a counterfeit assurance: Take you assurance of her, *cum privilegio ad imprimendum solum*: to the church;—take the priest, clerk, and some sufficient honest witnesses:

If this be not that you look for, I have no more to say,

But, bid Bianca farewell for ever and a day.

[*Going.*]

*Luc.* Hear'st thou, Biondello?

*Bion.* I cannot tarry: I knew a wench married in an afternoon as she went to the garden for parsley to stuff a rabbit; and so may you, sir, and so adieu, sir. My master hath appointed me to go to Saint Luke's, to bid the priest be ready to come against you come with your appendix. [*Exit.*]

*Luc.* I may, and will, if she be so contented: She will be pleas'd, then wherefore should I doubt? Hap what hap may, I'll roundly go about her; It shall go hard, if Cambio go without her. [*Exit.*]

SCENE V.—*A public road. Enter Petruchio, Katharina, and Hortensio.*

*Pet.* Come on, o' God's name; once more toward our father's.

Good Lord, how bright and goodly shines the moon.

(1) Secret purpose.

*Kath.* The moon ! the sun ; it is not moonlight now.

*Pet.* I say, it is the moon that shines so bright.

*Kath.* I know, it is the sun that shines so bright.

*Pet.* Now, by my mother's son, and that's myself,

It shall be moon, or star, or what I list,

Or ere I journey to your father's house :—

Go on, and fetch our horses back again.—

Evermore cross'd, and cross'd ; nothing but cross'd!

*Hor.* Say as he says, or we shall never go.

*Kath.* Forward, I pray, since we have come so far,

And be it moon, or sun, or what you please :

And if you please to call it a rush candle,

Henceforth I vow it shall be so for me.

*Pet.* I say, it is the moon.

*Kath.*

I know it is.

*Pet.* Nay, then you lie ; it is the blessed sun.

*Kath.* Then, God be bless'd, it is the blessed sun :—

But sun it is not, when you say it is not ;

And the moon changes, even as your mind.

What you will have it nam'd, even that it is ;

And so it shall be so, for Katharine.

*Hor.* Petruchio, go thy ways ; the field is won.

*Pet.* Well, forward, forward : thus the bowl should run,

And not unluckily against the bias.—

But soft ; what company is coming here ?

*Enter Vincentio, in a travelling dress.*

Good morrow, gentle mistress : Where away ?—

[To Vincentio.]

Tell me, sweet Kate, and tell me truly too,

Hast thou beheld a fresher gentlewoman ?

Such war of white and red within her cheeks !

What stars do spangle heaven with such beauty,

As those two eyes become that heavenly face ?—

Fair lovely maid, once more good day to thee.—

Sweet Kate embrace her for her beauty's sake.

*Hor.* 'A will make the man mad, to make a woman of him.

*Kath.* Young budding virgin, fair, and fresh, and sweet,

Whither away ; or where is thy abode ?

Happy the parents of so fair a child ;

Happier the man, whom favourable stars

Allot thee for his lovely bed-fellow !

*Pet.* Why, how now, Kate ! I hope thou art not mad :

This is a man, old, wrinkled, faded, wither'd ;

And not a maiden, as thou say'st he is.

*Kath.* Pardon, old father, my mistaking eyes,

That have been so bedazzled with the sun,

That every thing I look on seemeth green :

Now I perceive, thou art a reverend father ;

Pardon, I pray thee, for my mad mistaking.

*Pet.* Do, good old grandsire ; and, withal, make known

Which way thou travellest : if along with us,

We shall be joyful of thy company.

*Vin.* Fair sir,—and you my merry mistress,

That with your strange encounter much amaz'd me ;

My name is call'd—Vincenzio ; my dwelling—Pisa ;

And bound I am to Padua ; there to visit

A son of mine, which long I have not seen.

*Pet.* What is his name ?

*Vin.*

Lucentio, gentle sir.

*Pet.* Happily met ; the happier for thy son.

And now by law, as well as reverend age,

I may entitle thee—my loving father ;

The sister to my wife, this gentlewoman,

Thy son by this hath married : Wonder not,

Nor be not griev'd ; she is of good esteem,

Her dowry wealthy, and of worthy birth ;

Beside, so qualified as may beseem

The spouse of any noble gentleman.

Let me embrace with old Vincenzio :

And wander we to see thy honest son,



Who will of thy arrival be full joyous.

*Vin.* But is this true? or is it else your pleasure,  
Like pleasant travellers, to break a jest  
Upon the company you overtake?

*Hor.* I do assure thee, father, so it is.

*Pet.* Come, go along, and see the truth hereof;  
For our first merriment hath made thee jealous.

[*Exeunt Petruchio, Katharina, and Vincentio.*]

*Hor.* Well, Petruchio, this hath put me in heart.  
Have to my widow; and if she be forward,  
Then hast thou taught Hortensio to be untoward.

[*Exit.*]

---

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—Padua. Before Lucentio's house.

*Enter on one side Biondello, Lucentio, and Bianca; Gremio walking on the other side.*

*Bion.* Softly and swiftly, sir; for the priest is ready.

*Luc.* I fly, Biondello: but they may chance to need thee at home, therefore leave us.

*Bion.* Nay, faith, I'll see the church o' your back; and then come back to my master as soon as I can. [*Exeunt Luc. Bian. and Bion.*]

*Gre.* I marvel Cambio comes not all this while.

*Enter Petruchio, Katharina, Vincentio, and attendants.*

*Pet.* Sir, here's the door, this is Lucentio's house,  
My father's bears more toward the market-place;  
Thither must I, and here I leave you, sir.

*Vin.* You shall not choose but drink before you go;

I think, I shall command your welcome here,  
And, by all likelihood, some cheer is toward.

[*Knocks.*]

*Gre.* They're busy within, you were best knock louder.

*Enter Pedant above, at a window.*

*Ped.* What's he, that knocks as he would beat down the gate?

*Vin.* Is signior Lucentio within, sir?

*Ped.* He's within, sir, but not to be spoken withal.

*Vin.* What if a man bring him a hundred pound or two, to make merry withal?

*Ped.* Keep your hundred pounds to yourself; he shall need none, so long as I live.

*Pet.* Nay, I told you, your son was beloved in Padua.—Do you hear, sir?—to leave frivolous circumstances,—I pray you, tell signior Lucentio, that his father is come from Pisa, and is here at the door to speak with him.

*Ped.* Thou liest; his father is come from Pisa, and here looking cut at the window.

*Vin.* Art thou his father?

*Ped.* Ay, sir; so his mother says, if I may believe her.

*Pet.* Why, how now, gentleman! [*To Vincen.*] why, this is flat knavery, to take upon you another man's name.

*Ped.* Lay hands on the villain; I believe 'a means to cozen somebody in this city under my countenance.

*Re-enter Biondello.*

*Bion.* I have seen them in the church together; God send 'em good shipping!—But who is here? mine old master, Vincentio? now we are undone, and brought to nothing.

*Vin.* Come hither, crack-bemp.

[*Seeing Biondello.*

*Bion.* I hope, I may choose, sir.

*Vin.* Come hither, you rogue; What, have you forgot me?

*Bion.* Forgot you? no, sir: I could not forget you, for I never saw you before in all my life.

*Vin.* What, you notorious villain, didst thou never see thy master's father, Vincentio?

*Bion.* What, my old, worshipful old master? yes, marry, sir; see where he looks out of the window.

*Vin.* Is't so, indeed? [*Beats Biondello.*]

*Bion.* Help, help, help! here's a madman will murder me. [*Exit.*]

*Ped.* Help, son! help, signior Baptista!

[*Exit from the window.*]

*Pet.* Pr'ythee, Kate, let's stand aside, and see the end of this controversy. [*They retire.*]

*Re-enter Pedant below; Baptista, Tranio, and servants.*

*Tra.* Sir, what are you, that offer to beat my servant?

*Vin.* What am I, sir? nay, what are you, sir?—O immortal gods! O fine villain! A silken doublet! a velvet hose! a scarlet cloak! and a copatain hat! —O, I am undone! I am undone! while I play the good husband at home, my son and my servant spend all at the university.

*Tra.* How now! what's the matter?

*Bap.* What, is the man lunatic?

*Tra.* Sir, you seem a sober ancient gentleman by your habit, but your words show you a madman: Why, sir, what concerns it you, if I wear pearl and gold? I thank my good father, I am able to maintain it.

*Vin.* Thy father? O, villain! he is a sail-maker in Bergamo.

*Bap.* You mistake, sir; you mistake, sir: Pray, what do you think is his name?

*Vin.* His name? as if I knew not his name! I have brought him up ever since he was three years old, and his name is—Tranio.

*Ped.* Away, away, mad ass! his name is Lucco-

(1) A hat with a conical crown.

tio!—and he is mine only son, and heir to the lands of me, signior Vincentio.

*Vin.* Lucentio! O, he hath murdered his master!—Lay hold on him, I charge you, in the duke's name:—O, my son, my son!—tell me, thou villain, where is my son Lucentio?

*Tra.* Call forth an officer: [*Enter one with an officer.*] carry this mad knave to the gaol:—Father Baptista, I charge you see, that he be forth-coming.

*Vin.* Carry me to the gaol!

*Gre.* Stay, officer; he shall not go to prison.

*Bap.* Talk not, signior Gremio; I say, he shall go to prison.

*Gre.* Take heed, signior Baptista, lest you be coney-catched<sup>1</sup> in this business; I dare swear, this is the right Vincentio.

*Ped.* Swear, if thou darest.

*Gre.* Nay, I dare not swear it.

*Tra.* Then thou wert best say, that I am not Lucentio.

*Gre.* Yes, I know thee to be signior Lucentio.

*Bap.* Away with the dotard; to the gaol with him.

*Vin.* Thus strangers may be haled and abus'd:—  
O monstrous villain!

*Re-enter Biondello, with Lucentio, and Bianca.*

*Bion.* O, we are spoiled, and—Yonder he is deny him, forswear him, or else we are all undone.

*Luc.* Pardon sweet father. [*Kneeling.*]

*Vin.* Lives my sweetest son?

[*Biondello, Tranio, and Pedant run out.*]

*Bian.* Pardon, dear father. [*Kneeling.*]

*Bap.* How hast thou offended?—

Where is Lucentio?

*Luc.* Here's Lucentio,

Right son unto the right Vincentio;

That have by marriage made thy daughter mine,

(1) Cheated.

While counterfeit supposes blear'd thine eyne.<sup>1</sup>

*Gre.* Here's packing,<sup>2</sup> with a witness, to deceive us all!

*Vin.* Where is that damned villain, Tranio, That fac'd and brav'd me in this matter so?

*Bap.* Why, tell me, is not this my Cambio?

*Bian.* Cambio is chang'd into Lucentio.

*Luc.* Love wrought these miracles. Bianca's love Made me exchange my state with Tranio, While he did bear my countenance in the town; And happily I have arriv'd at last Unto the wished haven of my bliss:— What Tranio did, myself enforc'd him to; Then pardon him, sweet father, for my sake.

*Vin.* I'll slit the villain's nose, that would have sent me to the gaol.

*Bap.* But do you hear, sir? [*To Lucentio.*] Have you married my daughter without asking my good-will?

*Vin.* Fear not, Baptista; we will content you, go to: But I will in, to be revenged for this villany.

[*Exit.*

*Bap.* And I, to sound the depth of this knavery.

[*Exit.*

*Luc.* Look not pale, Bianca; thy father will not frown.

[*Exit Luc. and Bian.*

*Gre.* My cake is dough:<sup>3</sup> But I'll in among the rest;

Out of hope of all,—but my share of the feast.

[*Exit.*

*Petruchio and Katharina advance.*

*Kath.* Husband, let's follow, to see the end of this ado.

*Pet.* First kiss me, Kate, and we will.

(1) Deceived thy eyes.

(2) Tricking, underhand contrivances.

(3) A proverbial expression, repeated after a disappointment.

*Kath.* What, in the midst of the street?

*Pet.* What, art thou ashamed of me?

*Kath.* No, sir; God forbid:—but ashamed to kiss.

*Pet.* Why, then let's home again:—Come, sirrah, let's away.

*Kath.* Nay, I will give thee a kiss: now pray thee, love, stay.

*Pet.* Is not this well?—Come, my sweet Kate; Better once than never, for never too late. [*Exe.*]

SCENE II.—*A room in Lucentio's house. A banquet set out. Enter Baptista, Vincentio, Gremio, the Pedant, Lucentio, Bianca, Petruchio, Katharina, Hortensio, and Widow. Tranio, Biondello, Grumio, and others, attending.*

*Luc.* At last, though long, our jarring notes agree:

And time it is, when raging war is done,  
To smile at 'scapes and perils overblown.—  
My fair Bianca, bid my father welcome,  
While I with self-same kindness welcome thine:—  
Brother Petruchio,—sister Katharina,—  
And thou, Hortensio, with thy loving widow,—  
Feast with the best, and welcome to my house;  
My banquet<sup>1</sup> is to close our stomachs up,  
After our great good cheer: Pray you, sit down;  
For now we sit to chat, as well as eat.

[*They sit at table.*]

*Pet.* Nothing but sit and sit, and eat and eat!

*Bap.* Padua affords this kindness, son Petruchio.

*Pet.* Padua affords nothing but what is kind.

*Hor.* For both our sakes, I would that word were true.

*Pet.* Now for my life, Hortensio fears<sup>2</sup> his widow.

*Wid.* Then never trust me if I be afraid.

*Pet.* You are sensible, and yet you miss my sense;

(1) A banquet was a refection consisting of fruit, cakes, &c.

(2) Dreads.

I mean, Hortensio is afraid of you.

*Wid.* He that is giddy, thinks the world turns round.

*Pet.* Roundly replied.

*Kath.* Mistress, how mean you that?

*Wid.* Thus I conceive by him.

*Pet.* Conceives by me!—How likes Hortensio that?

*Hor.* My widow says, thus she conceives her tale.

*Pet.* Very well mended: Kiss him for that, good widow.

*Kath.* He that is giddy, thinks the world turns round:—

I pray you, tell me what you meant by that.

*Wid.* Your husband, being troubled with a shrew,

Measures my husband's sorrow by his wo:

And now you know my meaning.

*Kath.* A very mean meaning.

*Wid.* Right, I mean you.

*Kath.* And I am mean, indeed, respecting you.

*Pet.* To her, Kate!

*Hor.* To her, widow!

*Pet.* A hundred marks, my Kate does put her down.

*Hor.* That's my office.

*Pet.* Spoke like an officer:—Ha' to thee, lad.

[*Drinks to Hortensio.*]

*Bap.* How likes Gremio these quick-witted folks?

*Gre.* Believe me, sir, they butt together well.

*Bian.* Head, and butt? a hasty-witted body

Would say, your head and butt were head and horn.

*Vin.* Ay, mistress bride, hath that awaken'd you?

*Bian.* Ay, but not frightened me; therefore I'll sleep again.

*Pet.* Nay, that you shall not; since you have begun,

Have at you for a bitter jest or two.

*Bian.* Am I your bird? I mean to shift my bush,  
And then pursue me as you draw your bow:—

You are welcome all.

[*Exeunt Bianca, Katharina, and Widow.*]

*Pet.* She hath prevented me.—Here, Signior Tranio,

This bird you aim'd at, though you hit her not ;  
Therefore, a health to all that shot and miss'd.

*Tra.* O, sir, Lucentio slipp'd me like his greyhound,

Which runs himself, and catches for his master.

*Pet.* A good swift simile, but something currish.

*Tra.* 'Tis well, sir, that you hunted for yourself ;

'Tis thought, your deer does hold you at a bay.

*Bap.* O ho, Petruchio, Tranio hits you now.

*Luc.* I thank thee for that gird,<sup>2</sup> good Tranio.

*Hor.* Confess, confess, hath he not hit you here ?

*Pet.* 'A has a little gall'd me, I confess ;

And as the jest did glance away from me,

'Tis ten to one it maim'd you two outright.

*Bap.* Now, in good sadness, son Petruchio,  
I think thou hast the veriest shrew of all.

*Pet.* Well, I say—no : and therefore, for assurance,

Let's each one send unto his wife ;

And he, whose wife is most obedient

To come at first when he doth send for her,

Shall win the wager which we will propose.

*Hor.* Content :—What is the wager ?

*Luc.* Twenty crowns.

*Pet.* Twenty crowns !

I'll venture so much on my hawk, or hound,

But twenty times so much upon my wife.

*Luc.* A hundred then.

*Hor.* Content.

*Pet.* A match ; 'tis done.

*Hor.* Who shall begin ?

*Luc.* That will I. Go,

Biondello, bid your mistress come to me.

*Bion.* I go. [Exit.]

(1) Witty.

(2) Sarcasm.



*Bap.* Son, I will be your half, Bianca comes.

*Luc.* I'll have no halves; I'll bear it all myself.

*Re-enter Biondello.*

How now! what news?

*Bion.* Sir, my mistress sends you word,  
That she is busy, and she cannot come.

*Pet.* How! she is busy, and she cannot come!  
Is that an answer?

*Gre.* Ay, and a kind one too:  
Pray God, sir, your wife send you not a worse.

*Pet.* I hope, better.

*Hor.* Sirrah, Biondello, go, and entreat my  
wife

To come to me forthwith. [*Exit Biondello.*]

*Pet.* O, ho! entreat her!

Nay, then she must needs come.

*Hor.* I am afraid, sir,  
Do what you can, yours will not be entreated.

*Re-enter Biondello.*

Now, where's my wife?

*Bion.* She says, you have some goodly jest in  
hand;

She will not come; she bids you come to her.

*Pet.* Worse and worse; she will not come! O  
vile,

Intolerable, not to be endur'd!

Sirrah, Grumio, go to your mistress;

Say, I command her come to me. [*Exit Grumio.*]

*Hor.* I know her answer.

*Pet.* What?

*Hor.* She will not come

*Pet.* The fouler fortune mine, and there an end.

*Enter Katharina.*

*Bap.* Now, by my holidame, here comes Katha-  
rina!

*Kath.* What is your will, sir, that you send for  
me?

*Pet.* Where is your sister, and Hortensio's wife?

*Kath.* They sit conferring by the parlour fire.

*Pet.* Go, fetch them hither; if they deny to come,

Swinge me them soundly forth unto their husbands :  
Away, I say, and bring them hither straight.

[*Exit Katharina.*]

*Luc.* Here is a wonder, if you talk of a wonder.

*Hor.* And so it is : I wonder what it bodes.

*Pet.* Marry, peace it bodes, and love, and quiet life,

An awful rule, and right supremacy ;  
And, to be short, what not, that's sweet and happy.

*Bap.* Now fair befall thee, good Petruchio !

The wager thou hast won ; and I will add  
Unto their losses twenty thousand crowns ;  
Another dowry to another daughter,  
For she is chang'd, as she had never been.

*Pet.* Nay, I will win my wager better yet ;  
And show more sign of her obedience,  
Her new-built virtue and obedience.

*Re-enter Katharina, with Bianca, and Widow.*

See, where she comes ; and brings your froward  
wives

As prisoners to her womanly persuasion.—

Katharine, that cap of yours becomes you not ;

Off with that bauble, throw it under foot.

[*Katharina pulls off her cap, and throws it down.*]

*Wid.* Lord, let me never have a cause to sigh,  
Till I be brought to such a silly pass !

*Bian.* Fie ! what a foolish duty call you this ?

*Luc.* I would, your duty were as foolish too :  
The wisdom of your duty, fair Bianca,  
Hath cost me a hundred crowns since supper-time.

*Bian.* The more fool you, for laying on my  
duty.

*Pet.* Katharine, I charge thee, tell these head-  
strong women  
What duty they do owe their lords and husbands.

*Wid.* Come, come, you're mocking; we will have no telling.

*Pet.* Come on, I say; and first begin with her.

*Wid.* She shall not.

*Pet.* I say, she shall;—and first begin with her.

*Kath.* Fie, fie! unknit that threat'ning unkind brow;

And dart not scornful glances from those eyes,  
To wound thy lord, thy king, thy governor:  
It blots thy beauty, as frosts bite the meads;  
Confounds thy fame, as whirlwinds shake fair buds;  
And in no sense is meet, or amiable.  
A woman mov'd, is like a fountain troubled,  
Muddy, ill-seeming, thick, bereft of beauty;  
And, while it is so, none so dry or thirsty  
Will deign to sip, or touch one drop of it.  
Thy husband is thy lord, thy life, thy keeper,  
Thy head, thy sovereign; one that cares for thee,  
And for thy maintenance: commits his body  
To painful labour, both by sea and land;  
To watch the night in storms, the day in cold,  
While thou liest warm at home, secure and safe;  
And craves no other tribute at thy hands,  
But love, fair looks, and true obedience;—  
Too little payment for so great a debt.  
Such duty as the subject owes the prince,  
Even such, a woman oweth to her husband:  
And, when she's froward, peevish, sullen, sour,  
And, not obedient to his honest will,  
What is she, but a foul contending rebel,  
And graceless traitor to her loving lord?—  
I am asham'd, that women are so simple  
To offer war, where they should kneel for peace;  
Or seek for rule, supremacy, and sway,  
When they are bound to serve, love, and obey.  
Why are our bodies soft, and weak, and smooth,  
Unapt to toil and trouble in the world;  
But that our soft conditions,<sup>1</sup> and our hearts,

(1) Gentle temper.

Should well agree with our external parts?  
Come, come, you froward and unable worms!  
My mind hath been as big as one of yours,  
My heart as great; my reason, haply, more,  
To bandy word for word, and frown for frown:  
But now, I see our lances are but straws;  
Our strength as weak, our weakness past com-  
pare,—

That seeming to be most, which we least are.  
Then vail your stomachs,<sup>1</sup> for it is no boot;  
And place your hands below your husband's foot:  
In token of which duty, if he please,  
My hand is ready, may it do him ease.

*Pet.* Why, there's a wench!—Come on, and kiss  
me, Kate.

*Luc.* Well, go thy ways, old lad; for thou shalt  
ha't.

*Vin.* 'Tis a good hearing, when children are  
toward.

*Luc.* But a harsh hearing, when women are  
froward.

*Pet.* Come, Kate, we'll to bed:—  
We three are married, but you two are sped.  
'Twas I won the wager, though you hit the white;  
[To Lucentio.

And, being a winner, God give you good night!  
[*Exeunt* Petruchio and Kath.

*Hor.* Now go thy ways, thou hast tam'd a curst  
shrew.

*Luc.* 'Tis a wonder, by your leave, she will be  
tam'd so. [Exeunt

(1) Abate your spirits.

186      TAMING OF THE SHREW.

Of this play the two plots are so well united, that they can hardly be called two, without injury to the art with which they are interwoven. The attention is entertained with all the variety of a double plot, yet is not distracted by unconnected incidents.

The part between Katharine and Petruchio is eminently sprightly and diverting. At the marriage of Bianca, the arrival of the real father, perhaps, produces more perplexity than pleasure. The whole play is very popular and diverting.

JOHNSON.

# WINTER'S TALE.

•  
•

PERSONS REPRESENTED.

*Leontes, king of Sicilia.*

*Mamillius, his son.*

*Camillo,*

*Antigonus,*

*Cleomenes,*

*Dion,*

} *Sicilian lords.*

*Another Sicilian lord.*

*Rogero, a Sicilian gentleman.*

*An attendant on the young prince Mamillius.*

*Officers of a court of judicature.*

*Polixenes, king of Bohemia.*

*Florizel, his son.*

*Archidamus, a Bohemian lord.*

*A mariner.*

*Gaoler.*

*An old shepherd, reputed father of Perdita.*

*Clown, his son.*

*Servant to the old shepherd.*

*Autolycus, a rogue.*

*Time, as Chorus.*

*Hermione, queen to Leontes.*

*Perdita, daughter to Leontes and Hermione.*

*Paulina, wife to Antigonus.*

*Emilia, a lady,*

*Two other ladies,* } *attending the queen.*

*Mopsa,*

*Dorcas,* } *Shepherdesses.*

*Lords, ladies, and attendants; satyrs for a dance,  
shepherds, shepherdesses, guards, &c.*

*Scene, sometimes in Sicilia, sometimes in Bohemia.*

## WINTER'S TALE.

---

### ACT I.

*SCENE I.*—*Sicilia. An Antechamber in Leontes' palace. Enter Camillo and Archidamus.*

*Archidamus.*

**I**F you shall chance, Camillo, to visit Bohemia, on the like occasion whereon my services are now on foot, you shall see, as I have said, great difference betwixt our Bohemia and your Sicilia.

*Cam.* I think, this coming summer, the king of Sicilia means to pay Bohemia the visitation which he justly owes him.

*Arch.* Wherein our entertainment shall shame us, we will be justified in our loves : for, indeed,—

*Cam.* 'Beseech you,—

*Arch.* Verily, I speak it in the freedom of my knowledge : we cannot with such magnificence—in so rare—I know not what to say.—We will give you sleepy drinks ; that your senses, unintelligent of our insufficiency, may, though they cannot praise us, as little accuse us.

*Cam.* You pay a great deal too dear, for what's given freely.

*Arch.* Believe me, I speak as my understanding instructs me, and as mine honesty puts it to utterance.

*Cam.* Sicilia cannot show himself over-kind to Bohemia. They were trained together in their childhoods ; and there rooted betwixt them then



such an affection, which cannot choose but branch now. Since their more mature dignities, and royal necessities, made separation of their society, their encounters, though not personal, have been royally attorned,<sup>1</sup> with interchange of gifts, letters, loving embassies; that they have seemed to be together, though absent; shook hands, as over a vast;<sup>2</sup> and embraced, as it were, from the ends of opposed winds. The heavens continue their loves!

*Arch.* I think, there is not in the world either malice, or matter, to alter it. You have an unspeakable comfort of your young prince Mamillius; it is a gentleman of the greatest promise, that ever came into my note.

*Cam.* I very well agree with you in the hopes of him: it is a gallant child; one that, indeed, physics the subject,<sup>3</sup> makes old hearts fresh: they, that went on crutches ere he was born, desire yet their life, to see him a man.

*Arch.* Would they else be content to die?

*Cam.* Yes; if there were no other excuse why they should desire to live.

*Arch.* If the king had no son, they would desire to live on crutches till he had one. [*Exeunt.*]

*SCENE II.—The same. A room of state in the palace. Enter Leontes, Polixenes, Hermione, Mamillius, Camillo, and attendants.*

*Pol.* Nine changes of the wat'ry star have been  
The shepherd's note, since we have left our throne  
Without a burden: time as long again  
Would be fill'd up, my brother, with our thanks:  
And yet we should, for perpetuity,  
Go hence in debt: And therefore, like a cipher,  
Yet standing in rich place, I multiply,  
With one we-thank-you, many thousands more

(1) Nobly supplied by substitution of embassies.

(2) Wide waste of country.

(3) Affords a cordial to the state.

That go before it.

*Leon.* Stay your thanks a while ;  
And pay them when you part.

*Pol.* Sir, that's to-morrow.  
I am question'd by my fears, of what may chance,  
Or breed upon our absence : That may blow  
No sneaping<sup>1</sup> winds at home, to make us say,  
*This is put forth too truly !* Besides, I have stay'd  
To tire your royalty.

*Leon.* We are tougher, brother,  
Than you can put us to't.

*Pol.* No longer stay.

*Leon.* One seven-night longer.

*Pol.* Very sooth, to-morrow.

*Leon.* We'll part the time between's then : and  
in that

I'll no gain-saying.

*Pol.* Press me not, 'beseech you, so ;  
There is no tongue that moves, none, none i' the  
world,

So soon as yours, could win me : so it should now,  
Were there necessity in your request, although  
'Twere needful I denied it. My affairs  
Do even drag me homeward : which to hinder,  
Were, in your love, a whip to me ; my stay,  
To you a charge, and trouble : to save both,  
Farewell, our brother.

*Leon.* Tongue-tied, our queen ? speak you

*Her.* I had thought, sir, to have held my peace,  
until

You had drawn oaths from him, not to stay. You, sir,  
Charge him too coldly : Tell him, you are sure,  
All in Bohemia's well : this satisfaction  
The by-gone day proclaim'd ; say this to him,  
He's beat from his best ward.

*Leon.* Well said, Hermione.

*Her.* To tell, he longs to see his son, were strong  
But let him say so then, and let him go,

(1) Nipping.

But let him swear so, and he shall not stay,  
We'll thwack him hence with distaffs.—

Yet of your royal presence [*To Polixenes.*] I'll adventure

The borrow of a week. When at Bohemia

You take my lord, I'll give him my commission,

To let him there a month, behind the gest<sup>1</sup>

Prefix'd for his parting : yet, good deed,<sup>2</sup> Leontes,

I love thee not a jar<sup>3</sup> o' the clock behind

What lady she her lord.—You'll stay?

*Pol.*

No, madam.

*Her.* Nay, but you will?

*Pol.*

I may not, verily.

*Her.* Verily!

You put me off with limber<sup>4</sup> vows : But I,  
Though you would seek to unsphere the stars with  
oaths,

Should yet say, *Sir, no going.* Verily,

You shall not go ; a lady's verily is

As potent as a lord's. Will you go yet?

Force me to keep you as a prisoner,

Not like a guest ; so you shall pay your fees,

When you depart, and save your thanks. How say  
you?

My prisoner? or my guest? by your dread verily,  
One of them you shall be.

*Pol.*

Your guest then, madam :

To be your prisoner, should import offending ;

Which is for me less easy to commit,

Than you to punish.

*Her.*

Not your gaoler then,

But your kind hostess. Come, I'll question you

Of my lord's tricks, and yours, when you were boys;

You were pretty lordings<sup>5</sup> then.

*Pol.*

We were, fair queen,

(1) Gests were the names of the stages where  
the king appointed to lie, during a royal progress.

(2) Indeed.

(3) Tick.

(4) Flimsy.

(5) A diminutive of lords.

Two lads, that thought there was no more behind,  
But such a day to-morrow as to-day,  
And to be boy eternal.

*Her.* Was not my lord the verier wag o'the two?

*Pol.* We were as twinn'd lambs, that did frisk  
i'the sun,

And bleat the one at the other: what we chang'd,  
Was innocence for innocence; we knew not  
The doctrine of ill-doing, no, nor dream'd  
That any did: Had we pursued that life,  
And our weak spirits ne'er been higher rear'd  
With stronger blood, we should have answer'd  
heaven

Boldly, *Not guilty*; the imposition clear'd,  
Hereditary ours.<sup>1</sup>

*Her.* By this we gather,  
You have tripp'd since.

*Pol.* O my most sacred lady,  
Temptations have since then been born to us: for  
In those unfledg'd days was my wife a girl;  
Your precious self had then not cross'd the eyes  
Of my young play-fellow.

*Her.* Grace to boot!  
Of this make no conclusion; lest you say,  
Your queen and I are devils: Yet, go on;  
The offences we have made you do, we'll answer;  
If you first sinn'd with us, and that with us  
You did continue fault, and that you slipp'd not  
With any but with us.

*Leon.* Is he won yet?

*Her.* He'll stay, my lord.

*Leon.* At my request, he would not.  
Hermione, my dearest, thou never spok'st  
To better purpose.

*Her.* Never?

*Leon.* Never, but once.

*Her.* What? have I twice said well? when  
was't before?

(1) Setting aside original sin.

I pr'ythee, tell me: Cram us with praise, and  
make us

As fat as tame things: One good deed, dying  
tongueless,

Slaughters a thousand, waiting upon that.

Our praises are our wages: You may ride us,

With one soft kiss, a thousand furlongs, ere

With spur we heat an acre. But to the goal;—

My last good was, to entreat his stay;

What was my first? it has an elder sister,

Or I mistake you: O, would her name were Grace!

But once before I spoke to the purpose. When?

Nay, let me have't; I long.

*Leon.*

Why, that was when  
Three crabbed months had sour'd themselves to  
death,

Ere I could make thee open thy white hand,

And clap thyself my love; then didst thou utter,

*I am yours for ever.*

*Her.*

It is Grace, indeed.

Why, lo you now, I have spoke to the purpose twice:

The one for ever earn'd a royal husband;

The other, for some while a friend.

[*Giving her hand to Polixenes.*

*Leon.*

Too hot, too hot: [*Aside.*

To mingle friendship far, is mingling bloods.

I have *tremor cordis*<sup>1</sup> on me: my heart dances;

But not for joy,—not joy.—This entertainment

May a free face put on; derive a liberty

From heartiness, from bounty, fertile bosom,

And well become the agent: it may, I grant:

But to be paddling palms, and pinching fingers,

As now they are; and making practis'd smiles,

As in a looking-glass;—and then to sigh, as 'twere

The mort o' the deer;<sup>2</sup> O, that is entertainment

My bosom likes not, nor my brows.—Mamillius,

Art thou my boy?

(1) Trembling of the heart.

(2) The tune played at the death of the deer.

*Mam.* Ay, my good lord.

*Leon.* I'fecks?

Why, that's my bawcock.<sup>1</sup> What, hast smutch'd thy nose?—

They say, it's a copy out of mine. Come, captain. We must be neat; not neat, but cleanly, captain: And yet the steer, the heifer, and the calf, Are all call'd, neat.—Still virginalling<sup>2</sup>

[*Observing Polixenes and Hermione.*

Upon his palm?—How now, you wanton calf? Art thou my calf?

*Mam.* Yes, if you will, my lord.

*Leon.* Thou want'st a rough pash, and the shoots that I have,<sup>3</sup>

To be full like me:—yet, they say, we are Almost as like as eggs; women say so, That will say any thing: But were they false As o'er-died blacks, as wind, as waters; false As dice are to be wish'd, by one that fixes No bourn<sup>4</sup> twixt his and mine; yet were it true To say this boy were like me.—Come, sir page, Look on me with your welkin<sup>5</sup> eye: Sweet villain! Most dear'st! my collop!—Can thy dam?—may't be?

Affection! thy infection stabs the centre: Thou dost make possible, things not so held, Communicat'st with dreams;—(How can this be?—) With what's unreal thou coactive art, And fellow'st nothing: Then, 'tis very credent,<sup>6</sup> Thou may'st co-join with something; and thou dost;

(And that beyond commission; and I find it,) And that to the infection of my brains, And hardening of my brows.

(1) Hearty fellow.

(2) *i. e.* Playing with her fingers as if on a spinnet.

(3) Thou wantest a rough head, and the budding horns that I have.

(4) Boundary. (5) Blue. (6) Credible

*Pol.* What means Sicilia?

*Her.* He something seems unsettled.

*Pol.* How, my lord?

What cheer? how is't with you, best brother?

*Her.* You look,

As if you held a brow of much distraction:

Are you mov'd, my lord?

*Leon.* No, in good earnest.—

How sometimes nature will betray its folly,  
Its tenderness, and make itself a pastime  
To harder bosoms! Looking on the lines  
Of my boy's face, methoughts, I did recoil  
Twenty-three years; and saw myself unbreech'd,  
In my green velvet coat; my dagger muzzled,  
Lest it should bite its master, and so prove,  
As ornaments oft do, too dangerous.

How like, methought, I then was to this kernel,  
This squash,<sup>1</sup> this gentleman:—mine honest friend,  
Will you take eggs for money?<sup>2</sup>

*Mam.* No, my lord, I'll fight.

*Leon.* You will? why, happy man be his dole!<sup>3</sup>—

My brother,

Are you so fond of your young priace, as we  
Do seem to be of ours?

*Pol.* If at home, sir,

He's all my exercise, my mirth, my matter:  
Now my sworn friend, and then mine enemy;  
My parasite, my soldier, statesman, all;  
He makes a July's day short as December;  
And, with his varying childness, cures in me  
Thoughts that would thicken my blood.

*Leon.*

So stands this squire  
Offic'd with me: We two will walk, my lord,  
And leave you to your graver steps.—Hermione,  
How thou lov'st us, show in our brother's welcome  
Let what is dear in Sicily, be cheap:  
Next to thyself, and my young rover, he's

(1) Pea-cod. (2) Will you be cajoled?

(3) May his share of life be a happy one!

Apparent<sup>1</sup> to my heart.

*Her.* If you would seek us,  
We are yours i' the garden : Shall's attend you  
there ?

*Leon.* To your own bents dispose you : you'll be  
found,

Be you beneath the sky :—I am angling now,  
Though you perceive me not how I give line.  
Go to, go to !

[*Aside.* Observing Polixenes and Hermione.  
How she holds up the neb,<sup>2</sup> the bill to him !  
And arms her with the boldness of a wife  
To her allowing<sup>3</sup> husband ! Gone already ;  
Inch-thick, knee-deep ; o'er head and ears a fork'd  
one.<sup>4</sup>—

[*Exeunt* Polixenes, Hermione, and attendants.  
Go, play, boy, play ;—thy mother plays, and I  
Play too ; but so disgrac'd a part, whose issue  
Will hiss me to my grave ; contempt and clamour  
Will be my knell.—Go, play, boy, play ;—There  
have been,

Or I am much deceiv'd, cuckolds ere now ;  
And many a man there is, even at this present,  
Now, while I speak this, holds his wife by the arm,  
That little thinks she has been sluic'd in his absence,  
And his pond fish'd by his next neighbour, by  
Sir Smile, his neighbour : nay, there's comfort in't,  
Whiles other men have gates ; and those gates  
open'd,

As mine, against their will : Should all despair  
That have revolted wives, the tenth of mankind  
Would hang themselves. Physic for't there is none ;  
It is a bawdy planet, that will strike  
Where 'tis predominant ; and 'tis powerful, think it,  
From east, west, north, and south : Be it concluded,  
No barricado for a belly ; know it ;  
It will let in and out the enemy,

(1) Heir apparent, next claimant. (2) Mouth.

(3) Approving. (4) A horned one, a cuckold.



With bag and baggage : many a thousand of us  
Have the disease, and feel't not.—How now, boy?

*Mam.* I am like you, they say.

*Leon.* Why, that's some comfort.—  
What ! Camillo there?

*Cam.* Ay, my good lord.

*Leon.* Go play, Mamillius ; thou'rt an honest  
man.— [*Exit Mamillius.*]

Camillo, this great sir will yet stay longer.

*Cam.* You had much ado to make his anchor hold :  
When you cast out, it still came home.

*Leon.* Didst note it?

*Cam.* He would not stay at your petitions ; made  
His business more material.

*Leon.* Didst perceive it?—  
They're here with me already ; whispering, round-  
ing,<sup>1</sup>

*Sicilia is a so-forth :* 'Tis far gone,  
When I shall gust<sup>2</sup> it last.—How came't, Camillo,  
That he did stay ?

*Cam.* At the good queen's entreaty.

*Leon.* At the queen's, be't : good, should be  
pertinent ;

But so it is, it is not. Was this taken  
By any understanding pate but thine ?  
For thy conceit is soaking, will draw in  
More than the common blocks :—Not noted, is't,  
But of the finer natures ? by some severals,  
Of head-piece extraordinary ? lower messes,<sup>3</sup>  
Perchance, are to this business purblind : say.

*Cam.* Business, my lord ? I think, most under-  
stand  
Bohemia stays here longer.

*Leon.*

Ha ?

*Cam.*

Stays here longer.

*Leon.* Ay, but why ?

*Cam.* To satisfy your highness, and the entreaties

(1) To round in the ear was to tell secretly.

(2) Taste. (3) Inferiors in rank.

Of our most gracious mistress.

*Leon.* Satisfy  
The entreaties of your mistress?—satisfy?—  
Let that suffice. I have trusted thee, Cainillo,  
With all the nearest things to my heart, as well  
My chamber-counsels: wherein, priest-like, thou  
Hast cleans'd my bosom; I from thee departed  
Thy penitent reform'd: but we have been  
Deceiv'd in thy integrity, deceiv'd  
In that which seems so.

*Cam.* Be it forbid, my lord!

*Leon.* To bide upon't;—Thou art not honest: or,  
If thou inclin'st that way, thou art a coward;  
Which boxes! honesty behind, restraining  
From course requir'd: Or else thou must be counted  
A servant, grafted in my serious trust,  
And therein negligent; or else a fool,  
That seest a game play'd home, the rich stake  
drawn,  
And tak'st it all for jest.

*Cam.* My gracious lord,  
I may be negligent, foolish, and fearful;  
In every one of these no man is free,  
But that his negligence, his folly, fear,  
Amongst the infinite doings of the world,  
Sometime puts forth: In your affairs, my lord,  
If ever I were wilful-negligent,  
It was my folly; if industriously  
I play'd the fool, it was my negligence,  
Not weighing well the end; if ever fearful  
To do a thing, where I the issue doubted,  
Whereof the execution did cry out  
Against the non-performance, 'twas a fear  
Which oft affects the wisest: these, my lord,  
Are such allow'd infirmities, that honesty  
Is never free of. But, 'beseech your grace,  
Be plainer with me; let me know my trespass  
By its own visage: if I then deny it,

(1) To hox is to hamstring.

'Tis none of mine.

*Leon.* Have not you seen, Camillo,  
(But that's past doubt : you have ; or your eye-glass  
Is thicker than a cuckold's horn ;) or heard  
(For, to a vision so apparent, rumour  
Cannot be mute,) or thought (for cogitation  
Resides not in that man, that does not think it,)  
My wife is slippery ? If thou wilt confess,  
(Or else be impudently negative,  
To have nor eyes, nor ears, nor thought,) then say,  
My wife's a hobby-horse ; deserves a name  
As rank as any flax-wench, that puts to  
Before her troth-plight : say it, and justify it.

*Cam.* I would not be a stander-by, to hear  
My sovereign mistress clouded so, without  
My present vengeance taken : 'Shrew my heart,  
You never spoke what did become you less  
Than this : which to reiterate, were sin  
As deep as that, though true.

*Leon.* Is whispering nothing ?  
Is leaning cheek to cheek ? is meeting noses ?  
Kissing with inside lip ? stopping the career  
Of laughter with a sigh ? (a note infallible  
Of breaking honesty :) horsing foot on foot ?  
Skulking in corners ? wishing clocks more swift ?  
Hours, minutes ? noon, midnight ? and all eyes blind  
With the pin and web,<sup>1</sup> but theirs, theirs only,  
That would unseen be wicked ? is this nothing ?  
Why, then the world, and all that's in't, is nothing ;  
The covering sky is nothing ; Bohemia nothing ;  
My wife is nothing ; nor nothing have these nothings,  
If this be nothing.

*Cam.* Good my lord, be cur'd  
Of this diseas'd opinion, and betimes ;  
For 'tis most dangerous.

*Leon.* Say, it be ; 'tis true.

*Cam.* No, no, my lord.

*Leon.* It is ; you lie, you lie :

(1) Disorders of the eye.

I say, thou liest, Camillo, and I hate thee ;  
 Pronounce thee a gross lout, a mindless slave ;  
 Or else a hovering temporizer, that  
 Canst with thine eyes at once see good and evil,  
 Inclining to them both : Were my wife's liver  
 Infected as her life, she would not live  
 The running of one glass.<sup>1</sup>

*Cam.* Who does infect her ?

*Leon.* Why he, that wears her like her medal,  
 hanging  
 About his neck, Bohemia : Who—if I  
 Had servants true about me ; that bare eyes  
 To see alike mine honour as their profits,  
 Their own particular thrifts,—they would do that  
 Which should undo more doing : Ay, and thou  
 His cup-bearer,—whom I from meaner form  
 Have bench'd, and rear'd to worship ; who may'st  
 see

Plainly, as heaven sees earth, and earth sees heaven,  
 How I am galled,—might'st bespice a cup,  
 To give mine enemy a lasting wink ;  
 Which draught to me were cordial.

*Cam.* Sir, my lord,  
 I could do this ; and that with no rash<sup>2</sup> potion,  
 But with a ling'ring dram, that should not work  
 Maliciously<sup>3</sup> like poison : But I cannot  
 Believe this crack to be in my dread mistress,  
 So sovereignly being honourable.  
 I have lov'd thee,——

*Leon.* Make't thy question, and go rot !  
 Dost think, I am so muddy, so unsettled,  
 To appoint myself in this vexation ? sully  
 The purity and whiteness of my sheets,  
 Which to preserve is sleep ; which being spotted,  
 Is goads, thorns, nettles, tails of wasps ?  
 Give scandal to the blood o' the prince my son,  
 Who, I do think is mine, and love as mine ;

(1) Hour-glass.

(2) Hasty.

(3) Maliciously, with effects openly hurtful.

Without ripe moving to't? Would I do this?  
Could man so blench?<sup>1</sup>

*Cam.* I must believe you, sir;  
I do; and will fetch off Bohemia for't:  
Provided, that when he's remov'd, your highness  
Will take again your queen, as yours at first;  
Even for your son's sake; and, thereby, for sealing  
The injury of tongues, in courts and kingdoms  
Known and allied to yours.

*Leon.* Thou dost advise me,  
Even so as I mine own course have set down:  
I'll give no blemish to her honour, none.

*Cam.* My lord,  
Go then; and with a countenance as clear  
As friendship wears at feasts, keep with Bohemia,  
And with your queen: I am his cupbearer;  
If from me he have wholesome beverage,  
Account me not your servant.

*Leon.* This is all:  
Do't, and thou hast the one half of my heart;  
Do't not, thou splitt'st thine own.

*Cam.* I'll do't, my lord.

*Leon.* I will seem friendly, as thou hast advis'd  
me. [Exit]

*Cam.* O miserable lady!—But, for me,  
What case stand I in? I must be the poisoner  
Of good Polixenes: and my ground to do't  
Is the obedience to a master; one,  
Who, in rebellion with himself, will have  
All that are his, so too.—To do this deed,  
Promotion follows: If I could find example  
Of thousands, that had struck anointed kings,  
And flourish'd after, I'd not do't: but since  
Nor brass, nor stone, nor parchment, bears not one,  
Let villany itself forswear't. I must  
Forsake the court: to do't, or no, is certain  
To me a break-neck. Happy star, reign now!  
Here comes Bohemia.

(1) *i. e.* Could any man so start off from propriety?

*Enter Polixenes.*

*Pol.* This is strange ! methinks,  
My favour here begins to warp. Not speak ?—  
Good-day, Camillo.

*Cam.* Hail, most royal sir !

*Pol.* What is the news i' the court ?

*Cam.* None rare, my lord.

*Pol.* The king hath on him such a countenance,  
As he had lost some province, and a region,  
Lov'd as he loves himself : even now I met him  
With customary compliment ; when he,  
Wafting his eyes to the contrary, and falling  
A lip of much contempt, speeds from me ; and  
So leaves me to consider what is breeding,  
That changes thus his manners.

*Cam.* I dare not know, my lord.

*Pol.* How ! dare not ? do not. Do you know,  
and dare not  
Be intelligent to me ? 'Tis thereabouts ;  
For, to yourself, what you do know, you must ;  
And cannot say, you dare not. Good Camillo,  
Your chang'd complexions are to me a mirror  
Which shows me mine chang'd too : for I must be  
A party in this alteration, finding  
Myself thus alter'd with it.

*Cam.* There is a sickness  
Which puts some of us in distemper ; but  
I cannot name the disease ; and it is caught  
Of you that yet are well.

*Pol.* How ! caught of me ?  
Make me not sighted like the basilisk :  
I have look'd on thousands, who have sped the better  
By my regard, but kill'd none so. Camillo,—  
As you are certainly a gentleman ; thereto  
Clerk-like, experienc'd, which no less adorns  
Our gentry, than our parents' noble names,  
In whose success<sup>1</sup> we are gentle,<sup>2</sup>—I beseech you,

(1) For succession.

(2) Gentle was opposed to simple ; well born

If you know aught which does behove my know  
ledge

Thereof to be inform'd, imprison it not  
In ignorant concealment.

*Cam.* I may not answer.

*Pol.* A sickness caught of me, and yet I well !  
I must be answer'd.—Dost thou hear, Camillo,  
I conjure thee, by all the parts of man,  
Which honour does acknowledge,—whereof the  
least

Is not this suit of mine,—that thou declare  
What incidency thou dost guess of harm  
Is creeping toward me; how far off, how near;  
Which way to be prevented, if to be;  
If not, how best to bear it.

*Cam.* Sir, I'll tell you;  
Since I am charg'd in honour, and by him  
That I think honourable: Therefore, mark my  
counsel;

Which must be even as swiftly follow'd, as  
I mean to utter it; or both yourself and me  
Cry, *lost*, and so good-night.

*Pol.* On, good Camillo.

*Cam.* I am appointed Him to murder you.<sup>1</sup>

*Pol.* By whom, Camillo?

*Cam.* By the king.

*Pol.* For what?

*Cam.* He thinks, nay, with all confidence he  
swears,  
As he had seen't, or been an instrument  
To vice<sup>2</sup> you to't,—that you have touch'd his queen  
Forbiddenly.

*Pol.* O, then my best blood turn  
To an infected jelly; and my name  
Be yok'd with his, that did betray the best !  
Turn then my freshest reputation to  
A savour, that may strike the dullest nostril

(1) *i. e.* I am the person appointed, &c.

(2) Draw.

Where I arrive ; and my approach be shunn'd,  
Nay, hated too, worse than the great'st infection  
That e'er was heard, or read !

*Cam.* Swear his thought over  
By each particular star in heaven, and  
By all their influences, you may as well  
Forbid the sea for to obey the moon,  
As or, by oath, remove, or counsel, shake  
The fabric of his folly ; whose foundation  
Is pil'd upon his faith,<sup>1</sup> and will continue  
The standing of his body.

*Pol.* How should this grow ?

*Cam.* I know not : but, I am sure, 'tis safer to  
Avoid what's grown, than question how 'tis born.  
If therefore you dare trust my honesty,—  
That lies enclosed in this trunk, which you  
Shall bear along impawn'd,—away to-night.  
Your followers I will whisper to the business ;  
And will, by twos, and threes, at several posterns,  
Clear them o' the city : For myself, I'll put  
My fortunes to your service, which are here  
By this discovery lost. Be not uncertain ;  
For, by the honour of my parents, I  
Have utter'd truth : which if you seek to prove,  
I dare not stand by ; nor shall you be safer  
Than one condemn'd by the king's own mouth,  
thereon

His execution sworn.

*Pol.* I do believe thee :  
I saw his heart in his face. Give me thy hand ;  
Be pilot to me, and thy places shall  
Still neighbour mine : My ships are ready, and  
My people did expect my hence departure  
Two days ago.—This jealousy  
Is for a precious creature : as she's rare,  
Must it be great ; and, as his person's mighty,  
Must it be violent ; and as he does conceive  
He is dishonour'd by a man which ever

(1) Settled belief.



Profess'd to him, why, his revenges must  
 In that be made more bitter. Fear o'ershades me :  
 Good expedition be my friend, and comfort  
 The gracious queen, part of his theme, but nothing  
 Of his ill-ta'en suspicion ! Come, Camillo ;  
 I will respect thee as a father, if  
 Thou bear'st my life off hence : Let us avoid.

*Cam.* It is in mine authority, to command  
 The keys of all the posterns : Please your highness  
 To take the urgent hour : come, sir, away. [*Exe.*]

## ACT II.

*SCENE I.—The same. Enter Hermione, Mamillius, and Ladies.*

*Her.* Take the boy to you : he so troubles me,  
 'Tis past enduring.

*1 Lady.* Come, my gracious lord,  
 Shall I be your play-fellow ?

*Mam.* No, I'll none of you.

*1 Lady.* Why, my sweet lord ?

*Mam.* You'll kiss me hard ; and speak to me as if  
 I were a baby still.—I love you better.

*2 Lady.* And why so, my good lord ?

*Mam.* Not for because  
 Your brows are blacker : yet black brows, they say,  
 Become some women best ; so that there be not  
 Too much hair there, but in a semi-circle,  
 Or half-moon made with a pen.

*2 Lady.* Who taught you this ?

*Mam.* I learn'd it out of women's faces.—Pray  
 now

What colour are your eye-brows ?

*1 Lady.* Blue, my lord.

*Mam.* Nay, that's a mock : I have seen a lady's  
 nose

'That has been blue, but not her eye-brows.

2 Lady.

Hark ye :

The queen, your mother, rounds apace : we shall  
Present our services to a fine new prince,  
One of these days ; and then you'd wanton with us,  
If we would have you.

1 Lady.

She is spread of late

Into a goodly bulk : Good time encounter her !

Her. What wisdom stirs amongst you ? Come,  
sir, now

I am for you again : Pray you sit by us,  
And tell 's a tale.

Mam.

Merry, or sad, shall't be ?

Her. As merry as you will.

Mam.

A sad tale's best for winter :

I have one of sprites and goblins.

Her.

Let's have that, sir.

Come on, sit down :—Come on, and do your best  
To fright me with your sprites : you're powerful  
at it.

Mam. There was a man,—

Her.

Nay, come, sit down ; then on.

Mam. Dwelt by a church-yard ;—I will tell it  
softly ;

Yon crickets shall not hear it.

Her.

Come on then,

And give't me in mine ear.

*Enter Leontes, Antigonus, Lords, and others.*

Leon. Was he met there ? his train ? Camillo  
with him ?

1 Lord. Behind the tuft of pines I met them ;  
never

Saw I men scour so on their way : I ey'd them  
Even to their ships.

Leon.

How bless'd am I

In my just censure ?<sup>1</sup> in my true opinion ?.—

Alack, for lesser knowledge !<sup>2</sup> How accurs'd,

(1) Judgment.

(2) O that my knowledge were less !

In being so blest !—There may be in the cup  
 A spider<sup>1</sup> steep'd, and one may drink ; depart,  
 And yet partake no venom ; for his knowledge  
 Is not infected : but if one present  
 The abhorr'd ingredient to his eye, make known  
 How he hath drank, he cracks his gorge, his sides,  
 With violent hefts :<sup>2</sup>—I have drank, and seen the  
 spider.

Camillo was his help in this, his pander :—  
 There is a plot against my life, my crown ;  
 All's true that is mistrusted :—that false villain,  
 Whom I employ'd, was pre-employ'd by him :  
 He has discover'd my design, and I  
 Remain a pinch'd thing :<sup>3</sup> yea, a very trick  
 For them to play at will :—How came the posterns  
 So easily open ?

1 *Lord.* By his great authority ;  
 Which often hath no less prevail'd than so,  
 On your command.

*Leon.* I know't too well.——  
 Give me the boy ; I am glad, you did not nurse him :  
 Though he does bear some signs of me, yet you  
 Have too much blood in him.

*Her.* What is this ? sport ?

*Leon.* Bear the boy hence, he shall not come  
 about her ;

Away with him :—and let her sport herself  
 With that she's big with ; for 'tis Polixenes  
 Has made thee swell thus.

*Her.* But I'd say, he had not,  
 And, I'll be sworn you would believe my saying,  
 Howe'er you lean to the nayward.

*Leon.* You, my lords,  
 Look on her, mark her well ; be but about  
 To say, *she is a goodly lady*, and

(1) Spiders were esteemed poisonous in our au-  
 thor's time.

(2) Heavings.

(3) A thing pinched out of clouts, a puppet.

The justice of your hearts will thereto add,  
'Tis pity she's not honest, honourable :  
Praise her but for this her without-door form,  
(Which, on my faith, deserves high speech,) and  
straight

The shrug, the hum, or ha ; these petty brands,  
That calumny doth use :—O, I am out,  
That mercy does ; for calumny will sear<sup>1</sup>  
Virtue itself :—These shrugs, these hums, and ha's,  
When you have said, she's goodly, come between ;  
Ere you can say she's honest : But be it known,  
From him that has most cause to grieve it should be,  
She's an adultr<sup>ess</sup>.

*Her.* Should a villain say so,  
The most replenish'd villain in the world,  
He were as much more villain : you, my lord,  
Do but mistake.

*Leon.* You have mistook, my lady  
Polixenes for Leontes : O thou thing,  
Which I'll not call a creature of thy place,  
Lest barbarism, making me the precedent,  
Should a like language use to all degrees,  
And mannerly distinguishment leave out  
Betwixt the prince and beggar !—I have said,  
She's an adultr<sup>ess</sup> ; I have said with whom:  
More, she's a traitor ; and Camillo is  
A federary<sup>2</sup> with her ; and one that knows  
What she should shame to know herself,  
But<sup>3</sup> with her most vile principal, that she's  
A bed-swer<sup>ver</sup>, even as bad as those  
That vulgars give bold titles ; ay, and privy  
To this their late escape.

*Her.* No, by my life,  
Privy to none of this : How will this grieve you,  
When you shall come to clearer knowledge, that  
You thus have publish'd me ? Gentle my lord,  
You scarce can right me thoroughly then, to say

(1) Brand as infamous. (2) Confederate.

(3) Only.

VOL. III.

You did mistake.

*Leon.* No, no; if I mistake  
In those foundations which I build upon,  
The centre is not big enough to bear  
A school-boy's top.—Away with her to prison.  
He, who shall speak for her, is afar off guilty,<sup>1</sup>  
But that he speaks.<sup>2</sup>

*Her.* There's some ill planet reigns :  
I must be patient, till the heavens look  
With an aspect more favourable.—Good my  
lords,

I am not prone to weeping, as our sex  
Commonly are; the want of which vain dew,  
Perchance, shall dry your pities: but I have  
That honourable grief lodg'd here, which burns  
Worse than tears drown: 'Beseech you all, my  
lords,

With thoughts so qualified as your charities  
Shall best instruct you, measure me;—and so  
The king's will be perform'd!

*Leon.* Shall I be heard?  
[*To the guards.*

*Her.* Who is't, that goes with me?—'Beseech  
your highness,

My women may be with me; for, you see,  
My plight requires it. Do not weep, good fools;  
There is no cause: when you shall know, your  
mistress

Has deserv'd prison, then abound in tears,  
As I come out: this action, I now go on,  
Is for my better grace.—Adieu, my lord:  
I never wish'd to see you sorry; now,  
I trust, I shall.—My women, come; you have  
leave.

*Leon.* Go, do our bidding; hence.

[*Exeunt Queen and Ladies.*

*1 Lord.* 'Beseech your highness, call the queen  
again.

(1) Remotely guilty. (2) In merely speaking.

*Ant.* Be certain what you do, sir; lest your  
justice  
Prove violence; in the which three great ones suffer,  
Yourself, your queen, your son.

*1 Lord.* For her, my lord,—  
I dare my life lay down, and will do't, sir,  
Please you to accept it, that the queen is spotless  
I' the eyes of heaven, and to you; I mean,  
In this which you accuse her.

*Ant.* If it prove  
She's otherwise, I'll keep my stables<sup>1</sup> where  
I lodge my wife; I'll go in couples with her;  
Than when I feel, and see her, no further trust her;  
For every inch of woman in the world,  
Ay, every dram of woman's flesh, is false,  
If she be.

*Leon.* Hold your peaces.

*1 Lord.* Good my lord,—

*Ant.* It is for you we speak, not for ourselves:  
You are abus'd, and by some putter-on,<sup>2</sup>  
That will be damn'd for't; 'would I knew the  
villain,

I would land-damn him: Be she honour-flaw'd,—  
I have three daughters; the eldest is eleven;  
The second, and the third, nine, and some five;  
If this prove true, they'll pay for't: by mine  
honour,

I'll geld them all; fourteen they shall not see,  
To bring false generations. they are co-heirs;  
And I had rather glib myself, than they  
Should not produce fair issue.

*Leon.* Cease; no more.  
You smell this business with a sense as cold  
As is a dead man's nose: I see't, and feel't,  
As you feel doing thus; and see withal  
The instruments that feel.

*Ant.* If it be so,  
We need no grave to bury honesty;

(1) Take my station.

(2) Instigator

There's not a grain of it, the face to sweeten  
Of the whole dungy earth.

*Leon.*

What ! lack I credit ?

1 *Lord.* I had rather you did lack, than I, my  
lord,

Upon this ground : and more it would content me  
To have her honour true, than your suspicion ;  
Be blam'd for't how you might.

*Leon.*

Why, what need we

Commune with you of this ? but rather follow  
Our forceful instigation. Our prerogative  
Calls not your counsels ; but our natural goodness  
Imparts this : which,—if you (or stupified,  
Or seeming so in skill,) cannot, or will not,  
Relish as truth, like us ; inform yourselves,  
We need no more of your advice : the matter,  
The loss, the gain, the ordering on't, is all  
Properly ours.

*Ant.*

And I wish, my liege,

You had only in your silent judgment tried it,  
Without more overture.

*Leon.*

How could that be ?

Either thou art most ignorant by age,  
Or thou wert born a fool. Camillo's flight,  
Added to their familiarity,  
(Which was as gross as ever touch'd conjecture,  
That lack'd sight only, nought for approbation,<sup>1</sup>  
But only seeing, all other circumstances  
Made up to the deed,) doth push on this proceeding:  
Yet, for a greater confirmation,  
(For, in an act of this importance, 'twere  
Most piteous to be wild,) I have despatch'd in post,  
To sacred Delphos, to Apollo's temple,  
Cleomenes and Dion, whom you know  
Of stuff'd sufficiency ;<sup>2</sup> Now, from the oracle  
They will bring all ; whose spiritual counsel had,  
Shall stop, or spur me. Have I done well ?

1 *Lord.* Well done, my lord.

(1) Proof. (2) Of abilities more than sufficient.

*Leon.* Though I am satisfied, and need no more  
Than what I know, yet shall the oracle  
Give rest to the minds of others ; such as he,  
Whose ignorant credulity will not  
Come up to the truth : So have we thought it good,  
From our free person she should be confin'd ;  
Lest that the treachery of the two, fled hence,  
Be left her to perform. Come, follow us ;  
We are to speak in public : for this business  
Will raise us all.

*Ant.* [*Aside.*] to laughter, as I take it,  
If the good truth were known. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*The same. The outer room of a  
prison. Enter Paulina and attendants.*

*Paul.* The keeper of the prison,—call to him ;  
[*Exit an attendant.*]  
Let him have knowledge who I am.—Good lady !  
No court in Europe is too good for thee,  
What dost thou then in prison?—Now, good sir,

*Re-enter attendant, with the Keeper.*

You know me, do you not ?

*Keep.* For a worthy lady,  
And one whom much I honour.

*Paul.* Pray you, then,  
Conduct me to the queen.

*Keep.* I may not, madam ; to the contrary  
I have express commandment.

*Paul.* Here's ado,  
To lock up honesty and honour from  
The access of gentle visitors !—Is it lawful,  
Pray you, to see her women ? any of them ?  
Emilia ?

*Keep.* So please you, madam, to put  
Apart these your attendants, I shall bring  
Emilia forth.

*Paul.* I pray now, call her.  
Withdraw yourselves. [*Exeunt attend.*]

*Keep.* And, madam,



I must be present at your conference.

*Paul.* Well, be it so, pr'ythee. [*Exit Keeper.*  
Here's such ado to make no stain a stain,  
As passes colouring.

*Re-enter Keeper, with Emilia.*

Dear gentlewoman, how fares our gracious lady?

*Emil.* As well as one so great, and so forlorn,  
May hold together : On her frights, and griefs,  
(Which never tender lady hath borne greater,)  
She is, something before her time, deliver'd.

*Paul.* A boy?

*Emil.* A daughter ; and a goodly babe,  
Lusty, and like to live : the queen receives  
Much comfort in't : says, *My poor prisoner,*  
*I am innocent as you.*

*Paul.* I dare be sworn :—  
These dangerous unsafe lunes<sup>1</sup> o' the king ! be-  
shrew them !

He must be told on't, and he shall : the office  
Becomes a woman best ; I'll take't upon me :  
If I prove honey-mouth'd, let my tongue blister ;  
And never to my red-look'd anger be  
The trumpet any more :—Pray you, Emilia,  
Commend my best obedience to the queen ;  
If she dares trust me with her little babe,  
I'll show't the king, and undertake to be  
Her advocate to th' loudest : We do not know  
How he may soften at the sight o' the child ;  
The silence often of pure innocence  
Persuades, when speaking fails.

*Emil.* Most worthy madam,  
Your honour, and your goodness, is so evident,  
That your free undertaking cannot miss  
A thriving issue ; there is no lady living,  
So meet for this great errand : Please your ladyship  
To visit the next room, I'll presently  
Acquaint the queen of your most noble offer ;

(1) Frenzies.

Who, but to-day, hammer'd of this design ;  
But durst not tempt a minister of honour,  
Lest she should be denied.

*Paul.* Tell her, Emilia,  
I'll use that tongue I have : if wit flow from it,  
As boldness from my bosom, let it not be doubted  
I shall do good.

*Emil.* Now be you blest for it !  
I'll to the queen : Please you, come something  
nearer.

*Keep.* Madam, if't please the queen to send the  
babe,

I know not what I shall incur, to pass it,  
Having no warrant.

*Paul.* You need not fear it, sir :  
The child was prisoner to the womb ; and is,  
By law and process of great nature, thence  
Free'd and enfranchis'd : not a party to  
The anger of the king ; nor guilty of,  
If any be, the trespass of the queen.

*Keep.* I do believe it.

*Paul.* Do not you fear : upon  
Mine honour I will stand 'twixt you and danger.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*The same. A room in the palace.*

*Enter* Leontes, Antigonus, Lords, and other  
attendants.

*Leon.* Nor night, nor day, no rest : It is but  
weakness  
To bear the matter thus ; mere weakness, if  
The cause were not in being ;—part o' the cause,  
She, the adultress ;—for the harlot king  
Is quite beyond mine arm, out of the blank  
And level<sup>1</sup> of my brain, plot-proof : but she  
I can hook to me : Say, that she were gone,  
Given to the fire, a moiety of my rest  
Might come to me again.—Who's there ?

(1) Mark and aim.

1 *Atten.*

My lord?  
[*Advancing.*]

*Leon.* How does the boy?

1 *Atten.* He took good rest to-night;  
'Tis hop'd, his sickness is discharg'd.

*Leon.* To see,  
His nobleness!

Conceiving the dishonour of his mother,  
He straight declin'd, droop'd, took it deeply;  
Fasten'd and fix'd the shame on't in himself;  
Threw off his spirit, his appetite, his sleep,  
And downright languish'd.—Leave me solely:  
—go,

See how he fares. [*Exit attend.*—Fie, fie! no  
thought of him;—

The very thought of my revenges that way  
Recoil upon me: in himself too mighty;  
And in his parties, his alliance,—Let him be,  
Until a time may serve: for present vengeance,  
Take it on her. Camillo and Polixenes  
Laugh at me; make their pastime at my sorrow:  
They should not laugh, if I could reach them; nor  
Shall she, within my power.

*Enter Paulina, with a child.*

1 *Lord.* You must not enter.

*Paul.* Nay, rather, good my lords, be second  
to me:

Fear you his tyrannous passion more, alas,  
Than the queen's life? a gracious innocent soul;  
More free, than he is jealous.

*Ant.* That's enough.

1 *Atten.* Madam, he hath not slept to-night;  
commanded

None should come at him.

*Paul.* Not so hot, good sir;

I come to bring him sleep. 'Tis such as you,—  
That creep like shadows by him, and do sigh

(1) Alone.

At each his needless heavings,—such as you  
Nourish the cause of his awaking : I  
Do come with words as medicinal as true ;  
Honest, as either ; to purge him of that humour,  
That presses him from sleep.

*Leon.* What noise there, ho ?

*Paul.* No noise, my lord ; but needful conference,  
About some gossips for your highness.

*Leon.* How ?—

Away with that audacious lady : Antigonus,  
I charg'd thee, that she should not come about me ;  
I knew she would.

*Ant.* I told her so, my lord,  
On your displeasure's peril, and on mine,  
She should not visit you.

*Leon.* What, canst not rule her ?

*Paul.* From all dishonesty, he can : in this,  
(Unless he take the course that you have done,  
Commit me, for committing honour,) trust it,  
He shall not rule me.

*Ant.* Lo you now ; you hear !  
When she will take the rein, I let her run ;  
But she'll not stumble.

*Paul.* Good my liege, I come,—  
And, I beseech you, hear me, who profess  
Myself your loyal servant, your physician,  
Your most obedient counsellor ; yet that dare  
Less appear so, in comforting your evils,<sup>1</sup>  
Than such as most seem yours :—I say, I come  
From your good queen.

*Leon.* Good queen !

*Paul.* Good queen, my lord, good queen : I say,  
good queen ;  
And would by combat make her good, so were I  
A man, the worst<sup>2</sup> about you.

*Leon.* Force her hence.

*Paul.* Let him that makes but trifles of his eyes,  
First hand me : on mine own accord, I'll off ;

(1) Abetting your ill courses. (2) Lowest.

But, first, I'll do my errand.—The good queen,  
For she is good, hath brought you forth a daughter;  
Here 'tis; commends it to your blessing.

[*Laying down the child.*

*Leon.*

Out!

A mankind<sup>1</sup> witch! Hence with her, out o'door:  
A most intelligencing bawd!

*Paul.*

Not so:

I am as ignorant in that, as you  
In so entitling me: and no less honest  
Than you are mad; which is enough, I'll warrant,  
As this world goes, to pass for honest.

*Leon.*

Traitors!

Will you not push her out? Give her the bastard:—  
Thou dotard, [*To Antigonus.*] thou art woman-  
tir'd,<sup>2</sup> unroosted

By thy dame Partlet here,—take up the bastard;  
Take't up, I say; give't to thy crone.<sup>3</sup>

*Paul.*

For ever

Unvenerable be thy hands, if thou  
Tak'st up the princess, by that forced<sup>4</sup> baseness  
Which he has put upon't!

*Leon.*

He dreads his wife.

*Paul.* So I would you did; then, 'twere past all  
doubt,

You'd call your children yours.

*Leon.*

A nest of traitors!

*Ant.* I am none, by this good light.

*Paul.*

Nor I; nor any,

But one, that's here; and that's himself: for he  
The sacred honour of himself, his queen's,  
His hopeful son's, his babe's, betrays to slander,  
Whose sting is sharper than the sword's; and will  
not

(For, as the case now stands, it is a curse

(1) Masculine.

(2) Pecked by a woman; hen-pecked.

(3) Worn-out old woman.

(4) Forced is false; uttered with violence to truth.

He cannot be compell'd to't,) once remove  
The root of his opinion, which is rotten,  
As ever oak, or stone, was sound.

*Leon.* A callat,<sup>1</sup>  
Of boundless tongue : who late hath beat her husband,  
And now baits me !—This brat is none of mine ;  
It is the issue of Polixenes :  
Hence with it ; and, together with the dam,  
Commit them to the fire.

*Paul.* It is yours ;  
And, might we lay the old proverb to your charge,  
So like you, 'tis the worse.—Behold, my lords,  
Although the print be little, the whole matter  
And copy of the father : eye, nose, lip,  
The trick of his frown, his forehead ; nay, the valley,  
The pretty dimples of his chin, and cheek ; his  
smiles ;  
The very mould and frame of hand, nail, finger :—  
And thou, good goddess nature, which hast made it  
So like to him that got it, if thou hast  
The ordering of the mind too, 'mongst all colours  
No yellow<sup>2</sup> in't ; lest she suspect, as he does,  
Her children not her husband's !

*Leon.* A gross hag !—  
And, lozel,<sup>3</sup> thou art worthy to be hang'd,  
That wilt not stay her tongue.

*Ant.* Hang all the husbands  
That cannot do that feat, you'll leave yourself  
Hardly one subject.

*Leon.* Once more, take her hence.

*Paul.* A most unworthy and unnatural lord  
Can do no more.

*Leon.* I'll have thee burn'd.

*Paul.* I care not :  
It is a heretic, that makes the fire,  
Not she, which burns in't. I'll not call you tyrant ;

- (1) Trull. (2) The colour of jealousy.  
(3) Worthless fellow

But this most cruel usage of your queen  
(Not able to produce more accusation  
Than your own weak-hing'd fancy,) something  
savours

Of tyranny, and will ignoble make you,  
Yea, scandalous to the world.

*Leon.* On your allegiance,  
Out of the chamber with her. Were I a tyrant,  
Where were her life? she durst not call me so,  
If she did know me one. Away with her.

*Paul.* I pray you, do not push me; I'll be gone.  
Look to your babe, my lord; 'tis yours: Jove send  
her

A better guiding spirit!—What need these hands?—  
You that are thus so tender o'er his follies,  
Will never do him good, not one of you.  
So, so:—Farewell; we are gone. [*Exit.*]

*Leon.* Thou, traitor, hast set on thy wife to this.—  
My child? away with't!—even thou, that hast  
A heart so tender o'er it, take it hence,  
And see it instantly consum'd with fire;  
Even thou, and none but thou. Take it up straight:  
Within this hour bring me word 'tis done  
(And by good testimony,) or I'll seize thy life,  
With what thou else call'st thine: If thou refuse,  
And wilt encounter with my wrath, say so;  
The bastard brains with these my proper hands  
Shall I dash out. Go, take it to the fire;  
For thou sett'st on thy wife.

*Ant.* I did not, sir:  
These lords, my noble fellows, if they please,  
Can clear me in't.

*1 Lord.* We can; my royal liege,  
He is not guilty of her coming hither.

*Leon.* You are liars all.

*1 Lord.* 'Beseech your highness, give us better  
credit:

We have always truly serv'd you; and beseech  
So to esteem of us: And on our knees we beg  
(As recompense of our dear services,

Past, and to come,) that you do change this purpose ;

Which, being so horrible, so bloody, must  
Lead on to some foul issue : We all kneel.

*Leon.* I am a feather for each wind that blows :—  
Shall I live on, to see this bastard kneel  
And call me father ? Better burn it now,  
Than curse it then. But be it ; let it live :  
It shall not neither.—You, sir, come you hither ;

[*To Antigonus.*

You, that have been so tenderly officious  
With lady Margery, your midwife, there,  
To save this bastard's life :—for 'tis a bastard,  
So sure as this beard's grey,—what will you adventure

To save this brat's life ?

*Ant.* Any thing, my lord,  
That my ability may undergo,  
And nobleness impose : at least, thus much ;  
I'll pawn the little blood which I have left,  
To save the innocent : any thing possible.

*Leon.* It shall be possible : Swear by this sword,<sup>1</sup>  
Thou wilt perform my bidding.

*Ant.* I will, my lord.

*Leon.* Mark, and perform it ; (seest thou ?) for  
the fail

Of any point in't shall not only be  
Death to thyself, but to thy lewd-tongu'd wife ;  
Whom, for this time, we pardon. We enjoin thee,  
As thou art liegeman to us, that thou carry  
This female bastard hence ; and that thou bear it  
To some remote and desert place, quite out  
Of our dominions ; and that there thou leave it,  
Without more mercy, to its own protection,  
And favour of the climate. As by strange fortune  
It came to us, I do in justice charge thee,—  
On thy soul's peril, and thy body's torture,—

(1) It was anciently a practice to swear by the  
cross at the hilt of a sword.



That thou commend it strangely to some place,<sup>1</sup>  
Where chance may nurse, or end it: Take it up.

*Ant.* I swear to do this, though a present death  
Had been more merciful.—Come on, poor babe:  
Some powerful spirit instruct the kites and ravens,  
To be thy nurses! Wolves, and bears, they say,  
Casting their savageness aside, have done  
Like offices of pity.—Sir, be prosperous  
In more than this deed doth require! and blessing,  
Against this cruelty, fight on thy side.—  
Poor thing, condemn'd to loss! [*Ex. with the child.*

*Leon.*

No, I'll not rear

Another's issue.

*1 Atten.*

Please your highness, posts,  
From those you sent to the oracle, are come  
An hour since: Cleomenes and Dion,  
Being well arriv'd from Delphos, are both landed,  
Hasting to the court.

*1 Lord.*

So please you, sir, their speed  
Hath been beyond account.

*Leon.*

Twenty-three days  
They have been absent: 'Tis good speed; foretels,  
The great Apollo suddenly will have  
The truth of this appear. Prepare you, lords;  
Summon a session, that we may arraign  
Our most disloyal lady: for, as she hath  
Been publicly accus'd, so shall she have  
A just and open trial. While she lives,  
My heart will be a burden to me. Leave me;  
And think upon my bidding. [*Exeunt.*

---

### ACT III.

*SCENE I.—The same. A street in some Town.*  
*Enter Cleomenes and Dion.*

*Cleo.* The climate's delicate; the air most sweet;

(1) *i. e.* Commit it to some place as a stranger.

Fertile the isle ; the temple much surpassing  
The common praise it bears.

*Dion.* I shall report,  
For most it caught me, the celestial habits  
(Methinks, I so should term them,) and the reverence

Of the grave wearers. O, the sacrifice!  
How ceremonious, solemn, and unearthly  
It was i'the offering !

*Cleo.* But, of all, the burst  
And the ear-deafening voice o'the oracle,  
Kin to Jove's thunder, so surpris'd my sense,  
That I was nothing.

*Dion.* If the event o'the journey  
Prove as successful to the queen,—O, be't so !—  
As it hath been to us, rare, pleasant, speedy,  
The time is worth the use on't.<sup>1</sup>

*Cleo.* Great Apollo,  
Turn all to the best ! These proclamations,  
So forcing faults upon Hermione,  
I little like.

*Dion.* The violent carriage of it  
Will clear, or end the business : When the oracle,  
(Thus by Apollo's great divine seal'd up,)  
Shall the contents discover, something rare,  
Even then will rush to knowledge.—Go, fresh  
horses ;—  
And gracious be the issue !

*SCENE II.—The same. A court of justice.*  
*Leontes, Lords, and Officers, appear properly seated.*

*Leon.* This sessions (to our great grief, we pronounce,)  
Even pushes 'gainst our heart : The party tried,  
The daughter of a king ; our wife ; and one  
Of us too much belov'd.—Let us be clear'd

(1) *i. e.* Our journey has recompensed us the  
time we spent in it.

Of being tyrannous, since we so openly  
 Proceed in justice ; which shall have due course,  
 Even<sup>1</sup> to the guilt, or the purgation.—  
 Produce the prisoner.

*Offi.* It is his highness' pleasure, that the queen  
 Appear in person here in court.—Silence !

*Hermione is brought in, guarded; Paulina and  
 Ladies, attending.*

*Leon.* Read the indictment.

*Offi.* *Hermione, queen to the worthy Leontes,  
 king of Sicilia, thou art here accused and ar-  
 raigned of high treason, in committing adultery  
 with Polixenes, king of Bohemia ; and conspiring  
 with Camillo, to take away the life of our sovereign  
 lord the king, thy royal husband ; the pretence<sup>2</sup>  
 whereof being by circumstances partly laid open,  
 thou, Hermione, contrary to the faith and alle-  
 giance of a true subject, didst counsel and aid  
 them, for their better safety, to fly away by night.*

*Her.* Since what I am to say, must be but that  
 Which contradicts my accusation ; and  
 The testimony on my part, no other  
 But what comes from myself ; it shall scarce boot  
 me

To say, *Not guilty* : mine integrity,  
 Being counted falsehood,<sup>3</sup> shall, as I express it,  
 Be so receiv'd. But thus,—If powers divine  
 Behold our human actions (as they do,)  
 I doubt not then, but innocence shall make  
 False accusation blush, and tyranny  
 Tremble at patience.—You, my lord, best know  
 (Who least will seem to do so,) my past life  
 Hath been as continent, as chaste, as true,  
 As I am now unhappy ; which is more  
 Than history can pattern, though devis'd,  
 And play'd, to take spectators ; For behold me,—  
 A fellow of the royal bed, which owe<sup>4</sup>

(1) Equal. (2) Scheme laid. (3) Treachery.

(4) Own, possess.

A moiety of the throne, a great king's daughter,  
The mother to a hopeful prince,—here standing  
To prate and talk for life, and honour, 'fore  
Who please to come and hear. For life, I prize it  
As I weigh grief, which I would spare : for honour,  
'Tis a derivative from me to mine,  
And only that I stand for. I appeal  
To your own conscience, sir, before Polixenes  
Came to your court, how I was in your grace,  
How merited to be so ; since he came,  
With what encounter so uncurrent I  
Have strain'd, to appear thus : if one jot beyond  
The bound of honour ; or, in act, or will,  
That way inclining ; harden'd be the hearts  
Of all that hear me, and my near'st of kin  
Cry, Fie upon my grave !

*Leon.* I ne'er heard yet,  
That any of these bolder vices wanted  
Less impudence to gainsay what they did,  
Than to perform it first.

*Her.* That's true enough ;  
Though 'tis a saying, sir, not due to me.

*Leon.* You will not own it.

*Her.* More than mistress of,  
Which comes to me in name of fault, I must not  
At all acknowledge. For Polixenes  
(With whom I am accus'd,) I do confess,  
I lov'd him, as in honour he requir'd ;  
With such a kind of love, as might become  
A lady like me ; with a love, even such,  
So, and no other, as yourself commanded :  
Which not to have done, I think, had been in me  
Both disobedience and ingratitude,  
To you, and toward your friend ; whose love had  
spoke,  
Even since it could speak, from an infant, freely,  
That it was yours. Now, for conspiracy,  
I know not how it tastes ; though it be dish'd  
For me to try how : all I know of it,  
Is, that Camillo was an honest man ;

And, why he left your court, the gods themselves,  
Wotting no more than I, are ignorant.

*Leon.* You knew of his departure, as you know  
What you have underta'en to do in his absence.

*Her.* Sir,  
You speak a language that I understand not :  
My life stands in the level<sup>1</sup> of your dreams,  
Which I'll lay down.

*Leon.* Your actions are my dreams ;  
You had a bastard by Polixenes,  
And I but dream'd it :—As you were past all shame,  
(Those of your fact<sup>2</sup> are so,) so past all truth :  
Which to deny, concerns more than avails :

For as  
Thy brat hath been cast out, like to itself,  
No father owning it (which is, indeed,  
More criminal in thee, than it,) so thou  
Shalt feel our justice ; in whose easiest passage,  
Look for no less than death.

*Her.* Sir, spare your threats :  
The bug, which you would fright me with, I seek.  
To me can life be no commodity :  
The crown and comfort of my life, your favour,  
I do give lost ; for I do feel it gone,  
But know not how it went : My second joy,  
And first-fruits of my body, from his presence,  
I am barr'd, like one infectious : My third com-  
fort,

Starr'd most unluckily,<sup>3</sup> is from my breast,  
The innocent milk in its most innocent mouth,  
Haled out to murder : Myself on every post  
Proclaim'd a strumpet ; With immodest hatred  
To child-bed privilege denied, which 'longs  
To women of all fashion :—Lastly, hurried  
Here to this place, i'the open air, before

(1) Is within the reach.

(2) They who have done like you.

(3) Ill-starred ; born under an inauspicious  
planet.

I have got strength of limit.<sup>1</sup> Now, my liege,  
Tell me what blessings I have here alive,  
That I should fear to die? Therefore, proceed.  
But yet hear this; mistake me not;—No! life,  
I prize it not a straw:—but for mine honour  
(Which I would free,) if I shall be condemn'd  
Upon surmises; all proofs sleeping else,  
But what your jealousies awake; I tell you,  
'Tis rigour, and not law.—Your honours all,  
I do refer me to the oracle;  
Apollo be my judge.

1 Lord. This your request  
Is altogether just: therefore, bring forth,  
And in Apollo's name, his oracle.

[*Exeunt certain Officers.*]

Her. The emperor of Russia was my father:  
O, that he were alive, and here beholding  
His daughter's trial! that he did but see  
The flatness of my misery; yet with eyes  
Of pity, not revenge!

*Re-enter Officers with Cleomenes and Dion.*

Offi. You here shall swear upon this sword of  
justice,  
That you, Cleomenes and Dion, have  
Been both at Delphos; and from thence have  
brought  
This seal'd-up oracle, by the hand deliver'd  
Of great Apollo's priest; and that, since then,  
You have not dar'd to break the holy seal,  
Nor read the secrets in't.

Cleo. Dior. All this we swear.

Leon. Break up the seals, and read.

Offi. [*Reads.*] *Hermione is chaste, Polixenes  
blameless, Camillo a true subject, Leontes a jealous  
tyrant, his innocent babe truly begotten; and*

(1) *i. e.* The degree of strength which it is customary to acquire before women are suffered to go abroad after child-bearing.

*the king shall live without an heir, if that, which is lost, be not found.*

*Lords.* Now blessed be the great Apollo!

*Her.*

Praised!

*Leon.* Hast thou read truth?

*Offi.*

Ay, my lord; even so

As it is here set down.

*Leon.* There is no truth at all i'the oracle:  
The sessions shall proceed; this is mere falsehood.

*Enter a Servant, hastily.*

*Serv.* My lord the king, the king!

*Leon.*

What is the business?

*Serv.* O sir, I shall be hated to report it:  
The prince your son, with mere conceit and fear  
Of the queen's speed,<sup>1</sup> is gone.

*Leon.*

How! gone?

*Serv.*

Is dead.

*Leon.* Apollo's angry; and the heavens themselves

Do strike at my injustice. [*Hermione faints.*] How  
now there?

*Paul.* This news is mortal to the queen:—Look  
down,

And see what death is doing.

*Leon.*

Take her hence:

Her heart is but o'ercharg'd; she will recover.—  
I have too much believ'd mine own suspicion:—  
'Beseech you, tenderly apply to her  
Some remedies for life.—Apollo, pardon

[*Exeunt Paulina and Ladies, with Her.*

My great profaneness 'gainst thine oracle!—

I'll reconcile me to Polixenes;

New woo my queen; recall the good Camillo;

Whom I proclaim a man of truth, of mercy:

For, being transported by my jealousies

To bloody thoughts and to revenge, I chose

Camillo for the minister, to poison

(1) Of the event of the queen's trial.

My friend Polixenes ; which had been done,  
But that the good mind of Camillo tardied  
My swift command, though I with death, and with  
Reward, did threaten and encourage him,  
Not doing it, and being done : he, most humane,  
And fill'd with honour, to my kingly guest  
Unclasp'd my practice ; quit his fortunes here,  
Which you knew great ; and to the certain hazard  
Of all incertainties himself commended,<sup>1</sup>  
No richer than his honour :—How he glisters  
Thorough my rust ! and how his piety  
Does my deeds make the blacker !

*Re-enter Paulina.*

*Paul.* Wo the while !  
O, cut my lace ; lest my heart, cracking it,  
Break too !

*I Lord.* What fit is this, good lady ?

*Paul.* What studied torments, tyrant, hast forme ?  
What wheels ? racks ? fires ? What flaying ? boiling,  
In leads, or oils ? what old, or newer torture  
Must I receive ; whose every word deserves  
To taste of thy most worst ? Thy tyranny  
Together working with thy jealousies,—  
Fancies too weak for boys, too green and idle  
For girls of nine !—O, think, what they have done,  
And then run mad, indeed ; stark mad ! for all  
Thy by-gone fooleries were but spices of it.  
That thou betray'dst Polixenes, 'twas nothing ;  
That did but show thee, of a fool, inconstant,  
And damnable ungrateful : nor was't much,  
Thou would'st have poison'd good Camillo's honour,  
To have him kill a king ; poor trespasses,  
More monstrous standing by : whereof I reckon  
The casting forth to crows thy baby daughter,  
To be or none, or little ; though a devil  
Would have shed water out of fire,<sup>1</sup> ere done't :

(1) Committed.

(1) *i. e.* A devil would have shed tears of pity  
ere he would have perpetrated such an action.



Nor is't directly laid to thee, the death  
 Of the young prince ; whose honourable thoughts  
 (Thoughts high for one so tender,) cleft the heart  
 That could conceive, a gross and foolish sire  
 Blemish'd his gracious dam : this is not, no,  
 Laid to thy answer : But the last,—O, lords,  
 When I have said, cry, wo !—the queen, the queen,  
 The sweetest, dearest, creature's dead ; and ven-  
     geance for't  
 Not dropp'd down yet.

1 *Lord.* The higher powers forbid !

*Paul.* I say, she's dead ; I'll swear't : if word,  
     nor oath,

Prevail not, go and see : if you can bring  
 Tincture, or lustre, in her lip, her eye,  
 Heat outwardly, or breath within, I'll serve you  
 As I would do the gods.—But, O thou tyrant !  
 Do not repent these things ; for they are heavier  
 Than all thy woes can stir : therefore, betake thee  
 To nothing but despair. A thousand knees  
 Ten thousand years together, naked, fasting,  
 Upon a barren mountain, and still winter  
 In storm perpetual, could not move the gods  
 To look that way thou wert.

*Leon.*

Go on, go on :

Thou canst not speak too much ; I have deserv'd  
 All tongues to talk their bitterest.

1 *Lord.*

Say no more ;

Howe'er the business goes, you have made fault  
 I'the boldness of your speech.

*Paul.*

I am sorry for't ;

All faults I make, when I shall come to know them,  
 I do repent : Alas, I have show'd too much  
 The rashness of a woman : he is touch'd  
 To the noble heart.—What's gone, and what's past  
     help,

Should be past grief : Do not receive affliction

At my petition, I beseech you ; rather

Let me be punish'd, that have minded you

Of what you should forget. Now, good my liege,

Sir, royal sir, forgive a foolish woman :  
The love I bore your queen,—lo, fool again !—  
I'll speak of her no more, nor of your children ;  
I'll not remember you of my own lord,  
Who is lost too : Take your patience to you,  
And I'll say nothing.

*Leon.* Thou didst speak but well,  
When most the truth ; which I receive much better  
Than to be pitied of thee. Pr'ythee, bring me  
To the dead bodies of my queen, and son :  
One grave shall be for both ; upon them shall  
The causes of their death appear, unto  
Our shame perpetual : Once a day I'll visit  
The chapel where they lie ; and tears, shed there,  
Shall be my recreation : So long as  
Nature will bear up with this exercise,  
So long I daily vow to use it. Come,  
And lead me to these sorrows. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—Bohemia. *A desert country near the sea. Enter Antigonus, with the child ; and a Mariner.*

*Ant.* Thou art perfect ! then, our ship hath  
touch'd upon  
The deserts of Bohemia ?

*Mar.* Ay, my lord : and fear  
We have landed in ill time ; the skies look grimly,  
And threaten present blusters. In my conscience,  
The heavens with that we have in hand are angry,  
And frown upon us.

*Ant.* Their sacred wills be done !—Go, get  
aboard ;  
Look to thy bark ; I'll not be long, before  
I call upon thee.

*Mar.* Make your best haste ; and go not  
Too far i'the land : 'tis like to be loud weather ;  
Besides, this place is famous for the creatures  
Of prey that keep upon't.

*Ant.* Go thou away :

(1) Well-assured.

I'll follow instantly.

*Mar.* I am glad at heart  
To be so rid o'the business. [Exit.

*Ant.* Come, poor babe :—  
I have heard (but not believ'd,) the spirits of the dead  
May walk again : if such thing be, thy mother  
Appear'd to me last night ; for ne'er was dream  
So like a waking. To me comes a creature,  
Sometimes her head on one side, some another ;  
I never saw a vessel of like sorrow,  
So fill'd, and so becoming : in pure white robes,  
Like very sanctity, she did approach  
My cabin where I lay : thrice bow'd before me ;  
And, gasping to begin some speech, her eyes  
Became two spouts : the fury spent, anon  
Did this break from her : *Good Antigonus,  
Since fate, against thy better disposition,  
Hath made thy person for the thrower-out  
Of my poor babe, according to thine oath,—  
Places remote enough are in Bohemia,  
There weep, and leave it crying ; and, for the babe  
Is counted lost for ever, Perdita,  
I pr'ythee, call't ; for this ungentle business,  
Put on thee by my lord, thou ne'er shalt see  
Thy wife Paulina more :—and so, with shrieks,  
She melted into air. Affrighted much,  
I did in time collect myself ; and thought  
This was so, and no slumber. Dreams are toys :  
Yet, for this once, yea, superstitiously,  
I will be squar'd by this. I do believe,  
Hermione hath suffer'd death ; and that  
Apollo would, this being indeed the issue  
Of king Polixenes ; it should here be laid,  
Either for life, or death, upon the earth  
Of its right father.——Blossom, speed thee well !*

[Laying down the child.

There lie ; and there thy character :<sup>1</sup> there these ;

[Laying down a bundle.

(1) The writing afterward discovered with Perdita.

Which may, if fortune please, both breed thee,  
pretty,  
And still rest thine.—The storm begins:—Poor  
wretch,

That, for thy mother's fault, art thus expos'd  
To loss, and what may follow!—Weep I cannot,  
But my heart bleeds: and most accurs'd am I,  
To be by oath enjoin'd to this.—Farewell!  
The day frowns more and more; thou art like to  
have

A lullaby too rough: I never saw  
The heavens so dim by day. A savage clamour?—  
Well may I get aboard!—This is the chace;  
I am gone for ever. [*Exit, pursued by a bear.*]

*Enter an old Shepherd.*

*Shep.* I would, there were no age between ten  
and three-and-twenty; or that youth would sleep  
out the rest: for there is nothing in the between  
but getting wenches with child, wronging the an-  
cienry, stealing, fighting.—Hark you now!—  
Would any but these boiled brains of nineteen, and  
two-and-twenty, hunt this weather? They have  
scared away two of my best sheep; which, I fear,  
the wolf will sooner find, than the master: if any  
where I have them, 'tis by the sea-side, browsing  
on ivy. Good luck, an't be thy will! what have we  
here? [*Taking up the child.*] Mercy on's, a  
barne;<sup>1</sup> a very pretty barne! A boy, or a child,<sup>2</sup> I  
wonder? A pretty one; a very pretty one: Sure,  
some scape: though I am not bookish, yet I can  
read waiting-gentlewoman in the scape. This has  
been some stair-work, some trunk-work, some be-  
hind-door-work: they were warmer that got this,  
than the poor thing is here. I'll take it up for pity:  
yet I'll tarry till my son come; he hollaed but  
even now. Whoa, ho hoa!

(1) Child.      (2) Female infant.

*Enter Clown.*

*Clo.* Hilloa, loa !

*Shep.* What, art so near? If thou'lt see a thing to talk on when thou art dead and rotten, come hither. What ailest thou, man?

*Clo.* I have seen two such sights, by sea, and by land ;—but I am not to say, it is a sea, for it is now the sky ; betwixt the firmament and it, you cannot thrust a bodkin's point.

*Shep.* Why, boy, how is it?

*Clo.* I would, you did but see how it chafes, how it rages, how it takes up the shore ! but that's not to the point : O, the most piteous cry of the poor souls ! sometimes to see 'em, and not to see 'em : now the ship boring the moon with her main-mast ; and anon swallowed with yest and froth, as you'd thrust a cork into a hogshead. And then for the land service,—To see how the bear tore out his shoulder-bone ; how he cried to me for help, and said, his name was Antigonus, a nobleman :—But to make an end of the ship :—to see how the sea flap-dragoned ! it :—but, first, how the poor souls roared, and the sea mocked them ;—and how the poor gentleman roar'd, and the bear mocked him, both roaring louder than the sea, or weather.

*Shep.* 'Name of mercy, when was this, boy?

*Clo.* Now, now ; I have not winked since I saw these sights : the men are not yet cold under water, nor the bear half dined on the gentleman ; he's at it now.

*Shep.* Would I had been by, to have helped the old man !

*Clo.* I would you had been by the ship-side, to have helped her ; there your charity would have lacked footing.

*[Aside.*

*Shep.* Heavy matters ! heavy matters ! but look thee here, boy. Now bless thyself ; thou met'st with things dying, I with things new born. Here's

(1) Swallowed

a sight for thee; look thee, a bearing-cloth! for a squire's child! Look thee here; take up, take up, boy; open't. So, let's see; It was told me, I should be rich by the fairies: this is some changeling:—open't: What's within, boy?

*Clo.* You're a made old man; if the sins of your youth are forgiven you, you're well to live. Gold! all gold!

*Shep.* This is fairy gold, boy, and 'twill prove so: up with it, keep it close; home, home, the next way. We are lucky, boy; and to be so still requires nothing but secrecy.—Let my sheep go:—Come, good boy, the next way home.

*Clo.* Go you the next way with your findings; I'll go see if the bear be gone from the gentleman, and how much he hath eaten: they are never curst,<sup>4</sup> but when they are hungry: if there be any of him left, I'll bury it.

*Shep.* That's a good deed: If thou may'st discern by that which is left of him, what he is, fetch me to the sight of him.

*Clo.* Marry, will I; and you shall help to put him i'the ground.

*Shep.* 'Tis a lucky day, boy; and we'll do good deeds on't. [*Exeunt.*]

---

## ACT IV.

*Enter Time, as Chorus.*

*Time.* I,—that please some, try all; both joy,  
and terror,  
Of good and bad; that make, and unfold error,—

(1) The mantle in which a child was carried to be baptized.

(2) Some child left behind by the fairies, in the room of one which they had stolen.

(3) Nearest. (4) Mischievous.

Now take upon me, in the name of Time,  
 To use my wings. Impute it not a crime,  
 To me, or my swift passage, that I slide  
 O'er sixteen years, and leave the growth untried  
 Of that wide gap;<sup>1</sup> since it is in my power  
 To o'erthrow law, and in one self-born hour  
 To plant and o'erwhelm custom: Let me pass  
 The same I am, ere ancient'st order was,  
 Or what is now receiv'd: I witness to  
 The times that brought them in; so shall I do  
 To the freshest things now reigning; and make stale  
 The glistening of this present, as my tale  
 Now seems to it. Your patience this allowing,  
 I turn my glass; and give my scene such growing,  
 As you had slept between. Leontes leaving  
 The effects of his fond jealousies; so grieving,  
 That he shuts up himself; imagine me,<sup>2</sup>  
 Gentle spectators, that I now may be  
 In fair Bohemia; and remember well,  
 I mention'd a son o'the king's, which Florizel  
 I now name to you; and with speed so pace  
 To speak of Perdita, now grown in grace  
 Equal with wond'ring: What of her ensues,  
 I list not prophesy; but let Time's news  
 Be known, when 'tis brought forth:—a shepherd's  
 daughter,  
 And what to her adheres, which follows after,  
 Is the argument<sup>3</sup> of Time: Of this allow,<sup>4</sup>  
 If ever you have spent time worse ere now;  
 If never yet, that Time himself doth say,  
 He wishes earnestly, you never may. [Exit.

SCENE I.—*The same. A room in the palace of Polixenes. Enter Polixenes and Camillo.*

Pol. I pray thee, good Camillo, be no more im-

(1) *i. e.* Leave unexamined the progress of the intermediate time which filled up the gap in Perdita's story.

(2) Imagine for me. (3) Subject. (4) Approve.

portunate ; 'tis a sickness, denying thee any thing ; a death, to grant this.

*Cam.* It is fifteen years, since I saw my country : though I have, for the most part, been aired abroad, I desire to lay my bones there. Besides, the penitent king, my master, hath sent for me : to whose feeling sorrows I might be some allay, or I o'erween<sup>1</sup> to think so ; which is another spur to my departure.

*Pol.* As thou lovest me, Camillo, wipe not out the rest of thy services, by leaving me now : the need I have of thee, thine own goodness hath made ; better not to have had thee, than thus to want thee : thou, having made me businesses, which none without thee can sufficiently manage, must either stay to execute them thyself, or take away with thee the very services thou hast done : which if I have not enough considered (as too much I cannot,) to be more thankful to thee, shall be my study ; and my profit therein, the heaping friendships.<sup>2</sup> Of that fatal country, Sicilia, pr'y thee speak no more : whose very naming punishes me with the remembrance of that penitent, as thou call'st him, and reconciled king, my brother ; whose loss of his most precious queen, and children, are even now to be afresh lamented. Say to me, when saw'st thou the prince Florizel my son ? Kings are no less unhappy, their issue not being gracious, than they are in losing them, when they have approved their virtues.

*Cam.* Sir, it is three days, since I saw the prince. What his happier affairs may be, are to me unknown : but I have, missingly, noted,<sup>3</sup> he is of late much retired from court ; and is less frequent to his princely exercises, than formerly he hath appeared.

*Pol.* I have considered so much, Camillo ; and with some care ; so far, that I have eyes under my

- (1) Think too highly.      (2) Friendly offices  
(3) Observed at intervals.



service, which look upon his removedness from whom I have this intelligence ; That he is seldom from the house of a most homely shepherd ; a man, they say, that from very nothing, and beyond the imagination of his neighbours, is grown into an unspeakable estate.

*Cam.* I have heard, sir, of such a man, who hath a daughter of most rare note : the report of her is extended more, than can be thought to begin from such a cottage.

*Pol.* That's likewise part of my intelligence. But, I fear the angle that plucks our son thither. Thou shalt accompany us to the place : where we will, not appearing what we are, have some question<sup>1</sup> with the shepherd ; from whose simplicity, I think it not uneasy to get the cause of my son's resort thither. Pr'ythee, be my present partner in this business, and lay aside the thoughts of Sicilia.

*Cam.* I willingly obey your command.

*Pol.* My best Camillo !—We must disguise ourselves. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—*The same. A road near the Shepherd's cottage. Enter Autolycus, singing.*

*When daffodils begin to peer,—*

*With, heigh ! the doxy over the dale,—*

*Why, then comes in the sweet o'the year ;*

*For the red blood reigns in the winter's pale.<sup>2</sup>*

*The white sheet bleaching on the hedge,—*

*With, hey ! the sweet birds, O, how they sing !—*

*Doth set my pugging<sup>3</sup> tooth on edge ;*

*For a quart of ale is a dish for a king.*

*The lark, that tirra-lirra chants,—*

*With, hey ! with, hey ! the thrush and the jay :—*

*Are summer-songs for me and my aunts,<sup>4</sup>*

*While we lie tumbling in the hay.*

(1) Talk.

(2) *i. e.* The spring blood reigns over the parts lately under the dominion of winter.

(3) Tl'ievish.

(4) Doxies.

I have served prince Florizel, and, in my time, wore three-pile ;<sup>1</sup> but now I am out of service :

*But shall I go mourn for that, my dear ?*

*The pale moon shines by night :*

*And when I wander here and there,*

*I then do most go right.*

*If tinkers may have leave to live,*

*And bear the sow-skin budget ;*

*Then my account I well may give,*

*And in the stocks avouch it.*

My traffic is sheets ; when the kite builds, look to lesser linen. My father named me, Autolycus ; who, being, as I am, littered under Mercury, was likewise a snapper-up of unconsidered trifles : With die, and drab, I purchased this caparison ; and my revenue is the silly cheat :<sup>2</sup> Gallows, and knock, are too powerful on the highway : beating, and hanging, are terrors to me ; for the life to come, I sleep out the thought of it.—A prize ! a prize !

*Enter Clown.*

*Clo.* Let me see :—Every 'leven wether—tods ;<sup>3</sup> every tod yields—pound and odd shilling : fifteen hundred shorn,—What comes the wool to ?

*Aut.* If the springe hold, the cock's mine.

*[Aside.*

*Clo.* I cannot do't without counters.<sup>4</sup>—Let me see ; what I am to buy for our sheep-shearing feast ? *Three pound of sugar ; five pound of currants , rice*—What will this sister of mine do with rice ? But my father hath made her mistress of the feast, and she lays it on. She hath made me four-and-twenty nosegays for the shearers : three-man song-

(1) Rich velvet. (2) Picking pockets.

(3) Every eleven sheep will produce a tod or twenty-eight pounds of wool.

(4) Circular pieces of base metal, anciently used by the illiterate, to adjust their reckonings.

men<sup>1</sup> all, and very good ones; but they are most of them means<sup>2</sup> and bases: but one Puritan amongst them, and he sings psalms to hornpipes. I must have *saffron*, to colour the warden<sup>3</sup> pies; *mace*,—*dates*,—none; that's out of my note: *nutmegs*, *seven*; *a race*, or *two*, of *ginger*; but that I may beg;—*four pound of prunes*, and as many of *raisins o'the sun*.

*Aut.* O, that ever I was born!

[*Grovelling on the ground.*]

*Clo.* I'the name of me,—

*Aut.* O, help me, help me! pluck but off these rags; and then, death, death!

*Clo.* Alack, poor soul! thou hast need of more rags to lay on thee, rather than have these off.

*Aut.* O, sir, the loathsomeness of them offends me more than the stripes I have received; which are mighty ones and millions.

*Clo.* Alas, poor man! a million of beating may come to a great matter.

*Aut.* I am robbed, sir, and beaten; my money and apparel ta'en from me, and these detestable things put upon me.

*Clo.* What, by a horse-man, or a foot-man?

*Aut.* A foot-man, sweet sir, a foot-man.

*Clo.* Indeed, he should be a foot-man, by the garments he has left with thee; if this be a horse-man's coat, it hath seen very hot service. Lend me thy hand, I'll help thee: come, lend me thy hand.

[*Helping him up.*]

*Aut.* O! good sir, tenderly, oh!

*Clo.* Alas, poor soul.

*Aut.* O, good sir, softly, good sir: I fear, sir, my shoulder-blade is out.

*Clo.* How now? canst stand?

*Aut.* Softly, dear sir; [*Picks his pocket.*] good sir, softly: you ha' done me a charitable office.

(1) Singers of catches in three parts.

(2) Tenors.

(3) A species of pears.

*Clo.* Dost lack any money? I have a little money for thee.

*Aut.* No, good sweet sir; no, I beseech you, sir: I have a kinsman not past three-quarters of a mile hence, unto whom I was going; I shall there have money, or any thing I want: Offer me no money, I pray you; that kills my heart.

*Clo.* What manner of fellow was he that robbed you?

*Aut.* A fellow, sir, that I have known to go about with trol-my-dames:<sup>1</sup> I knew him once a servant of the prince; I cannot tell, good sir, for which of his virtues it was, but he was certainly whipped out of the court.

*Clo.* His vices, you would say; there's no virtue whipped out of the court: they cherish it, to make it stay there; and yet it will no more but abide.<sup>2</sup>

*Aut.* Vices I would say, sir. I know this man well: he hath been since an ape-bearer; then a process-server, a bailiff; then he compassed a motion<sup>3</sup> of the prodigal son, and married a tinker's wife within a mile where my land and living lies; and, having flown over many knavish professions, he settled only in rogue: some call him Autolycus.

*Clo.* Out upon him! Prig,<sup>4</sup> for my life, prig: he haunts wakes, fairs, and bear-baitings.

*Aut.* Very true, sir; he, sir, he; that's the rogue, that put me into this apparel.

*Clo.* Not a more cowardly rogue in all Bohemia; if you had but looked big, and spit at him, he'd have run.

*Aut.* I must confess to you, sir, I am no fighter. I am false of heart that way; and that he knew, I warrant him.

*Clo.* How do you now?

*Aut.* Sweet sir, much better than I was; I can

(1) The machine used in the game of pigeon-holcs.

(2) Sojourn. (3) Puppet-show. (4) Thief.

stand, and walk : I will even take my leave of you, and pace softly towards my kinsman's.

*Clo.* Shall I bring thee on the way ?

*Aut.* No, good-faced sir ; no, sweet sir.

*Clo.* Then fare thee well ; I must go buy spices for our sheep-shearing.

*Aut.* Prosper you, sweet sir !—[*Exit Clown.*]  
Your purse is not hot enough to purchase your spice. I'll be with you at your sheep-shearing too : If I make not this cheat bring out another, and the shearers prove sheep, let me be unrolled, and my name put in the book of virtue !

*Jog on, jog on, the foot-path way,*

*And merrily hent<sup>1</sup> the stile-a :*

*A merry heart goes all the day,*

*Your sad tires in a mile-a.*

[*Exit.*]

**SCENE III.**—*The same. A shepherd's cottage.*

*Enter Florizel and Perdita.*

*Flo.* These your unusual weeds to each part of you Do give a life : no shepherdess ; but Flora, Peering in April's front. This your sheep-shearing Is as a meeting of the petty gods, And you the queen on't.

*Per.*

Sir, my gracious lord,  
To chide at your extremes,<sup>2</sup> it not becomes me ;  
O, pardon, that I name them : your high self,  
The gracious mark<sup>3</sup> o'the land, you have obscur'd  
With a swain's wearing ; and me, poor lowly maid,  
Most goddess-like prank'd up<sup>4</sup> : But that our feasts  
In every mess have folly, and the feeders  
Digest it with a custom, I should blush,  
To see you so attired ; sworn, I think,  
To show myself a glass.

*Flo.*

I bless the time,

(1) Take hold of. (2) Excesses.

(3) Object of all men's notice.

(4) Dressed with ostentation.

When my good falcon made her flight across  
Thy father's ground.

*Per.* Now Jove afford you cause !  
To me, the difference<sup>1</sup> forges dread ; your greatness  
Hath not been us'd to fear. Even now I tremble  
To think, your father, by some accident,  
Should pass this way, as you did : O, the fates !  
How would he look, to see his work, so noble,  
Vilely bound up ? What would he say ? Or how  
Should I, in these my borrow'd flaunts, behold  
The sternness of his presence ?

*Flo.* Apprehend  
Nothing but jollity. The gods themselves,  
Humbling their deities to love, have taken  
The shapes of beasts upon them : Jupiter  
Became a bull, and bellow'd ; the green Neptune  
A ram, and bleated ; and the fire-rob'd god,  
Golden Apollo, a poor humble swain,  
As I seem now : Their transformations  
Were never for a piece of beauty rarer ;  
Nor in a way so chaste : since my desires  
Run not before mine honour ; nor my lusts  
Burn hotter than my faith.

*Per.* O but, dear sir,  
Your resolution cannot hold, when 'tis  
Oppos'd, as it must be, by the power o'the king :  
One of these two must be necessities,  
Which then will speak ; that you must change this  
purpose,  
Or I my life.

*Flo.* Thou dearest Perdita,  
With these forc'd<sup>2</sup> thoughts, I pr'ythee, darken not  
The mirth o'the feast : Or I'll be thine, my fair,  
Or not my father's : for I cannot be  
Mine own, nor any thing to any, if  
I be not thine : to this I am most constant,  
Though destiny say, *No*. Be merry, gentle ;  
Strangle such thoughts as these, with any thing

(1) *i. e.* Of station.

(2) Far-fetched.

That you behold the while. Your guests are coming :

Lift up your countenance ; as it were the day  
Of celebration of that nuptial, which  
We two have sworn shall come.

*Per.*

O lady fortune,

Stand you auspicious !

*Enter Shepherd, with Polixenes and Camillo, disguised ; Clown, Mopsa, Dorcas, and others.*

*Flo.*

See, your guests approach :

Address yourself to entertain them sprightly,  
And let's be red with mirth.

*Shep.* Fie, daughter ! when my old wife liv'd,  
upon

This day, she was both pantler, butler, cook ;  
Both dame and servant : welcom'd all ; serv'd all :  
Would sing her song, and dance her turn : now here,  
At upper end o'the table, now, i'the middle ;  
On his shoulder, and his : her face o'fire  
With labour ; and the thing she took to quench it,  
She would to each one sip : You are retir'd,  
As if you were a feasted one, and not  
The hostess of the meeting : Pray you, bid  
These unknown friends to us welcome : for it is  
A way to make us better friends, more known.  
Come, quench your blushes ; and present yourself  
That which you are, mistress o'the feast : Come on,  
And bid us welcome to your sheep-shearing,  
As your good flock shall prosper.

*Per.*

Welcome, sir ! [*To Pol.*

It is my father's will, I should take on me

The hostess-ship o'the day :—You're welcome, sir !

[*To Camillo.*

Give me those flowers there, Dorcas.—Reverend  
sirs,

For you there's rosemary, and rue ; these keep  
Seeming, and savour,<sup>1</sup> all the winter long

(1) Likeness and smell.

Grace, and remembrance, be to you both,  
And welcome to our shearing !

*Pol.* *Shepherdess*  
(A fair one are you,) well you fit our ages  
With flowers of winter.

*Per.* Sir, the year growing ancient,—  
Not yet on summer's death, nor on the birth  
Of trembling winter,—the fairest flowers o'the  
season

Are our carnations, and streak'd gillyflowers,  
Which some call nature's bastards : of that kind  
Our rustic garden's barren ; and I care not  
To get slips of them.

*Pol.* Wherefore, gentle maiden,  
Do you neglect them ?

*Per.* For<sup>1</sup> I have heard it said,  
There is an art, which, in their piedness, shares  
With great creating nature.

*Pol.* Say, there be ;  
Yet nature is made better by no mean,  
But nature makes that mean : so, o'er that art,  
Which, you say, adds to nature, is an art  
That nature makes. You see, sweet maid, we marry  
A gentler scion to the wildest stock ;  
And make conceive a bark of baser kind  
By bud of nobler race ; This is an art  
Which does mend nature,—change it rather : but  
The art itself is nature.

*Per.* So it is.

*Pol.* Then make your garden rich in gillyflowers,  
And do not call them bastards.

*Per.* I'll not put  
The dibble<sup>2</sup> in earth to set one slip of them :  
No more than, were I painted, I would wish  
This youth should say, 'twere well ; and only  
therefore

Desire to breed by me.—Here's flowers for you !  
Hot lavender, mints, savory, marjoram ;

(1) Because that.      (2) A tool to set plants.



The marigold, that goes to bed with the sun,  
And with him rises weeping ; these are flowers  
Of middle summer, and, I think, they are given  
To men of middle age : You are very welcome.

*Cam.* I should leave grazing, were I of your flock,  
And only live by gazing.

*Per.* Out, alas !

You'd be so lean, that blasts of January  
Would blow you through and through.—Now, my  
fairest friend,

I would I had some flowers o'the spring, that might  
Become your time of day ; and yours, and yours ;  
That wear upon your virgin branches yet  
Your maidenheads growing :—O Proserpina,  
For the flowers now, that, frighted, thou lett'st fall  
From Dis's<sup>1</sup> waggon ! daffodils,  
That come before the swallow dares, and take  
The winds of March with beauty ; violets, dim,  
But sweeter than the lids of Juno's eyes,  
Or Cytherea's breath ; pale primroses,  
That die unmarried, ere they can behold  
Bright Phœbus in his strength, a malady  
Most incident to maids ; bold oxlips, and  
The crown-imperial ; lilies of all kinds,  
The flower-de-luce being one ! O, these I lack,  
To make you garlands of ; and, my sweet friend,  
To strew him o'er and o'er.

*Flo.* What ? like a corse ?

*Per.* No, like a bank, for love to lie and play on ;  
Not like a corse : or if,—not to be buried,  
But quick,<sup>2</sup> and in mine arms. Come, take your  
flowers :

Methinks, I play as I have seen them do  
In Whitsun' pastorals : sure, this robe of mine  
Does change my disposition.

*Flo.* What you do,  
Still betters what is done. When you speak, sweet,  
I'd have you do it ever : when you sing,

(1) Pluto's.

(2) Living.

I'd have you buy and sell so; so give alms;  
Pray so; and, for the ordering your affairs,  
To sing them too: When you do dance, I wish you  
A wave o'the sea, that you might ever do  
Nothing but that; move still, still so, and own  
No other function: Each your doing,  
So singular in each particular,  
Crowns what you are doing in the present deeds,  
That all your acts are queens.

*Per.*

O Doricles,

Your praises are too large: but that your youth,  
And the true blood, which fairly peeps through it,  
Do plainly give you out an unstain'd shepherd;  
With wisdom I might fear, my Doricles,  
You woo'd me the false way.

*Flo.*

I think you have

As little skill to fear, as I have purpose  
To put you to't.—But, come; our dance, I pray:  
Your hand, my Perdita: so turtles pair,  
That never mean to part.

*Per.*

I'll swear for 'em.

*Pol.* This is the prettiest low-born lass, that ever  
Ran on the green-sward:¹ nothing she does, or  
seems,

But snacks of something greater than herself;  
Too noble for this place.

*Cam.* He tells her something,  
That makes her blood look out: Good sooth, she is  
The queen of curds and cream.

*Clo.*

Come on, strike up.

*Dor.* Mopsa must be your mistress: marry,  
garlic,

To mend her kissing with.—

*Mop.*

Now, in good time!

*Clo.* Not a word, a word; we stand upon our  
manners.—

Come, strike up.

[*Music.*

*Here a dance of shepherds and shepherdesses.*

(1) Green turf.

*Pol.* Pray, good shepherd, what  
Fair swain is this, which dances with your daughter?

*Shep.* They call him Doricles, and he boasts  
himself

To have a worthy feeding :<sup>1</sup> but I have it  
Upon his own report, and I believe it ;  
He looks like sooth :<sup>2</sup> He says, he loves my  
daughter ;

I think so too ; for never gaz'd the moon  
Upon the water, as he'll stand, and read,  
As 'twere, my daughter's eyes : and, to be plain,  
I think there is not half a kiss to choose,  
Who loves another best.

*Pol.* She dances featly.<sup>3</sup>

*Shep.* So she does any thing ; though I report it,  
That should be silent : if young Doricles  
Do light upon her, she shall bring him that  
Which he not dreams of.

*Enter a Servant.*

*Serv.* O master, if you did but hear the pedler  
at the door, you would never dance again after a  
tabor and pipe ; no, the bagpipe could not move  
you : he sings several tunes, faster than you'll tell  
money ; he utters them as he had eaten ballads,  
and all men's ears grew to his tunes.

*Clo.* He could never come better : he shall come  
in : I love a ballad but even too well ; if it be dole-  
ful matter, merrily set down, or a very pleasant  
thing indeed, and sung lamentably.

*Serv.* He hath songs, for man or woman, of all  
sizes : no milliner can so fit his customers with  
gloves : he has the prettiest love-songs for maids ;  
so without bawdry, which is strange ; with such de-  
licate burdens of *dildos* and *fadings* ; *jump her*  
*and thump her* ; and where some stretch-mouth'd  
rascal would, as it were, mean mischief, and break

(1) A valuable tract of pasturage.

(2) Truth.

(3) Neatly.

a foul gap into the matter, he makes the maid to answer, *Whoop, do me no harm, good man* ; puts him off, slights him, with *Whoop, do me no harm, good man*.

*Pol.* This is a brave fellow.

*Clo.* Believe me, thou talkest of an admirable conceited fellow. Has he any unbraided wares ?<sup>1</sup>

*Serv.* He hath ribands of all the colours i'the rainbow ; points, more than all the lawyers in Bohemia can learnedly handle, though they come to him by the gross ; inkles,<sup>2</sup> caddisses,<sup>3</sup> cambrics, lawns : why, he sings them over, as they were gods or goddesses ; you would think a smock were a she-angel ; he so chants to the sleeve-hand,<sup>4</sup> and the work about the square on't.<sup>5</sup>

*Clo.* Pr'ythee, bring him in ; and let him approach singing.

*Per.* Forewarn him, that he use no scurrilous words in his tunes.

*Clo.* You have of these pedlers, that have more in 'em than you'd think, sister.

*Per.* Ay, good brother, or go about to think.

*Enter Autolycus, singing.*

*Lawn, as white as driven snow ;  
Cyprus, black as e'er was crow ;  
Gloves, as sweet as damask roses ;  
Masks for faces, and for noses ;  
Bugle bracelet, necklace-amber,  
Perfume for a lady's chamber :<sup>6</sup>  
Golden quoifs, and stomachers,  
For my lads to give their dears ;  
Pins and poking-sticks of steel,  
What maids lack from head to heel :*

(1) Plain goods. (2) Worsted galloon.

(3) A kind of tape. (4) The cuffs.

(5) The work about the bosom.

(6) Amber, of which necklaces were made fit to perfume a lady's chamber.

*Come, buy of me, come ; come buy, come buy,  
Buy, lads, or else your lasses cry ;  
Come, buy, &c.*

*Clo.* If I were not in love with Mopsa, thou should'st take no money of me ; but being enthrall'd as I am, it will also be the bondage of certain ribands and gloves.

*Mop.* I was promis'd them against the feast ; but they come not too late now.

*Dor.* He hath promised you more than that, or there be liars.

*Mop.* He hath paid you all he promised you : may be he has paid you more ; which will shame you to give him again.

*Clo.* Is there no manners left among maids ? will they wear their plackets, where they should bear their faces ? Is there not milking-time, when you are going to-bed, or kiln-hole,<sup>1</sup> to whistle off these secrets ; but you must be tittle-tattling before all our guests ? 'Tis well they are whispering : Clamour your tongues,<sup>2</sup> and not a word more.

*Mop.* I have done. Come, you promised me a tawdry lace,<sup>3</sup> and a pair of sweet gloves.

*Clo.* Have I not told thee, how I was cozened by the way, and lost all my money ?

*Aut.* And, indeed, sir, there are cozeners abroad ; therefore it behoves men to be wary.

*Clo.* Fear not thou, man, thou shalt lose nothing here.

*Aut.* I hope so, sir ; for I have about me many parcels of change.

*Clo.* What hast here ? ballads ?

*Mop.* Pray now, buy some : I love a ballad in print, a'-life ; for then we are sure they are true.

*Aut.* Here's one to a very doleful tune, How a

(1) Fire-place for drying malt ; still a noted gossiping-place.

(2) Ring a dumb peal.

(3) A lace to wear about the head or waist.

usurer's wife was brought to-bed of twenty money-bags at a burden; and how she longed to eat adders' heads, and toads carbonadoed.

*Mop.* Is it true, think you?

*Aut.* Very true; and but a month old.

*Dor.* Bless me from marrying a usurer!

*Aut.* Here's the midwife's name to't, one mistress Taleporter; and five or six honest wives' that were present: Why should I carry lies abroad?

*Mop.* Pray you now, buy it.

*Clo.* Come on, lay it by: And let's first see more ballads; we'll buy the other things anon.

*Aut.* Here's another ballad, of a fish, that appeared upon the coast, on Wednesday the fourscore of April, forty thousand fathom above water, and sung this ballad against the hard hearts of maids: it was thought she was a woman, and was turned into a cold fish, for she would not exchange flesh with one that loved her: The ballad is very pitiful, and as true.

*Dor.* Is it true too, think you?

*Aut.* Five justices' hands at it; and witnesses, more than my pack will hold.

*Clo.* Lay it by too: Another.

*Aut.* This is a merry ballad; but a very pretty one.

*Mop.* Let's have some merry ones.

*Aut.* Why this is a passing merry one; and goes to the tune of, *Two maids wooing a man*: there's scarce a maid westward, but she sings it; 'tis in request, I can tell you.

*Mop.* We can both sing it; if thou'lt bear a part, thou shalt hear; 'tis in three parts.

*Dor.* We had the tune on't a month ago.

*Aut.* I can bear my part; you must know, 'tis my occupation: have at it with you.

SONG.

*A. Get you hence, for I must go;  
Where, it fits not you to know.*

D. *Whither?* M. O, *whither?* D. *Whither?*

M. *It becomes thy oath full well,  
Thou to me thy secrets tell:*

D. *Me too, let me go thither.*

M. *Or thou go'st to the grange, or mill:*

D. *If to either, thou dost ill.*

A. *Neither.* D. *What, neither?* A. *Neither.*

D. *Thou hast sworn my love to be;*

M. *Thou hast sworn it more to me:*

*Then, whither go'st? say, whither?*

Clo. We'll have this song out anon by ourselves:  
My father and the gentlemen are in sad<sup>1</sup> talk, and  
we'll not trouble them: Come, bring away thy  
pack after me. Wenches, I'll buy for you both:—  
Pedler, let's have the first choice.—Follow me, girls.

Aut. And you shall pay well for 'em. [*Aside.*]

*Will you buy any tape,  
Or lace for your cape,  
My dainty duck, my dear-a?  
Any silk, any thread,  
Any toys for your head,  
Of the new'st, and fin'st, fin'st wear-a?  
Come to the pedler;  
Money's a medler,  
That doth utter<sup>2</sup> all men's ware-a.*

[*Exeunt Clown, Autolycus, Dorcas, and  
Mopsa.*]

*Enter a Servant.*

Serv. Master, there is three carters, three shep-  
herds, three neat-herds, three swine-herds, that  
have made themselves all men of hair;<sup>3</sup> they call  
themselves saltiers:<sup>4</sup> and they have a dance which  
the wenches say is a gallimaufry<sup>5</sup> of gambols, be-

(1) Serious.

(2) Vend.

(3) Dressed themselves in habits imitating hair.

(4) Satyrs.

(5) Medley.

cause they are not in't; but they themselves are o'the mind (if it be not too rough for some, that know little but bowling,) it will please plentifully.

*Shep.* Away! we'll none on't; here has been too much humble foolery already:—I know, sir, we weary you.

*Pol.* You weary those that refresh us: Pray let's see these four threes of herdsmen.

*Serv.* One three of them, by their own report, sir, hath danced before the king; and not the worst of the three, but jumps twelve foot and a half by the squire.<sup>1</sup>

*Shep.* Leave your prating; since these good men are pleased, let them come in; but quickly now.

*Serv.* Why, they stay at door, sir. [*Exit.*]

*Re-enter Servant, with twelve rustics, habited like Satyrs. They dance, and then exeunt.*

*Pol.* O, father, you'll know more of that hereafter.—

Is it not too far gone?—'Tis time to part them.—He's simple, and tells much. [*Aside.*—How now, fair shepherd?

Your heart is full of something, that does take  
Your mind from feasting. Sooth, when I was young,  
And handed love, as you do, I was wont  
To load my she with knacks: I would have ran-  
sack'd

The pedler's silken treasury, and have pour'd it  
To her acceptance; you have let him go,  
And nothing mated<sup>2</sup> with him: if your lass  
Interpretation should abuse; and call this  
Your lack of love, or bounty: you were straited!<sup>3</sup>  
For a reply, at least, if you make a care  
Of happy holding her.

*Flo.* Old sir, I know  
She prizes not such trifles as these are:

- (1) Foot-rule. (2) Bought, trafficked.  
(3) Put to difficulties.



The gifts, she looks from me, are pack'd and lock'd  
Up in my heart ; which I have given already,  
But not deliver'd.—O, hear me breathe my life  
Before this ancient sir, who, it should seem,  
Hath sometime lov'd : I take thy hand ; this hand,  
As soft as dove's down, and as white as it ;  
Or Ethiopian's tooth, or the fann'd snow,  
That's bolted<sup>1</sup> by the northern blasts twice o'er.

*Pol.* What follows this ?—

How prettily the young swain seems to wash  
The hand, was fair before !—I have put you out :—  
But to your protestation ; let me hear  
What you profess.

*Flo.* Do, and be witness to't.

*Pol.* And this my neighbour too ?

*Flo.* And he, and more  
Than he, and men ; the earth, the heavens, and all :  
That,—were I crown'd the most imperial monarch,  
Thereof most worthy ; were I the fairest youth  
That ever made eye swerve ; had force, and know-  
ledge,

More than was ever man's,—I would not prize them,  
Without her love : for her, employ them all ;  
Commend them, and condemn them, to her service,  
Or to their own perdition.

*Pol.* Fairly offer'd.

*Cam.* This shows a sound affection.

*Shep.* But, my daughter,  
Say you the like to him ?

*Per.* I cannot speak

So well, nothing so well ; no, nor mean better :  
By the pattern of mine own thoughts I cut out  
The purity of his.

*Shep.* Take hands, a bargain ;—  
And, friends unknown, you shall bear witness to't :  
I give my daughter to him, and will make  
Her portion equal his.

(1) The sieve used to separate flour from bran is  
called a bolting-cloth.

*Flo.* O, that must be  
P'the virtue of your daughter: one being dead,  
I shall have more than you can dream of yet;  
Enough then for your wonder: But, come on,  
Contract us 'fore these witnesses.

*Shep.* Come, your hand;—  
And, daughter, yours.

*Pol.* Soft, swain, a while, 'beseech you;  
Have you a father?

*Flo.* I have: But what of him?

*Pol.* Knows he of this?

*Flo.* He neither does, nor shall

*Pol.* Methinks, a father  
Is, at the nuptial of his son, a guest  
That best becomes the table. Pray you, once more;  
Is not your father grown incapable  
Of reasonable affairs? is he not stupid  
With age, and altering rheums? Can he speak?  
hear?

Know man from man? dispute his own estate?<sup>1</sup>  
Lies he not bed-ridden? and again does nothing,  
But what he did being childish?

*Flo.* No, good sir;  
He has his health, and ampler strength, indeed,  
Than most have of his age.

*Pol.* By my white beard,  
You offer him, if this be so, a wrong  
Something unfilial: Reason, my son  
Should choose himself a wife; but as good reason,  
The father (all whose joy is nothing else  
But fair posterity,) should hold some counsel  
In such a business.

*Flo.* I yield all this;  
But, for some other reasons, my grave sir,  
Which 'tis not fit you know, I not acquaint  
My father of this business.

*Pol.* Let him know't.

*Flo.* He shall not.

(1) Talk over his affairs.

*Pol.* Pr'ythee, let him.

*Flo.* No, he must not.

*Shep.* Let him, my son; he shall not need to grieve  
At knowing of thy choice.

*Flo.* Come, come, he must not :—  
Mark our contract.

*Pol.* Mark your divorce, young sir,  
[*Discovering himself.*

Whom son I dare not call; thou art too base  
To be acknowledg'd : Thou a sceptre's heir,  
That thus affect'st a sheep-hook?—Thou old traitor,  
I am sorry, that, by hanging thee, I can but  
Shorten thy life one week.—And thou, fresh piece  
Of excellent witchcraft; who, of force, must know  
The royal fool thou cop'st with ;—

*Shep.* O, my heart!

*Pol.* I'll have thy beauty scratch'd with briars,  
and made

More homely than thy state.—For thee, fond boy,—  
If I may ever know, thou dost but sigh,  
That thou no more shalt see this knack (as never  
I mean thou shalt,) we'll bar thee from succession;  
Not hold thee of our blood, no, not our kin,  
Far! than Deucalion off:—Mark thou my words;  
Follow us to the court.—Thou churl, for this time,  
Though full of our displeasure, yet we free thee  
From the dead blow of it.—And you, enchant-  
ment—

Worthy enough a herdsman; yea, him too,  
That makes himself, but for our honour therein,  
Unworthy thee,—if ever, henceforth, thou  
These rural latches<sup>2</sup> to his entrance open,  
Or hoop his body more with thy embraces,  
I will devise a death as cruel for thee,  
As thou art tender to't.

[*Exit.*

*Per.* Even here undone!

I was not much afeard : for once, or twice,  
I was about to speak; and tell him plainly,

(1) Further. (2) Doors.

The self-same sun, that shines upon his court,  
Hides not his visage from our cottage, but  
Looks on alike.—Will't please you, sir, be gone?

[To Florizel.

I told you, what would come of this : 'Beseech you,  
Of your own state take care : this dream of mine,—  
Being now awake, I'll queen it no inch further,  
But milk my ewes, and weep.

Cam. Why, how now, father ?

Speak, ere thou diest.

Shep. I cannot speak, nor think,

Nor dare to know that which I know.—O, sir,

[To Florizel.

You have undone a man of fourscore three,  
That thought to fill his grave in quiet ; yea,  
To die upon the bed my father died,  
To lie close by his honest bones : but now  
Some hangman must put on my shroud, and lay me  
Where no priest shovels-in dust.—O cursed wretch!

[To Perdita.

That knew'st this was the prince, and would'st  
adventure

To mingle faith with him.—Undone ! undone !

If I might die within this hour, I have liv'd

To die when I desire.

[Exit.

Flo. Why look you so upon me ?

I am but sorry, not afeard ; delay'd,  
But nothing alter'd : What I was, I am :  
More straining on, for plucking back ; not following  
My leash<sup>1</sup> unwillingly.

Cam. Gracious my lord,  
You know your father's temper : at this time  
He will allow no speech,—which, I do guess,  
You do not purpose to him ;—and as hardly  
Will he endure your sight as yet, I fear :  
Then, till the fury of his highness settle,  
Come not before him.

Flo. I not purpose it.

(1) A leading string.

I think, Camillo.

*Cam.* Even he, my lord.

*Per.* How often have I told you, 'twould be thus?  
How often said, my dignity would last  
But till 'twere known?

*Flo.* It cannot fail, but by .  
The violation of my faith; And then  
Let Nature crush the sides o'the earth together,  
And mar the seeds within!—Lift up thy looks:—  
From my succession wipe me, father! I  
Am heir to my affection.

*Cam.* Be advis'd.

*Flo.* I am; and by my fancy: if my reason  
Will thereto be obedient, I have reason;  
If not, my senses, better pleas'd with madness,  
Do bid it welcome.

*Cam.* This is desperate, sir.

*Flo.* So call it: but it does fulfil my vow;  
I needs must think it honesty. Camillo,  
Not for Bohemia, nor the pomp that may  
Be thereat glean'd; for all the sun sees, or  
The close earth wombs, or the profound seas hide  
In unknown fathoms, will I break my oath  
To this my fair belov'd: Therefore, I pray you,  
As you have e'er been my father's honour'd friend,  
When he shall miss me (as, in faith, I mean not  
To see him any more,) cast your good counsels  
Upon his passion; Let myself and fortune  
Tug for the time to come. This you may know,  
And so deliver,—I am put to sea  
With her, whom here I cannot hold on shore;  
And, most opportune to our need, I have  
A vessel rides fast by, but not prepar'd  
For this design. What course I mean to hold,  
Shall nothing benefit your knowledge, nor  
Concern me the reporting.

*Cam.* O, my lord,  
I would your spirit were easier for advice,

(1) Love.

Or stronger for your need.

*Flo.* Hark, Perdita.—[*Takes her aside.*  
I'll hear you by and by. [*To Camillo.*

*Cam.* He's irremovable,  
Resolv'd for flight: Now were I happy, if  
His going I could frame to serve my turn;  
Save him from danger, do him love and honour;  
Purchase the sight again of dear Sicilia,  
And that unhappy king, my master, whom  
I so much thirst to see.

*Flo.* Now, good Camillo,  
I am so fraught with curious business, that  
I leave out ceremony. [*Going.*

*Cam.* Sir, I think,  
You have heard of my poor services, i'the love  
That I have borne your father?

*Flo.* Very nobly  
Have you deserv'd: it is my father's music,  
To speak your deeds; not little of his care  
To have them recompens'd as thought on.

*Cam.* Well, my lord,  
If you may please to think I love the king;  
And, through him, what is nearest to him, which is  
Your gracious self; embrace but my direction  
(If your more ponderous and settled project  
May suffer alteration,) on mine honour  
I'll point you where you shall have such receiving  
As shall become your highness; where you may  
Enjoy your mistress (from the whom, I see,  
There's no disjunction to be made, but by,  
As heavens forefend! your ruin :) marry her;  
And (with my best endeavours, in your absence,)  
Your discontenting<sup>1</sup> father strive to qualify,  
And bring him up to liking.

*Flo.* How, Camillo,  
May this, almost a miracle, be done?  
That I may call thee something more than man,  
And, after that, trust to thee.

(1) For discontented.

*Cam.* Have you thought on  
A place whereto you'll go?

*Flo.* Not any yet :  
But as the unthought-on accident<sup>1</sup> is guilty  
To what we wildly do ; so we profess  
Ourselves to be the slaves of chance, and flies  
Of every wind that blows.

*Cam.* Then list to me :  
This follows,—if you will not change your purpose,  
But undergo this flight ;—Make for Sicilia ;  
And there present yourself, and your fair princess  
(For so, I see, she must be,) 'fore Leontes ;  
She shall be habited, as it becomes  
The partner of your bed. Methinks, I see  
Leontes, opening his free arms, and weeping  
His welcomes forth : asks thee, the son, forgiveness,  
As 'twere i'the father's person : kisses the hands  
Of your fresh princess : o'er and o'er divides him  
'Twixt his unkindness and his kindness ; the one  
He chides to hell, and bids the other grow,  
Faster than thought, or time.

*Flo.* Worthy Camillo,  
What colour for my visitation shall I  
Hold up before him ?

*Cam.* . . . Sent by the king your father,  
To greet him, and to give him comforts. Sir,  
The manner of your bearing towards him, with  
What you, as from your father, shall deliver,  
Things known betwixt us three, I'll write you down :  
The which shall point you forth at every sitting,<sup>2</sup>  
What you must say ; that he shall not perceive,  
But that you have your father's bosom there,  
And speak his very heart.

*Flo.* I am bound to you :  
There is some sap in this.

*Cam.* A course more promising

(1) This unthought-on accident is the unexpected discovery made by Polixenes.

(2) The council-days were called the sittings.

Than a wild dedication of yourselves  
To unpath'd waters, undream'd shores ; most cer-  
tain,

To miseries enough : no hope to help you ;  
But, as you shake off one, to take another :  
Nothing so certain as your anchors : who  
Do their best office, if they can but stay you  
Where you'll be loath to be : Besides, you know,  
Prosperity's the very bond of love ;  
Whose fresh complexion and whose heart together  
Affliction alters.

*Per.* One of these is true :  
I think, affliction may subdue the cheek,  
But not take in<sup>1</sup> the mind.

*Cam.* Yea, say you so ?  
There shall not, at your father's house, these seven  
years,  
Be born another such.

*Flo.* My good Camillo,  
She is as forward of her breeding, as  
I'the rear of birth.

*Cam.* I cannot say, 'tis pity  
She lacks instructions ; for she seems a mistress  
To most that teach.

*Per.* Your pardon, sir, for this ;  
I'll blush you thanks.

*Flo.* My prettiest Perdita.—  
But, O, the thorns we stand upon !—Camillo,—  
Preserver of my father, now of me ;  
The medicine of our house !—how shall we do ?  
We are not furnish'd like Bohemia's son ;  
Nor shall appear in Sicily—

*Cam.* My lord,  
Fear none of this : I think, you know, my fortunes  
Do all lie there : it shall be so my care  
To have you royally appointed, as if  
The scene you play, were mine. For instance, sir,  
That you may know you shall not want,—one word.  
[*They talk aside.*]

(1) Conquer.



*Enter Autolycus.*

*Aut.* Ha, ha ! what a fool honesty is ! and trust, his sworn brother, a very simple gentleman ! I have sold all my trumpery ; not a counterfeit stone, not a riband, glass, pomander,<sup>1</sup> brooch, table-book, ballad, knife, tape, glove, shoe-tie, bracelet, horn-ring, to keep my pack from fasting : they throng who should buy first ; as if my trinkets had been hallowed, and brought a benediction to the buyer : by which means, I saw whose purse was best in picture ; and, what I saw, to my good use, I remembered. My clown (who wants but something to be a reasonable man,) grew so in love with the wenches' song, that he would not stir his petticoates, till he had both tune and words ; which so drew the rest of the herd to me, that all their other senses stuck in ears : you might have pinched a placket, it was senseless ; 'twas nothing, to geld a cod-piece of a purse ; I would have filed keys off, that hung in chains : no hearing, no feeling, but my sir's song, and admiring the nothing of it. So that, in this time of lethargy, I picked and cut most of their festival purses : and had not the old man come in with a whoobub against his daughter and the king's son, and scared my choughs<sup>2</sup> from the chaff, I had not left a purse alive in the whole army.

*[Camillo, Florizel, and Perdita, come forward.]*

*Cam.* Nay, but my letters by this means being there

So soon as you arrive, shall clear that doubt.

*Flo.* And those that you'll procure from king Leontes,——

*Cam.* Shall satisfy your father.

*Per.*

Happy be you !

All, that you speak, shows fair.

(1) A little ball made of perfumes, and worn to prevent infection in times of plague.

(2) Birds.

Cam.

Who have we here?

[Seeing Autolycus.

We'll make an instrument of this; omit

Nothing may give us aid.

Aut. If they have overheard me now,—why hanging. [Aside.

Cam. How now, good fellow? Why shakest thou so? Fear not, man; here's no harm intended to thee.

Aut. I am a poor fellow, sir.

Cam. Why, be so still; here's nobody will steal that from thee: Yet, for the outside of thy poverty, we must make an exchange: therefore, discase thee instantly (thou must think there's necessity in't,) and change garments with this gentleman: Though the pennyworth, on his side, be the worst, yet hold thee, there's some boot.<sup>1</sup>

Aut. I am a poor fellow, sir:—I know ye well enough. [Aside.

Cam. Nay, pr'ythee, despatch: the gentleman is half flayed<sup>2</sup> already.

Aut. Are you in earnest, sir?—I smell the trick of it.— [Aside.

Flo. Despatch, I pr'ythee.

Aut. Indeed, I have had earnest; but I cannot with conscience take it.

Cam. Unbuckle, unbuckle.—

[Flo. and Aut. exchange garments.

Fortunate mistress,—let my prophecy  
Come home to you!—you must retire yourself  
Into some covert: take your sweetheart's hat,  
And pluck it o'er your brows: muffle your face;  
Dismantle you: and as you can, disliken  
The truth of your own seeming; that you may  
(For I do fear eyes over you,) to shipboard  
Get undescried.

Per. I see the play so lies,  
That I must bear a part.

(1) Something over and above. (2) Stripped.

*Cam.* No remedy.—  
Have you done there?

*Flo.* Should I now meet my father,  
He would not call me son.

*Cam.* Nay, you shall have  
No hat:—Come, lady, come.—Farewell, my friend.

*Aut.* Adieu, sir.

*Flo.* O Perdita, what have we twain forgot?  
Pray you, a word. [*They converse apart.*]

*Cam.* What I do next, shall be, to tell the king  
[*Aside.*]

Of this escape, and whither they are bound;  
Wherein my hope is, I shall so prevail,  
To force him after: in whose company  
I shall review Sicilia; for whose sight  
I have a woman's longing.

*Flo.* Fortune speed us!—  
Thus we set on, Camillo, to the sea-side.

*Cam.* The swifter speed, the better.

[*Exeunt Florizel, Perdita, and Camillo.*]

*Aut.* I understand the business, I hear it: To  
have an open ear, a quick eye, and a nimble hand,  
is necessary for a cut-purse; a good nose is re-  
quisite also, to smell out work for the other senses.  
I see, this is the time that the unjust man doth  
thrive. What an exchange had this been without  
boot? what a boot is here, with this exchange?  
Sure the gods do this year connive at us, and we  
may do any thing *extempore*. The prince himself  
is about a piece of iniquity; stealing away from  
his father, with his clog at his heels: If I thought  
it were not a piece of honesty to acquaint the king  
withal, I would do't: I hold it the more knavery  
to conceal it: and therein am I constant to my pro-  
fession.

*Enter Clown and Shepherd.*

*Aside, aside*;—here is more matter for a hot brain:  
Every lane's end, every shop, church, session, hang-  
ing, yields a careful man work.

*Clo.* See, see ; what a man you are now ! there is no other way, but to tell the king she's a changeling, and none of your flesh and blood.

*Shep.* Nay, but hear me.

*Clo.* Nay, but hear me.

*Shep.* Go to then.

*Clo.* She being none of your flesh and blood, your flesh and blood has not offended the king ; and, so, your flesh and blood is not to be punished by him. Show those things you found about her ; those secret things, all but what she has with her : This being done, let the law go whistle ; I warrant you.

*Shep.* I will tell the king all, every word, yea, and his son's pranks too ; who, I may say, is no honest man neither to his father, nor to me, to go about to make me the king's brother-in-law.

*Clo.* Indeed, brother-in-law was the furthest off you could have been to him ; and then your blood had been the dearer, by I know how much an ounce.

*Aut.* Very wisely ; puppies ! *[Aside.]*

*Shep.* Well ; let us to the king ; there is that in this fardel,<sup>1</sup> will make him scratch his beard.

*Aut.* I know not what impediment this complaint may be to the flight of my master.

*Clo.* 'Pray heartily he be at palace.

*Aut.* Though I am not naturally honest, I am so sometimes by chance :—Let me pocket up my pedler's excrement.<sup>2</sup>—*[Takes off his false beard.]* How now, rustics ? whither are you bound ?

*Shep.* To the palace, an it like your worship.

*Aut.* Your affairs there ? what ? with whom ? the condition of that fardel, the place of your dwelling, your names, your ages, of what having,<sup>3</sup> breeding, and any thing that is fitting to be known, discover.

*Clo.* We are but plain fellows, sir.

(1) Bundle, parcel.

(2) His false beard.

(3) Estate, property.

*Aut.* A lie ; you are rough and hairy : Let me have no lying ; it becomes none but tradesmen, and they often give us soldiers the lie : but we pay them for it with stamped coin, not stabbing steel ; therefore they do not give us the lie.

*Clo.* Your worship had like to have given us one, if you had not taken yourself with the manner.<sup>1</sup>

*Shep.* Are you a courtier, an't like you, sir ?

*Aut.* Whether it like me, or no, I am a courtier. See'st thou not the air of the court, in these enfoldings ? hath not my gait in it the measure of the court ?<sup>2</sup> receives not thy nose court-odour from me ? reflect I not on thy baseness, court-contempt ? Think'st thou, for that I insinuate, or toze<sup>3</sup> from thee thy business, I am therefore no courtier ? I am courtier, cap-a-pé ; and one that will either push on, or pluck back, thy business there : whereupon I command thee to open thy affair.

*Shep.* My business, sir, is to the king.

*Aut.* What advocate hast thou to him ?

*Shep.* I know not, an't like you.

*Clo.* Advocates the court-word for a pheasant ; say, you have none.

*Shep.* None, sir ; I have no pheasant, cock nor hen.

*Aut.* How bless'd are we, that are not simple men !

Yet nature might have made me as these are,  
Therefore I'll not disdain.

*Clo.* This cannot be but a great courtier.

*Shep.* His garments are rich, but he wears them not handsomely.

*Clo.* He seems to be the more noble in being fantastical ; a great man, I'll warrant ; I know by the picking on's teeth.

*Aut.* The fardel there ? what's i'the fardel ? Wherefore that box ?

*Shep.* Sir, there lies such secrets in this fardel,

(1) In the fact. (2) The stately tread of courtiers  
(3) Cajole or force.

and box, which none must know but the king; and which he shall know within this hour, if I may come to the speech of him.

*Aut.* Age, thou hast lost thy labour.

*Shep.* Why, sir?

*Aut.* The king is not at the palace; he is gone aboard a new ship to purge melancholy, and air himself: For, if thou be'st capable of things serious, thou must know, the king is full of grief.

*Shep.* So 'tis said, sir; about his son, that should have married a shepherd's daughter.

*Aut.* If that shepherd be not in hand-fast, let him fly; the curses he shall have, the tortures he shall feel, will break the back of man, the heart of monster.

*Clo.* Think you so, sir?

*Aut.* Not he alone shall suffer what wit can make heavy, and vengeance bitter; but those that are germane<sup>1</sup> to him, though removed fifty times, shall all come under the hangman: which though it be great pity, yet it is necessary. An old sheep-whistling rogue, a ram-tender, to offer to have his daughter come into grace! Some say, he shall be stoned; but that death is too soft for him, say I: Draw our throne into a sheep-cote! all deaths are too few, the sharpest too easy.

*Clo.* Has the old man e'er a son, sir, do you hear, an't like you, sir?

*Aut.* He has a son, who shall be flayed alive; then, 'nointed over with honey, set on the head of a wasp's nest; then stand, till he be three-quarters and a dram dead: then recovered again with aqua-vitæ, or some other hot infusion: then, raw as he is, and in the hottest day prognostication proclaims,<sup>2</sup> shall be set against a brick wall, the sun looking with a southward eye upon him; where he is to behold him, with flies blown to death. But what talk

(1) Related.

(2) The hottest day foretold in the almanac.

we of these traitorly rascals, whose miseries are to be smiled at, their offences being so capital? Tell me (for you seem to be honest plain men,) what you have to the king: being something gently considered,<sup>1</sup> I'll bring you where he is aboard, tender your persons to his presence, whisper him in your behalfs; and, if it be in man, besides the king to effect your suits, here is man shall do it.

*Clo.* He seems to be of great authority; close with him, give him gold; and though authority be a stubborn bear, yet he is oft led by the nose with gold; show the inside of your purse to the outside of his hand, and no more ado: Remember stoned, and flayed alive.

*Shep.* An't please you, sir, to undertake the business for us, here is that gold I have: I'll make it as much more; and leave this young man in pawn, till I bring it you.

*Aut.* After I have done what I promised?

*Shep.* Ay, sir.

*Aut.* Well, give me the moiety:—Are you a party in this business?

*Clo.* In some sort, sir: but though my case be a pitiful one, I hope I shall not be flayed out of it.

*Aut.* O, that's the case of the shepherd's son:—Hang him, he'll be made an example.

*Clo.* Comfort, good comfort: we must to the king, and show our strange sights; he must know, 'tis none of your daughter, nor my sister; we are gone else. Sir, I will give you as much as this old man does, when the business is performed; and remain, as he says, your pawn, till it be brought you.

*Aut.* I will trust you. Walk before toward the sea-side; go on the right hand; I will but look upon the hedge, and follow you.

*Clo.* We are blessed in this man, as I may say even blessed.

*Shep.* Let's before, as he bids us: he was provided to do us good. [*Exeunt Shep. and Clown.*]

(<sup>1</sup>) Being handsomely bribed.

*Aut.* If I had a mind to be honest, I see, fortune would not suffer me; she drops booties in my mouth. I am courted now with a double occasion; gold, and a means to do the prince my master good; which, who knows how that may turn back to my advancement? I will bring these two moles, these blind ones, aboard him: if he think it fit to shore them again, and that the complaint they have to the king concerns him nothing, let him call me rogue, for being so far officious; for I am proof against that title, and what else shame belongs to't: To him will I present them, there may be matter in it.  
[Exit.]

---

ACT V.

SCENE I.—Sicilia. *A room in the palace of Leontes. Enter Leontes, Cleomenes, Dion, Paulina, and others.*

*Cleo.* Sir, you have done enough, and have performed

A saint-like sorrow: no fault could you make,  
Which you have not redeem'd; indeed, paid down  
More penitence, than done trespass: At the last,  
Do, as the heavens have done; forget your evil;  
With them, forgive yourself.

*Leon.* Whilst I remember  
Her, and her virtues, I cannot forget  
My blemishes in them; and so still think of  
The wrong I did myself: which was so much,  
That heirless it hath made my kingdom; and  
Destroy'd the sweet'st companion, that e'er man  
Bred his hopes out of.

*Paul.* True, too true, my lord:  
If, one by one, you wedded all the world,  
Or, from the all that are, took something good,  
To make a perfect woman; she, you kill'd,  
Would be unparallel'd.



*Leon.* I think so. Kill'd?  
She I kill'd? I did so: but thou strik'st me  
Sorely, to say I did; it is as bitter  
Upon thy tongue, as in my thought: Now, good  
now,  
Say so but seldom.

*Cleo.* Not at all, good lady:  
You might have spoken a thousand things that  
would  
Have done the time more benefit, and grac'd  
Your kindness better.

*Paul.* You are one of those,  
Would have him wed again.

*Dion.* If you would not so,  
You pity not the state, nor the remembrance  
Of his most sovereign dame; consider little,  
What dangers, by his highness' fail of issue,  
May drop upon his kingdom, and devour  
Uncertain lookers-on. What were more holy,  
Than to rejoice, the former queen is well?<sup>1</sup>  
What holier, than,—for royalty's repair,  
For present comfort and for future good,—  
To bless the bed of majesty again  
With a sweet fellow to't?

*Paul.* There is none worthy,  
Respecting her that's gone. Besides, the gods  
Will have fulfill'd their secret purposes:  
For has not the divine Apollo said,  
Is't not the tenor of his oracle,  
That king Leontes shall not have an heir,  
Till his lost child be found? which, that it shall,  
Is all as monstrous to our human reason,  
As my Antigonus to break his grave,  
And come again to me; who, on my life,  
Did perish with the infant. 'Tis your counsel,  
My lord should to the heavens be contrary,  
Oppose against their will.—Care not for issue;  
[To Leontes.

(1) At rest, dead.

The crown will find an heir : Great Alexander  
Left his to the worthiest ; so his successor  
Was like to be the best.

*Leon.* Good Paulina,—  
Who hast the memory of Hermione,  
I know, in honour,—O, that ever I  
Had squar'd me to thy counsel !—then, even now,  
I might have look'd upon my queen's full eyes ;  
Have taken treasure from her lips,—

*Paul.* And left them  
More rich, for what they yielded.

*Leon.* Thou speak'st truth.  
No more such wives ; therefore, no wife : one worse,  
And better us'd, would make her sainted spirit  
Again possess her corpse ; and, on this stage  
(Where we offenders now appear,) soul-vex'd,  
Begin, *And why to me ?*

*Paul.* Had she such power,  
She had just cause.

*Leon.* She had ; and would incense<sup>1</sup> me  
To murder her I married.

*Paul.* I should so :  
Were I the ghost that walk'd, I'd bid you mark  
Her eye ; and tell me, for what dull part in't  
You chose her : then I'd shriek, that even your ears  
Should rift<sup>2</sup> to hear me ; and the words that follow'd  
Should be, *Remember mine.*

*Leon.* Stars, very stars,  
And all eyes else dead coals !—fear thou no wife,  
I'll have no wife, Paulina.

*Paul.* Will you swear  
Never to marry, but by my free leave ?

*Leon.* Never, Paulina ; so be bless'd my spirit !

*Paul.* Then, good my lords, bear witness to his  
oath.

*Cleo.* You tempt him over-much.

*Paul.* Unless another,  
As like Hermione as is her picture,

(1) Instigate.

(2) Split.

272

Affront

*Cleo.*

*Paul*

Yet, if

No rem

To cho

As was

As, wa

To see

*Leon*

We sha

*Paul*

Shall b

Never t

*Gent*

Son of

The fai

To you

*Leon*

Like to

So out

'Tis no

By nee

*Gent*

And the

*Leon*

*Gent.*

That e'

*Paul*

As ever

Above

Give wa

Have sa

Is colder than that theme,<sup>1)</sup> *She had not been,  
Nor was not to be equal'd*;—thus your verse  
Flow'd with her beauty once; 'tis shrewdly ebb'd,  
To say, you have seen a better.

*Gent.* Pardon, madam :  
The one I have almost forgot; (your pardon,)  
The other, when she has obtain'd ybur eye,  
Will have your tongue too. This is such a creature,  
Would she begin a sect, might quench the zeal  
Of all professors else; make proselytes  
Of who she but bid follow.

*Paul.* How? not women?

*Gent.* Women will love her, that she is a woman  
More worth than any man; men, that she is  
The rarest of all women.

*Leon.* Go, Cleomenes;  
Yourself, assisted with your honour'd friends,  
Bring them to our embracement.—Still 'tis strange,  
[*Exeunt* Cleomenes, Lords, and Gentlemen.]  
He thus should steal upon us.

*Paul.* Had our prince  
(Jewel of children,) seen this hour, he had pair'd  
Well with this lord; there was not full a month  
Between their births.

*Leon.* Pr'ythee, no more; thou know'st  
He dies to me again, when talk'd of: sure,  
When I shall see this gentleman, thy speeches  
Will bring me to consider that, which may  
Unfurnish me of reason.—They are come.—

*Re-enter* Cleomenes, with Florizel, Perdita, and  
attendants.

Your mother was most true to wedlock, prince;  
For she did print your royal father off,  
Conceiving you: Were I but twenty-one,  
Your father's image is so hit in you,  
In every air, that I should call you brother,

*Paul.* Then the corse of Hermione, the sub  
your writing.

— 111.

S

As I did him ; and speak of something, wildly  
 By us perform'd before. Most dearly welcome !  
 And your fair princess, goddess !—O, alas !  
 I lost a couple, that 'twixt heaven and earth  
 Might thus have stood, begetting wonder, as  
 You, gracious couple, do ! and then I lost  
 (All mine own folly,) the society,  
 Amity too, of your brave father ; whom,  
 Though bearing misery, I desire my life  
 Once more to look upon.

*Flo.* By his command  
 Have I here touch'd Sicilia ; and from him  
 Give you all greetings, that a king, at friend,  
 Can send his brother : and, but infirmity  
 (Which waits upon worn time,) hath something  
 seiz'd

His wish'd ability, he had himself  
 The lands and waters 'twixt your throne and his  
 Measur'd, to look upon you ; whom he loves  
 (He bade me say so,) more than all the sceptres,  
 And those that bear them, living.

*Leon.* O, my brother,  
 (Good gentleman !) the wrongs I have done thee,  
 stir

Afresh within me ; and these thy offices,  
 So rarely kind, are as interpreters  
 Of my behind-hand slackness !—Welcome hither,  
 As is the spring to the earth. And hath he too  
 Expos'd this paragon to the fearful usage  
 (At least, ungentle,) of the dreadful Neptune,  
 To greet a man, not worth her pains ; much less  
 The adventure of her person ?

*Flo.* Good my lord,  
 She came from Libya.

*Leon.* Where the warlike Smalus,  
 That noble honour'd lord, is fear'd, and lov'd ?

*Flo.* Most royal sir, from thence ; from him,  
 whose daughter  
 His tears proclaim'd his, parting with her : thence  
 (A prosperous south-wind friendly,) we have cross'd,

To execute the charge my father gave me,  
For visiting your highness: My best train  
I have from your Sicilian shores dismiss'd;  
Who for Bohemia bend, to signify  
Not only my success in Libya, sir,  
But my arrival, and my wife's, in safety  
Here, where we are.

*Leon.* The blessed gods  
Purge all infection from our air, whilst you  
Do climate here! You have a holy father,  
A graceful<sup>1</sup> gentleman; against whose person,  
So sacred as it is, I have done sin:  
For which the heavens, taking angry note,  
Have left me issueless; and your father's bless'd,  
(As he from heaven merits it,) with you,  
Worthy his goodness. What might I have been,  
Might I a son and daughter now have look'd on,  
Such goodly things as you?

*Enter a Lord.*

*Lord.* Most noble sir,  
That, which I shall report, will bear no credit,  
Were not the proof so nigh. Please you, great sir,  
Bohemia greets you from himself, by me:  
Desires you to attach<sup>2</sup> his son; who has  
(His dignity and duty both cast off,)  
Fled from his father, from his hopes, and with  
A shepherd's daughter.

*Leon.* Where's Bohemia? speak.

*Lord.* Here in the city; I now came from him.  
I speak amazedly; and it becomes  
My marvel, and my message. To your court  
Whiles he was hast'ning (in the chase, it seems,  
Of this fair couple,) meets he on the way  
The father of this seeming lady, and  
Her brother, having both their country quitted  
With this young prince.

(1) Full of grace and virtue.

(2) Seize, arrest.

*Flo.* Camillo has betray'd me ;  
Whose honour, and whose honesty, till now,  
Endur'd all weathers.

*Lord.* Lay't so, to his charge ;  
He's with the king your father.

*Leon.* Who ? Camillo ?

*Lord.* Camillo, sir ; I spake with him ; who now  
Has these poor men in question.<sup>1</sup> Never saw I  
Wretches so quake : they kneel, they kiss the earth ;  
Forswear themselves as often as they speak :  
Bohemia stops his ears, and threatens them  
With divers deaths in death.

*Per.* O, my poor father !—  
The heaven sets spies upon us, will not have  
Our contract celebrated.

*Leon.* You are married ?

*Flo.* We are not, sir, nor are we like to be ;  
The stars, I see, will kiss the valleys first :—  
The odds for high and low's alike.<sup>2</sup>

*Leon.* My lord,  
Is this the daughter of a king ?

*Flo.* She is,  
When once she is my wife.

*Leon.* That once, I see, by your good father's  
speed,

Will come on very slowly. I am sorry,  
Most sorry, you have broken from his liking,  
Where you were tied in duty : and as sorry,  
Your choice is not so rich in worth<sup>3</sup> as beauty,  
That you might well enjoy her.

*Flo.* Dear, look up :

Though fortune, visible an enemy,  
Should chase us, with my father ; power no jot  
Hath she, to change our loves.—Beseech you, sir,  
Remember since you ow'd no more to time  
Than I do now : with thought of your affections,

(1) Conversation.

(2) A quibble on the false dice so called.

(3) Descent or wealth.

Step forth mine advocate ; at your request,  
My father will grant precious things, as trifles.

*Leon.* Would he do so, I'd beg your precious  
mistress,  
Which he counts but a trifle.

*Paul.* Sir, my liege,  
Your eye hath too much youth in't: not a month  
'Fore your queen died, she was more worth such  
gazes

Than what you look on now.

*Leon.* I thought of her,  
Even in these looks I made.—But your petition  
[To Florizel.

Is yet unanswer'd: I will to your father ;  
Your honour not o'erthrown by your desires,  
I am a friend to them, and you : upon which errand  
I now go toward him ; therefore, follow me,  
And mark what way I make : Come, good my  
lord. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The same. Before the palace. Enter Autolycus and a Gentleman.

*Aut.* 'Beseech you, sir, were you present at this  
relation ?

*I Gent.* I was by at the opening of the fardel,  
heard the old shepherd deliver the manner how he  
found it : whereupon, after a little amazedness, we  
were all commanded out of the chamber ; only  
this, methought I heard the shepherd say, he found  
the child.

*Aut.* I would most gladly know the issue of it.

*I Gent.* I make a broken delivery of the business ;  
—But the changes I perceived in the king, and  
Camillo, were very notes of admiration : they  
seemed almost, with staring on one another, to tear  
the cases of their eyes ; there was speech in their  
dumbness, language in their very gesture ; they  
looked, as they had heard of a world ransomed, or  
one destroyed : A notable passion of wonder ap-  
peared in them : but the wisest beholder, that knew



no more but seeing, could not say, if the importance<sup>1</sup> were joy, or sorrow : but in the extremity of the one, it must needs be.

*Enter another Gentleman.*

Here comes a gentleman, that, happily, knows more :  
The news, Rogero ?

2 *Gent.* Nothing but bonfires : The oracle is fulfilled ; the king's daughter is found : such a deal of wonder is broken out within this hour, that ballad-makers cannot be able to express it.

*Enter a third Gentleman.*

Here comes the lady Paulina's steward ; he can deliver you more.—How goes it now, sir ? this news, which is called true, is so like an old tale, that the verity of it is in strong suspicion : Has the king found his heir ?

3 *Gent.* Most true ; if ever truth were pregnant by circumstance : that, which you hear, you'll swear you see, there is such unity in the proofs. The mantle of queen Hermione :—her jewel about the neck of it :—the letters of Antigonus, found with it, which they know to be his character :—the majesty of the creature, in resemblance of the mother ;—the affection<sup>2</sup> of nobleness, which nature shows above her breeding,—and many other evidences, proclaim her, with all certainty, to be the king's daughter. Did you see the meeting of the two kings ?

2 *Gent.* No.

3 *Gent.* Then have you lost a sight, which was to be seen, cannot be spoken of. There might you have beheld one joy crown another ; so, and in such manner, that, it seemed, sorrow wept to take leave of them ; for their joy waded in tears. There was casting up of eyes, holding up of hands ; with

(1) The thing imported.

(2) Disposition or quality.

countenance of such distraction, that they were to be known by garment, not by favour.<sup>1</sup> Our king, being ready to leap out of himself for joy of his found daughter; as if that joy were now become a loss, cries, *O, thy mother, thy mother!* then asks Bohemia forgiveness; then embraces his son-in-law; then again worries he his daughter, with clipping<sup>2</sup> her; now he thanks the old shepherd, which stands by, like a weather-beaten conduit of many kings' reigns. I never heard of such another encounter, which lames report to follow it, and undoes description to do it.

2 *Gent.* What, pray you, became of Antigonus, that carried hence the child?

3 *Gent.* Like an old tale still; which will have matter to rehearse, though credit be asleep, and not an ear open: He was torn to pieces with a bear: this avouches the shepherd's son; who has not only his innocence (which seems much,) to justify him, but a handkerchief, and rings, of his, that Paulina knows.

1 *Gent.* What became of his bark, and his followers?

3 *Gent.* Wrecked, the same instant of their master's death; and in the view of the shepherd: so that all the instruments, which aided to expose the child, were even then lost, when it was found. But, O, the noble combat, that, 'twixt joy and sorrow, was fought in Paulina! She had one eye declined for the loss of her husband; another elevated that the oracle was fulfilled: She lifted the princess from the earth; and so locks her in embracing, as if she would pin her to her heart, that she might no more be in danger of losing.

1 *Gent.* The dignity of this act was worth the audience of kings and princes; for by such was it acted.

3 *Gent.* One of the prettiest touches of all, and

(1) Countenance, features.

(2) Embracing.

that which angled for mine eyes (caught the water, though not the fish,) was, when at the relation of the queen's death, with the manner how she came to it (bravely confessed, and lamented by the king,) how attentiveness wounded his daughter: till, from one sign of dolour to another, she did, with an *alas!* I would fain say, bleed tears; for, I am sure, my heart wept blood. Who was most marble there, - changed colour; some swooned, all sorrowed: if all the world could have seen it, the wo had been universal.

1 *Gent.* Are they returned to the court?

3 *Gent.* No: the princess hearing of her mother's statue, which is in the keeping of Paulina,—a piece many years in doing, and now newly performed by that rare Italian master, Julio Romano; who, had he himself eternity, and could put breath into his work, would beguile Nature of her custom, so perfectly he is her ape: he so near to Hermione hath done Hermione, that, they say, one would speak to her, and stand in hope of answer: thither, with all greediness of affection, are they gone; and there they intend to sup.

2 *Gent.* I thought, she had some great matter there in hand; for she hath privately, twice or thrice a day, ever since the death of Hermione, visited that removed<sup>2</sup> house. Shall we thither, and with our company piece the rejoicing?

1 *Gent.* Who would be thence, that has the benefit of access? every wink of an eye, some new grace will be born: our absence makes us unthriftiness to our knowledge. Let's along.

[*Exeunt Gentlemen.*]

*Aut.* Now, had I not the dash of my former life in me, would preferment drop on my head. I brought the old man and his son aboard the prince; told him, I heard him talk of a fardel, and I know not what: but he at that time, over-fond of the

(1) Most petrified with wonder.      (2) Remote.

shepherd's daughter (so he then took her to be,) who began to be much sea-sick, and himself little better, extremity of weather continuing, this mystery remained undiscovered. But 'tis all one to me: for had I been the finder-out of this secret, it would not have relished among my other discredits.

*Enter Shepherd and Clown.*

Here come those I have done good to against my will, and already appearing in the blossoms of their fortune.

*Shep.* Come, boy; I am past more children; but try sons and daughters will be all gentlemen born.

*Clo.* You are well met, sir: You denied to fight with me this other day, because I was no gentleman born: See you these clothes? say, you see them not, and think me still no gentleman born: you were best say, these robes are not gentlemen born. Give me the lie; do; and try whether I am not now a gentleman born.

*Aut.* I know, you are now, sir, a gentleman born.

*Clo.* Ay, and have been so any time these four hours.

*Shep.* And so have I, boy.

*Clo.* So you have:—but I was a gentleman born before my father: for the king's son took me by the hand, and called me, brother; and then the two kings called my father, brother; and then the prince, my brother, and the princess, my sister, called my father, father; and so we wept: and there was the first gentleman-like tears that ever we shed.

*Shep.* We may live, son, to shed many more.

*Clo.* Ay; or else 'twere hard luck, being in so preposterous estate as we are.

*Aut.* I humbly beseech you, sir, to pardon me all the faults I have committed to your worship, and to give me your good report to the prince my master.

*Shep.* 'Pr'ythee, son, do; for we must be gentle, now we are gentlemen.

*Clo.* Thou wilt amend thy life?

*Aut.* Ay, an it like your good worship.

*Clo.* Give me thy hand: I will swear to the prince, thou art as honest a true fellow as any is in Bohemia.

*Shep.* You may say it, but not swear it.

*Clo.* Not swear it, now I am a gentleman? Let boors and franklins<sup>1</sup> say it, I'll swear it.

*Shep.* How if it be false, son?

*Clo.* If it be ne'er so false, a true gentleman may swear it, in the behalf of his friend:—And I'll swear to the prince, thou art a tall<sup>2</sup> fellow of thy hands, and that thou wilt not be drunk; but I know, thou art no tall fellow of thy hands, and that thou wilt be drunk; but I'll swear it: and I would, thou would'st be a tall fellow of thy hands.

*Aut.* I will prove so, sir, to my power.

*Clo.* Ay, by any means prove a tall fellow: if I do not wonder, how thou dar'st venture to be drunk, not being a tall fellow, trust me not.—Hark! the kings and the princes, our kindred, are going to see the queen's picture. Come, follow us: we'll be thy good masters. {*Exeunt.*

*SCENE III.—The same. A room in Paulina's house. Enter Leontes, Polixenes, Florizel, Perdita, Camillo, Paulina, Lords, and Attendants.*

*Leon.* O grave and good Paulina, the great comfort

That I have had of thee!

*Paul.* What, sovereign sir,  
I did not well, I meant well: All my services,  
You have paid home: but that you have vouchsaf'd  
With your crown'd brother, and these your contracted

Heirs of your kingdoms, my poor house to visit,

(1) Yeomen.

(2) Stout.

It is a surplus of your grace, which never  
My life may last to answer.

*Leon.* O Paulina,  
We honour you with trouble: But we came  
To see the statue of our queen: your gallery  
Have we pass'd through, not without much content  
In many singularities; but we saw not  
That which my daughter came to look upon,  
The statue of her mother.

*Paul.* As she liv'd peerless,  
So her dead likeness, I do well believe,  
Excels whatever yet you look'd upon,  
Or hand of man hath done; therefore I keep it  
Lonely, apart: But here it is: prepare  
To see the life as lively mock'd, as ever  
Still sleep mock'd death: behold; and say, 'tis well.

[Paulina undraws a curtain, and discovers a statue.]

I like your silence, it the more shows off  
Your wonder: But yet speak;—first, you, my liege.  
Comes it not something near?

*Leon.* Her natural posture!—  
Chide me, dear stone; that I may say, indeed,  
Thou art Hermione: or, rather, thou art she,  
In thy not chiding; for she was as tender,  
As infancy, and grace.—But yet, Paulina,  
Hermione was not so much wrinkled; nothing  
So aged, as this seems.

*Pol.* O, not by much.

*Paul.* So much the more our carver's excellence;  
Which lets go by some sixteen years, and makes her  
As she liv'd now.

*Leon.* As now she might have done,  
So much to my good comfort, as it is  
Now piercing to my soul. O, thus she stood,  
Even with such life of majesty (warm life,  
As now it coldly stands,) when first I woo'd her!  
I am asham'd: Does not the stone rebuke me,  
For being more stone than it?—O, royal piece,  
There's magic in thy majesty; which has

My evils conjur'd to remembrance ; and  
From thy admiring daughter took the spirits,  
Standing like stone with thee !

*Per.* And give me leave ;  
And do not say, 'tis superstition, that  
I kneel, and then implore her blessing.—Lady,  
Dear queen, that ended when I but began,  
Give me that hand of yours, to kiss.

*Paul.* O, patience,  
The statue is but newly fix'd, the colour's  
Not dry.

*Cam.* My lord, your sorrow was too sore laid on ;  
Which sixteen winters cannot blow away,  
So many summers, dry : scarce any joy  
Did ever so long live ; no sorrow,  
But kill'd itself much sooner.

*Pol.* Dear my brother,  
Let him, that was the cause of this, have power  
To take off so much grief from you, as he  
Will piece up in himself.

*Paul.* Indeed, my lord,  
If I had thought, the sight of my poor image  
Would thus have wrought<sup>1</sup> you (for the stone is  
mine,)

I'd not have show'd it.

*Leon.* Do not draw the curtain.

*Paul.* No longer shall you gaze on't ; lest your  
fancy

May think anon, it moves.

*Leon.* Let be, let be.  
Would I were dead, but that methinks already—  
What was he, that did make it ?—See, my lord,  
Would you not deem, it breath'd ? and that those  
veins

Did verily bear blood ?

*Pol.* Masterly done :  
The very life seems warm upon her lip.

(1) Worked, agitated.

*Leon.* The fixure of her eye has motion in't,<sup>1</sup>  
As<sup>2</sup> we are mock'd with art.

*Paul.* I'll draw the curtain;  
My lord's almost so far transported, that  
He'll think anon, it lives.

*Leon.* O sweet Paulina,  
Make me to think so twenty years together;  
No settled senses of the world can match  
The pleasure of that madness. Let't alone.

*Paul.* I am sorry, sir, I have thus far stirr'd  
you : but  
I could afflict you further.

*Leon.* Do, Paulina;  
For this affliction has a taste as sweet  
As any cordial comfort.—Still, methinks,  
There is an air comes from her : What fine chisel  
Could ever yet cut breath? Let no man mock me,  
For I will kiss her.

*Paul.* Good my lord, forbear :  
The ruddiness upon her lip is wet;  
You'll mar it, if you kiss it; stain your own  
With oily painting : Shall I draw the curtain?

*Leon.* No, not these twenty years.

*Per.* So long could I  
Stand by, a looker on.

*Paul.* Either forbear,  
Quit presently the chapel; or resolve you  
For more amazement : If you can behold it,  
I'll make the statue move indeed; descend,  
And take you by the hand : but then you'll think  
(Which I protest against,) I am assisted  
By wicked powers.

*Leon.* What you can make her do,  
I am content to look on : what to speak,  
I am content to hear; for 'tis as easy  
To make her speak, as move.

(1) *i. e.* Though her eye be fixed, it seems to have  
motion in it.

(2) As if.



*Paul.* It is requir'd,  
 You do awake your faith : Then, all stand still ;  
 Or those, that think it is unlawful business  
 I am about, let them depart.

*Leon.* Proceed ;  
 No foot shall stir.

*Paul.* Music ; awake her : strike—  
 [*Music.*

'Tis time ; descend ; be stone no more : approach ;  
 Strike all that look upon with marvel. Come ;  
 I'll fill your grave up : stir ; nay, come away ;  
 Bequeath to death your numbness, for from him  
 Dear life redeems you.—You perceive, she stirs :

[*Hermione comes down from the pea-stal.*  
 Start not : her actions shall be holy, as,  
 You hear, my spell is lawful : do not shun her,  
 Until you see her die again ; for then  
 You kill her double : Nay, present your hand :  
 When she was young, you woo'd her ; now, in age,  
 Is she become the suitor.

*Leon.* O, she's warm ! [*Embracing her.*  
 If this be magic, let it be an art  
 Lawful as eating.

*Pol.* She embraces him.

*Cam.* She hangs about his neck ;  
 If she pertain to life, let her speak too.

*Pol.* Ay, and make't manifest where she has  
 liv'd,

Or, how stol'n from the dead.

*Paul.* That she is living,  
 Were it but told you, should be hooted at  
 Like an old tale ; but it appears, she lives,  
 Though yet she speak not. Mark a little while.—  
 Please you to interpose, fair madam ; kneel,  
 And pray your mother's blessing.—Turn, good  
 lady ;

Our Perdita is found.

[*Presenting Per. who kneels to Her.*  
*Her.* You gods, look down,  
 And from your sacred vials pour your graces

Upon my daughter's head !—Tell me, mine own,  
Where hast thou been preserv'd ? where liv'd ?  
how found

Thy father's court ? for thou shalt hear, that I,—  
Knowing by Paulina, that the oracle  
Gave hope thou wast in being,—have preserv'd  
Myself, to see the issue.

*Paul.* There's time enough for that ;  
Lest they desire, upon this push to trouble  
Your joys with like relation.—Go together,  
You precious winners<sup>1</sup> all ; your exultation  
Partake<sup>2</sup> to every one. I, an old turtle,  
Will wing me to some wither'd bough ; and there  
My mate, that's never to be found again,  
Lament till I am lost.

*Leon.* O peace, Paulina ;  
Thou should'st a husband take by my consent,  
As I by thine, a wife : this is a match,  
And made between's by vows. Thou hast found  
mine ;

But how, is to be question'd : for I saw her,  
As I thought, dead ; and have, in vain, said many  
A prayer upon her grave : I'll not seek far  
(For him, I partly know his mind,) to find thee  
An honourable husband :—Come, Camillo,  
And take her by the hand : whose worth, and  
honesty,

Is richly noted ; and here justified  
By us, a pair of kings.—Let's from this place.—  
What ?—Look upon my brother :—both your par-  
dons,

That e'er I put between your holy looks  
My ill suspicion.—This your son-in-law,  
And son unto the king (whom heavens directing,)  
Is troth-plight to your daughter.—Good Paulina,

(1) You who by this discovery have gained what  
you desired.

(2) Participate.

Lead us from hence ; where we may leisurely  
Each one demand, and answer to his part  
Perform'd in this wide gap of time, since first  
We were dissever'd : Hastily lead away. [Exe.

---

This play, as Dr. Warburton justly observes, is, with all its absurdities, very entertaining. The character of Autolycus is naturally conceived, and strongly represented.

JOHNSON.

**COMEDY OF ERRORS.**

**VOL. III.    T**

PERSONS REPRESENTED.

*Solinus, duke of Ephesus.*

*Ægeon, a merchant of Syracuse.*

*Antipholus of Ephesus,* } *twin brothers, and sons*  
*Antipholus of Syracuse,* } *to Ægeon and Æma-*  
                                  } *lia, but unknown to*  
                                  } *each other.*

*Dromio of Ephesus,* } *twin brothers, and at-*  
*Dromio of Syracuse,* } *tendants on the two*  
                                  } *Antipholus's.*

*Balthazar, a merchant.*

*Angelo, a goldsmith.*

*A merchant, friend to Antipholus of Syracuse.*

*Pinch, a schoolmaster, and a conjuror.*

*Æmilia, wife to Ægeon, an abbess at Ephesus.*

*Adriana, wife to Antipholus of Ephesus.*

*Luciana, her sister.*

*Luce, her servant.*

*A courtezan.*

*Gaoler, officers, and other attendants.*

*Scene, Ephesus*

## COMEDY OF ERRORS.

### ACT I.

*SCENE I.—A hall in the Duke's Palace. Enter Duke, Ægeon, Gaoler, officer, and other attendants.*

*Ægeon.*

**P**ROCEED, Solinus, to procure my fall,  
And, by the doom of death, end woes and all.

*Duke.* Merchant of Syracuse, plead no more;  
I am not partial, to infringe our laws:  
The enmity and discord, which of late  
Sprung from the rancorous outrage of your duke  
To merchants, our well-dealing countrymen,—  
Who, wanting guilders<sup>1</sup> to redeem their lives,  
Have seal'd his rigorous statutes with their bloods,—  
Excludes all pity from our threat'ning looks.  
For, since the mortal and intestine jars  
'Twixt thy seditious countrymen and us,  
It hath in solemn synods been decreed,  
Both by the Syracusans and ourselves,  
To admit no traffic to our adverse towns:  
Nay, more,  
If any, born at Ephesus, be seen  
At any Syracusan marts<sup>2</sup> and fairs;  
Again, If any Syracusan born  
Come to the bay of Ephesus, he dies,  
His goods confiscate to the duke's dispose:  
Unless a thousand marks be levied,

(1) Name of a coin.

(2) Markets.

To quit the penalty, and to ransom him.  
 Thy substance, valued at the highest rate,  
 Cannot amount unto a hundred marks;  
 Therefore, by law thou art condemn'd to die

*Æge.* Yet this my comfort; when your words  
 are done,

My woes end likewise with the evening sun.

*Duke.* Well, Syracusan, say, in brief, the cause  
 Why thou departedst from thy native home;  
 And for what cause thou cam'st to Ephesus.

*Æge.* A heavier task could not have been im-  
 pos'd,

Than I to speak my griefs unspeakable:  
 Yet, that the world may witness, that my end  
 Was wrought by nature,<sup>1</sup> not by vile offence,  
 I'll utter what my sorrow gives me leave.  
 In Syracuse was I born; and wed  
 Unto a woman, happy but for me,  
 And by me too, had not our hap been bad.  
 With her I liv'd in joy; our wealth increas'd,  
 By prosperous voyages I often made  
 To Epidamnum, till my factor's death;  
 And he (great care of goods at random left)  
 Drew me from kind embracements of my spouse:  
 From whom my absence was not six months old,  
 Before herself (almost at fainting, under  
 The pleasing punishment that women bear,) had  
 Made provision for her following me,  
 And soon, and safe, arriv'd where I was.  
 There she had not been long, but she became  
 A joyful mother of two goodly sons;  
 And, which was strange, the one so like the other,  
 As could not be distinguish'd but by names.  
 That very hour, and in the self-same inn,  
 A poor mean woman was delivered  
 Of such a burden, male twins, both alike:  
 Those, for their parents were exceeding poor,  
 I bought, and brought up to attend my sons.

(1) Natural affection.

My wife, not meanly proud of two such boys,  
Made daily motions for our home return :  
Unwilling I agreed ; alas, too soon.  
We came aboard :  
A league from Epidamnum had we sail'd,  
Before the always-wind-obeying deep  
Gave any tragic instance of our harm :  
But longer did we not retain much hope ;  
For what obscured light the heavens did grant  
Did but convey unto our fearful minds  
A doubtful warrant of immediate death ;  
Which, though myself would gladly have embrac'd,  
Yet the incessant weepings of my wife,  
Weeping before for what she saw must come,  
And piteous plainings of the pretty babes,  
That mourn'd for fashion, ignorant what to fear,  
Forc'd me to seek delays for them and me.  
And this it was,—for other means was none.—  
The sailors sought for safety by our boat,  
And left the ship, then sinking-ripe, to us :  
My wife, more careful for the latter-born,  
Had fasten'd him unto a small spare mast,  
Such as sea-faring men provide for storms ;  
To him one of the other twins was bound,  
Whilst I had been like heedful of the other.  
The children thus dispos'd, my wife and I,  
Fixing our eyes on whom our care was fix'd,  
Fasten'd ourselves at either end the mast ;  
And floating straight, obedient to the stream,  
Were carried towards Corinth, as we thought.  
At length the sun, gazing upon the earth,  
Dispers'd those vapours that offended us ;  
And, by the benefit of his wish'd light,  
The seas wax'd calm, and we discovered  
Two ships from far making amain to us,  
Of Corinth that, of Epidaurus this :  
But ere they came,—O, let me say no more !  
Gather the sequel by that went before.

*Duke.* Nay, forward, old man, do not break off  
so ;



For we may pity, though not pardon thee.

*Æge.* O, had the gods done so, I had not now  
Worthily term'd them merciless to us !  
For, ere the ships could meet by twice five leagues,  
We were encounter'd by a mighty rock ;  
Which being violently borne upon,  
Our helpful ship was splitted in the midst,  
So that, in this unjust divorce of us,  
Fortune had left to both of us alike  
What to delight in, what to sorrow for.  
Her part, poor soul ! seeming as burdened  
With lesser weight, but not with lesser wo,  
Was carried with more speed before the wind ;  
And in our sight they three were taken up  
By fishermen of Corinth, as we thought.  
At length, another ship had seiz'd on us ;  
And, knowing whom it was their hap to save,  
Gave helpful welcome to their shipwreck'd guests :  
And would have rest<sup>1</sup> the fishers of their prey,  
Had not their bark been very slow of sail,  
And therefore homeward did they bend their course.  
Thus have you heard me sever'd from my bliss ;  
That by misfortunes was my life prolong'd,  
To tell sad stories of my own mishaps.

*Duke.* And, for the sake of them thou sorrowest  
for,

Do me the favour to dilate at full  
What hath befall'n of them, and thee, till now.

*Æge.* My youngest boy, and yet my eldest care,  
At eighteen years became inquisitive  
After his brother ; and importun'd me,  
That his attendant, (for his case was like,  
Reft of his brother, but retain'd his name,)  
Might bear him company in the quest of him :  
Whom whilst I labour'd of a love to see,  
I hazarded the loss of whom I lov'd.  
Five summers have I spent in furthest Greece,  
Roaming clean<sup>2</sup> through the bounds of Asia,

(1) Deprived.      (2) Clear, completely.

And, coasting homeward, came to Ephesus ;  
Hopeless to find, yet loth to leave unsought,  
Or that, or any place that harbours men.  
But here must end the story of my life ;  
And happy were I in my timely death,  
Could all my travels warrant me they live.

*Duke.* Hapless Ægeon, whom the fates have  
mark'd

To bear the extremity of dire mishap !  
Now, trust me, were it not against our laws,  
Against my crown, my oath, my dignity,  
Which princes, would they, may not disannul,  
My soul should sue an advocate for thee.  
But, though thou art adjudged to the death,  
And passed sentence may not be recall'd,  
But to our honour's great disparagement,  
Yet will I favour thee in what I can :  
Therefore, merchant, I'll limit thee this day,  
To seek thy help by beneficial help :  
Try all the friends thou hast in Ephesus ;  
Beg thou, or borrow, to make up the sum,  
And live ; if not, then thou art doom'd to die :—  
Gaoler, take him to thy custody.

*Gaol.* I will, my lord.

*Æge.* Hopeless, and helpless, doth Ægeon wend,<sup>1</sup>  
But to procrastinate his lifeless end. [*Exit.*]

SCENE II.—*A public place. Enter Antipholus  
and Dromio of Syracuse, and a Merchant.*

*Mer.* Therefore, give out, you are of Epidamnum,  
Lest that your goods too soon be confiscate.  
This very day, a Syracusan merchant  
Is apprehended for arrival here ;  
And, not being able to buy out his life,  
According to the statute of the town,  
Dies ere the weary sun set in the west.  
There is your money that I had to keep.

*Ant. S.* Go bear it to the Centaur,<sup>2</sup> where we host,

(1) Go. (2) The sign of their hotel.

And stay there, Dromio, till I come to thee.  
Within this hour it will be dinner-time :  
Till that, I'll view the manners of the town,  
Peruse the traders, gaze upon the buildings,  
And then return, and sleep within mine inn ;  
For with long travel I am stiff and weary.  
Get thee away.

*Dro. S.* Many a man would take you at your word,  
And go indeed, having so good a mean.

[Exit *Dro. S.*]

*Ant. S.* A trusty villain,<sup>1</sup> sir ; that very oft,  
When I am dull with care and melancholy,  
Lightens my humour with his merry jests.  
What, will you walk with me about the town,  
And then go to my inn, and dine with me ?

*Mer.* I am invited, sir, to certain merchants,  
Of whom I hope to make much benefit ;  
I crave your pardon. Soon, at five o'clock,  
Please you, I'll meet with you upon the mart,<sup>2</sup>  
And afterwards consert you till bed-time ;  
My present business calls me from you now.

*Ant. S.* Farewell till then : I will go lose myself,  
And wander up and down, to view the city.

*Mer.* Sir, I commend you to your own content.  
[Exit Merchant]

*Ant. S.* He that commends me to mine own content,  
Commends me to the thing I cannot get.  
I to the world am like a drop of water,  
That in the ocean seeks another drop ;  
Who, falling there to find his fellow forth,  
Unseen, inquisitive, confounds himself :  
So I, to find a mother, and a brother,  
In quest of them, unhappy, lose myself.

*Enter Dromio of Ephesus.*

Here comes the almanac of my true date,—

(1) i. e. Servant. (2) Exchange, market-place.

What now? How chance, thou art return'd so soon?

*Dro. E.* Return'd so soon! rather approach'd too late:

The capon burns, the pig falls from the spit;

The clock hath stricken twelve upon the bell,

My mistress made it one upon my cheek:

• She is so hot because the meat is cold;

The meat is cold, because you come not home;

You come not home, because you have no stomach.

You have no stomach, having broke your fast;

But we, that know what 'tis to fast and pray,

Are penitent for your default to-day.

*Ant. S.* Stop in your wind, sir; tell me this, I pray;

Where have you left the money that I gave you?

*Dro. E.* O,—six-pence, that I had o' Wednesday last,

To pay the saddler for my mistress' crupper;—

The saddler had it, sir, I kept it not.

*Ant. S.* I am not in a sportive humour now:

Tell me, and dally not, where is the money?

We being strangers here, how dar'st thou trust

So great a charge from thine own custody?

*Dro. E.* I pray you, jest, sir, as you sit at dinner:

I from my mistress come to you in post;

If I return, I shall be post indeed:

For she will score your fault upon my pate.

Methinks, your maw, like mine, should be your clock,

And strike you home without a messenger.

*Ant. S.* Come, Dromio, come, these jests are out of season;

Reserve them till a merrier hour than this:

Where is the gold I gave in charge to thee?

*Dro. E.* To me, sir? why you gave no gold to me.

*Ant. S.* Come on, sir knave, have done your foolishness,

And tell me, how thou hast dispos'd thy charge.

*Dro. E.* My charge was but to fetch you from the mart

Home to your house, the Phoenix, sir, to dinner;  
My mistress, and her sister, stay for you.

*Ant. S.* Now, as I am a Christian, answer me,  
In what safe place you have bestow'd my money  
Or I shall break that merry sconce<sup>1</sup> of yours,  
That stands on tricks when I am undispos'd:  
Where is the thousand marks thou hadst of me?

*Dro. E.* I have some marks of yours upon my  
pate,

Some of my mistress' marks upon my shoulders,  
But not a thousand marks between you both.—  
If I should pay your worship those again,  
Perchance, you will not bear them patiently.

*Ant. S.* Thy mistress' marks! what mistress,  
slave, hast thou?

*Dro. E.* Your worship's wife, my mistress at  
the Phoenix;

She that doth fast, till you come home to dinner,  
And prays, that you will hie you home to dinner.

*Ant. S.* What, wilt thou flout me thus unto my  
face,

Being forbid? There, take you that, sir knave.

*Dro. E.* What mean you, sir? for God's sake,  
hold your hands;

Nay, an you will not, sir, I'll take my heels.

[Exit Dromio E.]

*Ant. S.* Upon my life, by some device or other,  
The villain is o'er-raught<sup>1</sup> of all my money.

They say, this town is full of cozenage;  
As, nimble jugglers, that deceive the eye,  
Dark-working sorcerers, that change the mind,  
Soul-killing witches, that deform the body;  
Disguised cheaters, prating mountebanks,  
And many such like liberties of sin:  
If it prove so, I will be gone the sooner.  
I'll to the Centaur, to go seek this slave;  
I greatly fear, my money is not safe. [Exit.]

(1) Head.

(2) Over-reached.

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*A public place. Enter Adriana, and Luciana.*

*Adr.* Neither my husband, nor the slave return'd,  
That in such haste I sent to seek his master !  
Sure, Luciana, it is two o'clock.

*Luc.* Perhaps, some merchant hath invited him,  
And from the mart he's somewhere gone to dinner.  
Good sister, let us dine, and never fret :

A man is master of his liberty :  
Time is their master ; and, when they see time,  
They'll go, or come : If so, be patient, sister.

*Adr.* Why should their liberty than ours be more?

*Luc.* Because their business still lies out o'door.

*Adr.* Look, when I serve him so, he takes it ill

*Luc.* O, know, he is the bridle of your will.

*Adr.* There's none, but asses, will be bridled so.

*Luc.* Why, headstrong liberty is lash'd with wo.  
There's nothing, situate under heaven's eye,  
But hath his bound, in earth, in sea, in sky :  
The beasts, the fishes, and the winged fowls,  
Are their males' subjects, and at their controls :  
Men, more divine, and masters of all these,  
Lords of the wide world, and wild watry seas,  
Indued with intellectual sense and souls,  
Of more pre-eminence than fish and fowls,  
Are masters to their females, and their lords :  
Then let your will attend on their accords.

*Adr.* This servitude makes you to keep unwed.

*Luc.* Not this, but troubles of the marriage bed.

*Adr.* But, were you wedded, you would bear  
some sway.

*Luc.* Ere I learn love, I'll practise to obey.

*Adr.* How if your husband start some other  
where?

*Luc.* Till he come home again, I would forbear.

*Adr.* Patience unmov'd, no marvel though she  
pause ;

They can be meek, that have no other cause.

A wretched soul, bruise'd with adversity,  
We bid be quiet, when we hear it cry ;  
But were we burthen'd with like weight of pain,  
As much, or more, we should ourselves complain :  
So thou, that hast no unkind mate to grieve thee,  
With urging helpless patience would'st relieve me :  
But, if thou live to see like right bereft,  
This fool-begg'd patience in thee will be left.

*Luc.* Well, I will marry one day, but to try ;—  
Here comes your man, now is your husband nigh.

*Enter Dromio of Ephesus.*

*Adr.* Say, is your tardy master now at hand ?

*Dro. E.* Nay, he is at two hands with me, and  
that my two ears can witness.

*Adr.* Say, didst thou speak with him ? know'st  
thou his mind ?

*Dro. E.* Ay, ay, he told his mind upon mine ear :  
Beshrew his hand, I scarce could understand it.

*Luc.* Spake he so doubtfully, thou couldst not  
feel his meaning ?

*Dro. E.* Nay, he struck so plainly, I could too  
well feel his blows ; and withal so doubtfully, that  
I could scarce understand them.<sup>1</sup>

*Adr.* But say, I pr'ythee, is he coming home ?  
It seems, he hath great care to please his wife.

*Dro. E.* Why, mistress, sure my master is horn-  
mad.

*Adr.* Horn-mad, thou villain ?

*Dro. E.* I mean not cuckold-mad ; but, sure,  
he's stark mad :

When I desir'd him to come home to dinner,  
He ask'd me for a thousand marks in gold :

'Tis dinner-time, quoth I ; *My gold*, quoth he :

Your meat doth burn, quoth I ; *My gold*, quoth he :

Will you come home ? quoth I ; *My gold*, quoth he :

Where is the thousand marks I gave thee, villain ?

The pig, quoth I, is burn'd ; *My gold*, quoth he :

(1) i. e. Scarce stand under them.

*My mistress, sir, quoth I ; Hang up thy mistress ,  
I know not thy mistress ; out on thy mistress !*

*Luc.* Quoth who ?

*Dro. E.* Quoth my master :

*I know, quoth he, no house, no wife, no mistress ;—  
So that my errand, due unto my tongue,  
I thank him, I bear home upon my shoulders ;  
For, in conclusion, he did beat me there.*

*Adr.* Go back again, thou slave, and fetch him  
home.

*Dro. E.* Go back again, and be new beaten  
home ?

For God's sake, send some other messenger.

*Adr.* Back, slave, or I will break thy pate across.

*Dro. E.* And he will bless that cross with other  
beating :

Between you I shall have a holy head.

*Adr.* Hence, prating peasant ; fetch thy master  
home.

*Dro. E.* Am I so round with you, as you with me,  
That like a football you do spurn me thus ?

You spurn me hence, and he will spurn me hither :  
If I last in this service, you must case me in leather.

*[Exit.]*

*Luc.* Fie, how impatience lowreth in your face !

*Adr.* His company must do his minions grace,  
Whilst I at home starve for a merry look.

Hath homely age the alluring beauty took  
From my poor cheek ? then he hath wasted it :

Are my discourses dull ? barren my wit ?

If voluble and sharp discourse be marr'd,

Unkindness blunts it, more than marble hard.

Do their gay vestments his affections bait ?

That's not my fault, he's master of my state :

What ruins are in me that can be found

By him not ruin'd ? then is he the ground

Of my defeatures :<sup>1</sup> My decayed fair<sup>2</sup>

A sunny look of his would soon repair :

(1) Alteration of features. (2) *Fair*, for fairness.



But, too unruly deer, he breaks the pale,  
And feeds from home; poor I am but his stale.<sup>1</sup>

*Luc.* Self-arming jealousy!—fie, beat it hence.

*Adr.* Unfeeling fools can with such wrongs dispense.

I know his eye doth homage elsewhere;  
Or else, what lets<sup>2</sup> it but he would be here?  
Sister, you know he promis'd me a chain;—  
Would that alone, alone he would detain,  
So he would keep fair quarter with his bed!  
I see, the jewel, best enamelled,  
Will lose his beauty; and though gold 'bides still,  
That others touch, yet often touching will  
Wear gold: and so no man, that hath a name,  
But falsehood and corruption doth it shame.  
Since that my beauty cannot please his eye,  
I'll weep what's left away, and weeping die.

*Luc.* How many fond fools serve mad jealousy!  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*The same.* Enter Antipholus of Syracuse.

*Ant. S.* The gold, I gave to Dromio, is laid up  
Safe at the Centaur; and the heedful slave  
Is wander'd forth, in care to seek me out.  
By computation, and mine host's report,  
I could not speak with Dromio, since at first  
I sent him from the mart: See, here he comes.

*Enter Dromio of Syracuse.*

How now, sir? is your merry humour alter'd?  
As you love strokes, so jest with me again.  
You know no Centaur? you receiv'd no gold?  
Your mistress sent to have me home to dinner?  
My house was at the Phoenix? Wast thou mad,  
That thus so madly thou didst answer me?

*Dro. S.* What answer, sir? when spake I such  
a word?

(1) Stalking-horse.

(2) Hinders.

*Ant. S.* Even now, even here, not half an hour since.

*Dro. S.* I did not see you since you sent me hence,  
Home to the Centaur, with the gold you gave me.

*Ant. S.* Villain, thou didst deny the gold's receipt;

And told'st me of a mistress and a dinner;  
For which, I hope, thou felt'st I was displeas'd.

*Dro. S.* I am glad to see you in this merry vein:  
What means this jest? I pray you, master, tell me.

*Ant. S.* Yea, dost thou jeer, and flout me in the teeth?

Think'st thou, I jest? Hold, take thou that, and that.

[Beating him.]

*Dro. S.* Hold, sir, for God's sake: now your jest is earnest:

Upon what bargain do you give it me?

*Ant. S.* Because that I familiarly sometimes  
Do use you for my fool, and chat with you,  
Your sauciness will jest upon my love,  
And make a common of my serious hours.<sup>1</sup>  
When the sun shines, let foolish gnats make sport,  
But creep in crannies, when he hides his beams.  
If you will jest with me, know my aspect,<sup>2</sup>  
And fashion your demeanour to my looks,  
Or I will beat this method in your sconce.

*Dro. S.* Sconce, call you it? so you would leave  
battering, I had rather have it a head: an you  
use these blows long, I must get a sconce for my  
head, and insconce<sup>3</sup> it too; or else I shall seek my  
wit in my shoulders. But, I pray, sir, why am I  
beaten?

*Ant. S.* Dost thou not know?

*Dro. S.* Nothing, sir; but that I am beaten.

*Ant. S.* Shall I tell you why?

(1) *i. e.* Intrude on them when you please.

(2) Study my countenance.

(3) A *sconce* was a fortification.

*Dro. S.* Ay, sir, and wherefore ; for, they say, every why hath a wherefore.

*Ant. S.* Why, first,—for flouting me ; and then, wherefore,—

For urging it the second time to me.

*Dro. S.* Was there ever any man thus beaten out of season,  
When, in the why, and the wherefore, is neither rhyme nor reason?—

Well, sir, I thank you.

*Ant. S.* Thank me, sir ? for what ?

*Dro. S.* Marry, sir, for this something that you gave me for nothing.

*Ant. S.* I'll make you amends next, to give you nothing for something. But say, sir, is it dinner-time ?

*Dro. S.* No, sir ; I think, the meat wants that I have.

*Ant. S.* In good time, sir, what's that ?

*Dro. S.* Basting.

*Ant. S.* Well, sir, then 'twill be dry.

*Dro. S.* If it be, sir, I pray you eat none of it.

*Ant. S.* Your reason ?

*Dro. S.* Lest it make you choleric, and purchase me another dry basting.

*Ant. S.* Well, sir, learn to jest in good time ; There's a time for all things.

*Dro. S.* I durst have denied that, before you were so choleric.

*Ant. S.* By what rule, sir ?

*Dro. S.* Marry, sir, by a rule as plain as the plain bald pate of father Time himself.

*Ant. S.* Let's hear it.

*Dro. S.* There's no time for a man to recover his hair, that grows bald by nature.

*Ant. S.* May he not do it by fine and recovery ?

*Dro. S.* Yes, to pay a fine for a peruke, and recover the lost hair of another man.

*Ant. S.* Why is time such a niggard of hair, being, as it is, so plentiful an excrement ?

*Dro. S.* Because it is a blessing that he bestows on beasts : and what he hath scanted men in hair he hath given them in wit.

*Ant. S.* Why, but there's many a man hath more hair than wit.

*Dro. S.* Not a man of those, but he hath the wit to lose his hair.

*Ant. S.* Why, thou didst conclude hairy men plain dealers without wit.

*Dro. S.* The plainer dealer, the sooner lost : Yet he loseth it in a kind of jollity.

*Ant. S.* For what reason ?

*Dro. S.* For two ; and sound ones too.

*Ant. S.* Nay, not sound, I pray you.

*Dro. S.* Sure ones then.

*Ant. S.* Nay, not sure, in a thing falsing.

*Dro. S.* Certain ones then.

*Ant. S.* Name them.

*Dro. S.* The one, to save the money that he spends in tiring ; the other, that at dinner they should not drop in his porridge.

*Ant. S.* You would all this time have proved there is no time for all things.

*Dro. S.* Marry, and did, sir ; namely, no time to recover hair lost by nature.

*Ant. S.* But your reason was not substantial, why there is no time to recover.

*Dro. S.* Thus I mend it : Time himself is bald, and therefore, to the world's end, will have bald followers.

*Ant. S.* I knew, 'twould be a bald conclusion : But soft ! who wafts<sup>1</sup> us yonder ?

*Enter Adriana and Luciana.*

*Adr.* Ay, ay, Antipholus, look strange, and frown ;

Some other mistress hath thy sweet aspects,  
I am not Adriana, nor thy wife.

(1) Beckons.

VOL. III.

U

The time was once, when thou unurg'd would'st  
vow,

That never words were music to thine ear,  
That never object pleasing in thine eye,  
That never touch well-welcome to thy hand,  
That never meat sweet-savour'd in thy taste,  
Unless I spake, look'd, touch'd, or carv'd to thee.  
How comes it now, my husband, oh, how comes it,  
That thou art then estranged from thyself?  
Thyself I call it, being strange to me,  
That, undividable, incorporate,  
Am better than thy dear self's better part.  
Ah, do not tear away thyself from me;  
For know, my love, as easy may'st thou fall  
A drop of water in the breaking gulf,  
And take unmingled thence that drop again,  
Without addition, or diminishing,  
As take from me thyself, and not me too.  
How dearly would it touch thee to the quick,  
Should'st thou but hear I were licentious;  
And that this body, consecrate to thee,  
By ruffian lust should be contaminate!  
Would'st thou not spit at me, and spurn at me,  
And hurl the name of husband in my face,  
And tear the stain'd skin off my harlot brow,  
And from my false hand cut the wedding ring,  
And break it with a deep-divorcing vow?  
I know thou canst; and therefore, see, thou do it.  
I am possess'd with an adulterate blot;  
My blood is mingled with the crime of lust:  
For, if we two be one, and thou play false,  
I do digest the poison of thy flesh,  
Being strumpeted by thy contagion.  
Keep then fair league and truce with thy true bed;  
I live dis-stain'd, thou undishonoured.

*Ant. S.* Plead you to me, fair dame? I know  
you not:

In Ephesus I am but two hours old,  
As strange unto your town, as to your talk;  
Who, every word by all my wit being scann'd,

Want wit in all one word to understand.

*Luc.* Fie, brother ! how the world is chang'd  
with you !

When were you wont to use my sister thus ?  
She sent for you by Dromio home to dinner.

*Ant. S.* By Dromio ?

*Dro. S.* By me ?

*Adr.* By thee : and this thou didst return from  
him,—

That he did buffet thee, and, in his blows,  
Deny'd my house for his, me for his wife.

*Ant. S.* Did you converse, sir, with this gentle-  
woman ?

What is the course and drift of your compact ?

*Dro. S.* I, sir ? I never saw her till this time.

*Ant. S.* Villain, thou liest ; for even her very  
words

Didst thou deliver to me on the mart.

*Dro. S.* I never spake with her in all my life.

*Ant. S.* How can she thus then call us by our  
names,

Unless it be by inspiration ?

*Adr.* How ill agrees it with your gravity,  
To counterfeit thus grossly with your slave,  
Abetting him to thwart me in my mood !  
Be it my wrong, you are from me exempt,  
But wrong not that wrong with a more contempt.  
Come, I will fasten on this sleeve of thine :  
Thou art an elm, my husband, I a vine ;  
Whose weakness, married to thy stronger state  
Makes me with thy strength to communicate :  
If aught possess thee from me, it is dross,  
Usurping ivy, briar, or idle moss ;  
Who, all for want of pruning, with intrusion  
Infect thy sap, and live on thy confusion.

*Ant. S.* To me she speaks ; she moves me for  
her theme :

What, was I married to her in my dream ?

(1) Unfertile.

Or sleep I now, and think I hear all this?  
What error drives our eyes and ears amiss?  
Until I know this sure uncertainty,  
I'll entertain the offer'd fallacy.

*Luc.* Dromio, go bid the servants spread for dinner.

*Dro. S.* O, for my beads! I cross me for a sinner.  
This is the fairy land;—O, spite of spite!  
We talk with goblins, owls, and elvish sprites;  
If we obey them not, this will ensue,  
They'll suck our breath, or pinch us black and blue.

*Luc.* Why prat'st thou to thyself, and answer'st not?

Dromio, thou drone, thou snail, thou slug, thou sot!

*Dro. S.* I am transform'd, master, am not I?

*Ant. S.* I think, thou art, in mind, and so am I.

*Dro. S.* Nay, master, both in mind, and in my shape.

*Ant. S.* Thou hast thine own form.

*Dro. S.* No, I am an ape.

*Luc.* If thou art chang'd to aught, 'tis to an ass.

*Dro. S.* 'Tis true; she rides me, and I long for grass.

'Tis so, I am an ass; else it could never be,  
But I should know her as well as she knows me.

*Adr.* Come, come, no longer will I be a fool,  
To put the finger in the eye and weep,  
Whilst man, and master, laugh my woes to scorn.—  
Come, sir, to dinner; Dromio, keep the gate:—  
Husband, I'll dine above with you to-day,  
And shrive! you of a thousand idle pranks:  
Sirrah, if any ask you for your master,  
Say, he dines forth, and let no creature enter.—  
Come, sister:—Dromio, play the porter well.

*Ant. S.* Am I in earth, in heaven, or in hell?  
Sleeping, or waking? mad, or well-advis'd?  
Known unto these, and to myself disguis'd!  
I'll say as they say, and persevere so,  
And in this mist at all adventures go.

(1) Absolve.

*Dro. S.* Master, shall I be porter at the gate?

*Adr.* Ay; and let none enter, lest I break your pate.

*Luc.* Come, come, Antipholus, we dine too late.  
[*Exeunt.*]

### ACT III.

SCENE I.—*The same. Enter Antipholus of Ephesus, Dromio of Ephesus, Angelo, and Balthazar.*

*Ant. E.* Good signior Angelo, you must excuse us all;

My wife is shrewish, when I keep not hours :  
Say, that I linger'd with you at your shop,  
To see the making of her carcanet,<sup>1</sup>  
And that to-morrow you will bring it home.  
But here's a villain, that would face me down  
He met me on the mart; and that I beat him,  
And charg'd him with a thousand marks in gold;  
And that I did deny my wife and house:—  
Thou drunkard, thou, what didst thou mean by this?

*Dro. E.* Say what you will, sir, but I know what I know:

That you beat me at the mart, I have your hand to show:

If the skin were parchment, and the blows you gave were ink,

Your own hand-writing would tell you what I think.

*Ant. E.* I think, thou art an ass.

*Dro. E.* Marry, so it doth appear

By the wrongs I suffer, and the blows I bear.  
I should kick, being kick'd; and, being at that pass,  
You would keep from my heels, and beware of an ass.

(1) A necklace strung with pearls.



*Ant. E.* You are sad, signior Balthazar : 'Pray  
God, our cheer  
May answer my good will, and your good welcome  
here.

*Bal.* I hold your dainties cheap, sir, and your  
welcome dear.

*Ant. E.* O, signior Balthazar, either at flesh or  
fish,  
A table full of welcome makes scarce one dainty  
dish.

*Bal.* Good meat, sir, is common ; that every  
churl affords.

*Ant. E.* And welcome more common ; for that's  
nothing but words.

*Bal.* Small cheer, and great welcome, makes a  
merry feast.

*Ant. E.* Ay, to a niggardly host, and more  
sparing guest :  
But though my cales<sup>1</sup> be mean, take them in good  
part ;  
Better cheer may you have, but not with better  
heart.

But, soft ; my door is lock'd ; Go bid them let us in.

*Dro. E.* Maud, Bridget, Marian, Cicely, Gil-  
lian, Jen' !

*Dro. S.* [*Within.*] Mome,<sup>2</sup> malt-horse, capon,  
coxcomb, idiot, patch !<sup>3</sup>  
Either get thee from the door, or sit down at the  
hatch :

Dost thou conjure for wenches, that thou call'st for  
such store,

When one is one too many ? Go, get thee from the  
door.

*Dro. E.* What patch is made our porter ? My  
master stays in the street. ●

*Dro. S.* Let him walk from whence he came,  
lest he catch cold on's feet.

(1) Dishes of meat.

(2) Blockhead.

(3) Fool.

*Ant. E.* Who talks within there? ho, open the door.

*Dro. S.* Right, sir, I'll tell you when, an you'll tell me wherefore.

*Ant. E.* Wherefore? for my dinner; I have not din'd to-day.

*Dro. S.* Nor to-day here you must not; come again, when you may.

*Ant. E.* What art thou, that keep'st me out from the house I owe?<sup>1</sup>

*Dro. S.* The porter for this time, sir, and my name is Dromio.

*Dro. E.* O villain, thou hast stolen both mine office and my name;

The one ne'er got me credit, the other mickle blame.  
If thou hadst been Dromio to-day in my place,  
Thou wouldst have chang'd thy face for a name  
or thy name for an ass.

*Luce.* [*Within.*] What a coil<sup>2</sup> is there? Dromio who are those at the gate?

*Dro. E.* Let my master in, Luce.

*Luce.* Faith, no; he comes too late  
And so tell your master.

*Dro. E.* O Lord, I must laugh :-  
Have at you with a proverb.—Shall I set in my staff?

*Luce.* Have at you with another: that's,—When?  
can you tell?

*Dro. S.* If thy name be call'd Luce, Luce, thou hast answer'd him well.

*Ant. E.* Do you hear, you minion? you'll let us in, I hope?

*Luce.* I thought to have ask'd you.

*Dro. S.* And you said, no.

*Dro. E.* So, come, help; well struck; there was blow for blow.

*Ant. E.* Thou baggage, let me in.

*Luce.* Can you tell for whose sake?

(1) I own, am owner of. (2) Bustle, tumult.

*Dro. E.* Master, knock the door hard.

*Luce.* Let him knock till it ache.

*Ant. E.* You'll cry for this, minion, if I beat the door down.

*Luce.* What needs all that, and a pair of stocks in the town?

*Adr.* [*Within.*] Who is that at the door, that keeps all this noise?

*Dro. S.* By my troth, your town is troubled with unruly boys.

*Ant. E.* Are you there, wife? you might have come before.

*Adr.* Your wife, sir knave? go, get you from the door.

*Dro. E.* If you went in pain, master, this knave would go sore.

*Ang.* Here is neither cheer, sir, nor welcome; we would fain have either.

*Bal.* In debating which was best, we shall part<sup>1</sup> with neither.

*Dro. E.* They stand at the door, master; bid them welcome hither.

*Ant. E.* There is something in the wind, that we cannot get in.

*Dro. E.* You would say so, master, if your garments were thin.

Your cake here is warm within; you stand here in the cold:

It would make a man mad as a buck, to be so bought and sold.<sup>2</sup>

*Ant. E.* Go, fetch me something, I'll break open the gate.

*Dro. S.* Break any breaking here, and I'll break your knave's pate.

*Dro. E.* A man may break a word with you, sir: and words are but wind;

Ay, and break it in your face, so he break it not behind.

(1) Have part.      (2) A proverbial phrase.

*Dro. S.* It seems, thou wantest breaking: Out upon thee, hind!

*Dro. E.* Here's too much, out upon thee! I pray thee, let me in.

*Dro. S.* Ay, when fowls have no feathers, and fish have no fin.

*Ant. E.* Well, I'll break in; Go borrow me a crow.

*Dro. E.* A crow without a feather; master, mean you so?

For a fish without a fin, there's a fowl without a feather:

If a crow help us in, sirrah, we'll pluck a crow together.

*Ant. E.* Go, get thee gone, fetch me an iron crow.

*Bal.* Have patience, sir; O, let it not be so;  
Herein you war against your reputation,  
And draw within the compass of suspect  
The unviolated honour of your wife.  
Once this,—Your long experience of her wisdom,  
Her sober virtue, years, and modesty,  
Plead on her part some cause to you unknown;  
And doubt not, sir, that she will well excuse  
Why at this time the doors are made<sup>1</sup> against you.  
Be rul'd by me; depart in patience,  
And let us to the Tiger all to dinner:  
And, about evening, come yourself alone,  
To know the reason of this strange restraint.  
If by strong hand you offer to break in,  
Now in the stirring passage of the day,  
A vulgar comment will be made on it;  
And that suppos'd by the common rout  
Against your yet ungalled estimation,  
That may with foul intrusion enter in,  
And dwell upon your grave when you are dead  
For slander lives upon succession;  
For ever hous'd, where it once gets possession.

(1) i. e. Made fast.

*Ant. E.* You have prevail'd; I will depart in  
quiet,

And, in despite of mirth, mean to be merry.

I know a wench of excellent discourse,—

Pretty and witty; wild, and, yet too, gentle;—

There will we dine: this woman that I mean,

My wife (but, I protest, without desert,)

Hath oftentimes upbraided me withal;

To her will we to dinner.—Get you home,

And fetch the chain; by this,<sup>1</sup> I know, 'tis made:

Bring it, I pray you, to the Porcupine;

For there's the house; that chain will I bestow

(Be it for nothing but to spite my wife,)

Upon mine hostess there: good sir, make haste:

Since mine own doors refuse to entertain me,

I'll knock elsewhere, to see if they'll disdain me.

*Ang.* I'll meet you at that place, some hour  
hence.

*Ant. E.* Do so: This jest shall cost me some  
expense. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—*The same.* Enter Luciana, and  
Antipholus of Syracuse.

*Luc.* And may it be that you have quite forgot

A husband's office? Shall, Antipholus, hate,

Even in the spring of love, thy love-springs<sup>2</sup> rot?

Shall love, in building, grow so ruinate?

If you did wed my sister for her wealth,

Then, for her wealth's sake, use her with more  
kindness:

Or, if you like elsewhere, do it by stealth;

Muffle your false love with some show of blind-  
ness:

Let not my sister read it in your eye;

Be not thy tongue thy own shame's orator;

Look sweet, speak fair, become disloyalty;

(1) By this time.

(2) Love-springs are young plants or shoots of  
love.

Apparel vice like virtue's harbinger :  
 Bear a fair presence, though your heart be tainted ;  
 Teach sin the carriage of a holy saint ;  
 Be secret-false : What need she be acquainted ?  
 What simple thief brags of his own attain ?  
 'Tis double wrong, to truant with your bed,  
 And let her read it in thy looks at board :  
 Shame hath a bastard fame, well managed ;  
 Ill deeds are doubled with an evil word.  
 Alas, poor women ! make us but believe,  
 Being compact of credit,<sup>1</sup> that you love us ;  
 Though others have the arm, show us the sleeve ;  
 We in your motion turn, and you may move us.  
 Then, gentle brother, get you in again ;  
 Comfort my sister, cheer her, call her wife :  
 'Tis holy sport to be a little vain,<sup>2</sup>  
 When the sweet breath of flattery conquers strife.  
*Ant. S.* Sweet mistress (what your name is else,  
 I know not,  
 Nor by what wonder you do hit on mine,)  
 Less, in your knowledge, and your grace, you show  
 not,  
 Than our earth's wonder ; more than earth divine.  
 Teach me, dear creature, how to think and speak ;  
 Lay open to my earthly gross conceit,  
 Smother'd in errors, feeble, shallow, weak,  
 The folded meaning of your word's deceit.  
 Against my soul's pure truth why labour you,  
 To make it wander in an unknown field ?  
 Are you a god ? would you create me new ?  
 Transform me then, and to your power I'll yield.  
 But if that I am I, then well I know,  
 Your weeping sister is no wife of mine,  
 Nor to her bed no homage do I owe ;  
 Far more, far more, to you do I decline.  
 O, train me not, sweet mermaid,<sup>3</sup> with thy note,  
 To drown me in thy sister's flood of tears ;

(1) *i. e.* Being made altogether of credulity.

(2) Vain, is light of tongue. (3) Mermaid for siren.

Sing, siren, for thyself, and I will dote :

Spread o'er the silver waves thy golden hairs,  
And as a bed I'll take thee, and there lie ;

And, in that glorious supposition, think  
He gains by death, that hath such means to die —  
Let love, being light, be drowned if she sink .

*Luc.* What, are you mad, that you do reason so ?

*Ant. S.* Not mad, but mated ;<sup>1</sup> how, I do not know.

*Luc.* It is a fault that springeth from your eye .

*Ant. S.* For gazing on your beams, fair sun,  
being by.

*Luc.* Gaze where you should, and that will clear  
your sight.

*Ant. S.* As good to wink, sweet love, as look on  
night.

*Luc.* Why call you me love ? call my sister so.

*Ant. S.* Thy sister's sister.

*Luc.* That's my sister.

*Ant. S.* No ;

It is thyself, mine own self's better part ;  
Mine eye's clear eye, my dear heart's dearer heart ;  
My food, my fortune, and my sweet hope's aim,  
My sole earth's heaven, and my heaven's claim.

*Luc.* All this my sister is, or else should be.

*Ant. S.* Call thyself sister, sweet, for I aim thee :  
Thee will I love, and with thee lead my life ;  
Thou hast no husband yet, nor I no wife :  
Give me thy hand.

*Luc.* O, soft, sir, hold you still ;  
I'll fetch my sister, to get her good will.

[*Exit Luciana.*]

*Enter, from the house of Antipholus of Ephesus,  
Dromio of Syracuse.*

*Ant. S.* Why, how now, Dromio ? where runn'st  
thou so fast ?

(1) i. e. Confounded.

*Dro. S.* Do you know me, sir? am I Dromio? am I your man? am I myself?

*Ant. S.* Thou art Dromio, thou art my man, thou art thyself.

*Dro. S.* I am an ass, I am a woman's man, and besides myself.

*Ant. S.* What woman's man? and how besides thyself?

*Dro. S.* Marry, sir, besides myself, I am due to a woman; one that claims me, one that haunts me, one that will have me.

*Ant. S.* What claim lays she to thee?

*Dro. S.* Marry, sir, such claim as you would lay to your horse; and she would have me as a beast: not that, I being a beast, she would have me; but that she, being a very beastly creature, lays claim to me.

*Ant. S.* What is she?

*Dro. S.* A very reverent body; ay, such a one as a man may not speak of, without he say, sir reverence: I have but lean luck in the match, and yet is she a wondrous fat marriage.

*Ant. S.* How dost thou mean, a fat marriage?

*Dro. S.* Marry, sir, she's the kitchen-wench, and all grease; and I know not what use to put her to, but to make a lamp of her, and run from her by her own light. I warrant, her rags, and the tallow in them, will burn a Poland winter: if she lives till doomsday, she'll burn a week longer than the whole world.

*Ant. S.* What complexion is she of?

*Dro. S.* Swart,<sup>1</sup> like my shoe, but her face nothing like so clean kept; For why? she sweats, a man may go over shoes in the grime of it.

*Ant. S.* That's a fault that water will mend

*Dro. S.* No, sir, 'tis in grain; Noah's flood could not do it.

*Ant. S.* What's her name?

(1) Swarthy.



*Dro. S.* Nell, sir;—but her name and three quarters, that is, an ell and three quarters, will not measure her from hip to hip.

*Ant. S.* Then she bears some breadth?

*Dro. S.* No longer from head to foot, than from hip to hip: she is spherical, like a globe; I could find out countries in her.

*Ant. S.* In what part of her body stands Ireland?

*Dro. S.* Marry, sir, in her buttocks; I found it out by the bogs.

*Ant. S.* Where Scotland?

*Dro. S.* I found it by the barrenness; hard, in the palm of the hand.

*Ant. S.* Where France?

*Dro. S.* In her forehead; arm'd and reverted, making war against her hair.

*Ant. S.* Where England?

*Dro. S.* I look'd for the chalky cliffs, but I could find no whiteness in them: but I guess it stood in her chin, by the salt rheum that ran between France and it.

*Ant. S.* Where Spain?

*Dro. S.* Faith, I saw it not; but I felt it, hot in her breath.

*Ant. S.* Where America, the Indies?

*Dro. S.* O, sir, upon her nose, all o'er embellish'd with rubies, carbuncles, sapphires, declining their rich aspect to the hot breath of Spain; who sent whole armadas of carracks<sup>1</sup> to be ballast at her nose.

*Ant. S.* Where stood Belgia, the Netherlands?

*Dro. S.* O, sir, I did not look so low. To conclude, this drudge, or diviner, laid claim to me; call'd me Dromio; swore, I was assur'd<sup>2</sup> to her; told me what privy marks I had about me, as the mark of my shoulder, the mole in my neck, the great wart on my left arm, that I, amazed, ran from her as a witch: and, I think, if my breast had not been made of faith, and my heart of steel, she

(1) Large ships.      (2) Affianced.

had transform'd me to a curtail-dog, and made me turn i'the wheel.<sup>1</sup>

*Ant. S.* Go, hie thee presently, post to the road ;  
And if the wind blow any way from shore,  
I will not harbour in this town to-night.  
If any bark put forth, come to the mart,  
Where I will walk, till thou return to me.  
If every one know us, and we know none,  
'Tis time, I think, to trudge, pack, and be gone.

*Dro. S.* As from a bear a man would run for life,  
So fly I from her that would be my wife. [*Exit.*

*Ant. S.* There's none but witches do inhabit here ;  
And therefore, 'tis high time that I were hence.  
She, that doth call me husband, even my soul  
Doth for a wife abhor : but her fair sister,  
Possess'd with such a gentle sovereign grace,  
Of such enchanting presence and discourse,  
Hath almost made me traitor to myself :  
But, lest myself be guilty to self-wrong,  
I'll stop mine ears against the mermaid's song.

*Enter Angelo.*

*Ang.* Master Antipholus ?

*Ant. S.* Ay, that's my name.

*Ang.* I know it well, sir : Lo, here is the chain ;  
I thought to have ta'en you at the Porcupine :  
The chain unfinish'd made me stay thus long.

*Ant. S.* What is your will, that I shall do with  
this ?

*Ang.* What please yourself, sir ; I have made  
it for you.

*Ant. S.* Made it for me, sir ? I bespoke it not.

*Ang.* Not once, nor twice, but twenty times you  
have :

Go home with it, and please your wife withal ;  
And soon at supper-time I'll visit you,  
And then receive my money for the chain.

*Ant. S.* I pray you, sir, receive the money now ;

(1) A turn-spit.

For fear you ne'er see chain, nor money, more.

*Ang.* You are a merry man, sir ; fare you well.

[*Exit.*

*Ant. S.* What I should think of this, I cannot tell;

But this I think, there's no man is so vain,

That would refuse so fair an offer'd chain.

I see, a man here needs not live by shifts,

When in the streets he meets such golden gifts.

I'll to the mart, and there for Dromio stay ;

If any ship put out, then straight away. [*Exit.*

### ACT IV.

*SCENE I.—The same. Enter a Merchant, Angelo, and an Officer.*

*Mer.* You know, since Pentecost the sum is due,

And since I have not much importun'd you ;

Nor now I had not, but that I am bound

To Persia, and want guilders<sup>1</sup> for my voyage :

Therefore make present satisfaction,

Or I'll attach you by this officer.

*Ang.* Even just the sum, that I do owe to you,  
Is growing<sup>2</sup> to me by Antipholus :

And, in the instant that I met with you,

He had of me a chain ; at five o'clock,

I shall receive the money for the same :

Pleaseth you walk with me down to his house,

I will discharge my bond, and thank you too.

*Enter Antipholus of Ephesus, and Dromio of Ephesus.*

*Off.* That labour may you save ; see where he  
comes.

*Ant. E.* While I go to the goldsmith's house, go  
thou

And buy a rope's end ; that will I bestow

(1) A coin.

(2) Accruing.

Among my wife and her confederates,  
For locking me out of my doors by day.—  
But soft, I see the goldsmith :—get thee gone ;  
Buy thou a rope, and bring it home to me.

*Dro. E.* I buy a thousand pound a year ! I buy  
a rope ! *[Exit Dromio.]*

*Ant. E.* A man is well help up, that trusts to  
you :

I promised your presence, and the chain ;  
But neither chain, nor goldsmith, came to me :  
Belike, you thought our love would last too long,  
If it were chain'd together ; and therefore came not.

*Ang.* Saving your merry humour, here's the note,  
How much your chain weighs to the utmost carat ;  
The fineness of the gold, and chargeful fashion ;  
Which doth amount to three odd ducats more  
Than I stand debted to this gentleman ;  
I pray you, see him presently discharg'd,  
For he is bound to sea, and stays but for it.

*Ant. E.* I am not furnish'd with the present  
money ;

Besides, I have some business in the town :  
Good signior, take the stranger to my house,  
And with you take the chain, and bid my wife  
Disburse the sum on the receipt thereof ;  
Perchance, I will be there as soon as you.

*Ang.* Then you will bring the chain to her your-  
self ?

*Ant. E.* No ; bear it with you, lest I come not  
time enough.

*Ang.* Well, sir, I will : Have you the chain about  
you ?

*Ant. E.* An if I have not, sir, I hope you have ;  
Or else you may return without your money.

*Ang.* Nay, come, I pray you, sir, give me the  
chain :

Both wind and tide stays for this gentleman,  
And I, to blame, have held him here too long.

(1) I shall.

X

VOL. III.

*Ant. E.* Good lord, you use this dalliance to excuse

Your breach of promise to the Porcupine :  
I should have chid you for not bringing it,  
But, like a shrew, you first begin to brawl.

*Mer.* The hour steals on ; I pray you, sir, despatch.

*Ang.* You hear, how he importunes me ; the chain—

*Ant. E.* Why, give it to my wife, and fetch your money.

*Ang.* Come, come, you know, I gave it you even now ;

Either send the chain, or send me by some token.

*Ant. E.* Fie ! now you run this humour out of breath :

Come, where's the chain ? I pray you let me see it.

*Mer.* My business cannot brook this dalliance ;  
Good sir, say, whe'r you'll answer me, or no ;  
If not, I'll leave him to the officer.

*Ant. E.* I answer you ! What should I answer you ?

*Ang.* The money, that you owe me for the chain.

*Ant. E.* I owe you none, till I receive the chain.

*Ang.* You know, I gave it you half an hour since.

*Ant. E.* You gave me none ; you wrong me much to say so.

*Ang.* You wrong me more, sir, in denying it :  
Consider, how it stands upon my credit.

*Mer.* Well, officer, arrest him at my suit.

*Off.* I do ; and charge you in the duke's name,  
to obey me.

*Ang.* This touches me in reputation :—  
Either consent to pay this sum for me,  
Or I attach you by this officer.

*Ant. E.* Consent to pay thee that I never had .  
Arrest me, foolish fellow, if thou dar'st.

*Ang.* Here is thy fee ; arrest him, officer ;  
I would not spare my brother in this case,  
If he should scorn me so apparently

*Off.* I do arrest you, sir; you hear the suit.

*Ant. E.* I do obey thee, till I give thee bail :—  
But, sirrah, you shall buy this sport as dear  
As all the metal in your shop will answer.

*Ang.* Sir, sir, I shall have law in Ephesus,  
To your notorious shame, I doubt it not.

*Enter Dromio of Syracuse.*

*Dro. S.* Master, there is a bark of Epidamnium,  
That stays but till her owner comes aboard,  
And then, sir, bears away : our fraughtage,<sup>1</sup> sir,  
I have convey'd aboard ; and I have bought  
The oil, the balsamum, and aqua-vitæ.  
The ship is in her trim ; the merry wind  
Blows fair from land : they stay for nought at all,  
But for their owner, master, and yourself.

*Ant. E.* How now ? a madman ! Why thou  
peevish<sup>2</sup> sheep,  
What ship of Epidamnium stays for me ?

*Dro. S.* A ship you sent me to, to hire waftage.<sup>3</sup>

*Ant. E.* Thou drunken slave, I sent thee for a  
rope ;  
And told thee to what purpose and what end.

*Dro. S.* You sent me, sir, for a rope's end as  
soon :

You sent me to the bay, sir, for a bark.

*Ant. E.* I will debate this matter at more leisure,  
And teach your ears to listen with more heed.  
To Adriana, villain, hie thee straight :  
Give her this key, and tell her, in the desk  
That's cover'd o'er with Turkish tapestry,  
There is a purse of ducats : let her send it ;  
Tell her, I am arrested in the street,  
And that shall bail me : hie thee, slave ; be gone.  
On, officer, to prison till it come.

[*Exeunt Mer. Ang. Off. and Ant. E.*

*Dro. S.* To Adriana ! that is where he din'd,  
Where Dowsabel did claim me for her husband :

(1) Freight, cargo. (2) Silly. (3) Carriage.

She is too big, I hope, for me to compass.  
Thither I must, although against my will,  
For servants must their masters' minds fulfil. [*Ex.*

*SCENE II.—The same. Enter Adriana and Luciana.*

*Adr.* Ah, Luciana, did he tempt thee so?

Might'st thou perceive austerely in his eye  
That he did plead in earnest, yea or no?

Look'd he or red, or pale; or sad, or merrily?  
What observation mad'st thou in this case,  
Of his heart's meteors tilting in his face?<sup>1</sup>

*Luc.* First, he denied you had in him no right.

*Adr.* He meant, he did me none; the more my  
spite.

*Luc.* Then swore he, that he was a stranger here.

*Adr.* And true he swore, though yet forsworn  
he were.

*Luc.* Then pleaded I for you.

*Adr.* And what said he?

*Luc.* That love I begg'd for you, he begg'd of me.

*Adr.* With what persuasion did he tempt thy  
love?

*Luc.* With words, that in an honest suit might  
move.

First he did praise my beauty; then, my speech.

*Adr.* Did'st speak him fair?

*Luc.* Have patience, I beseech.

*Adr.* I cannot, nor I will not, hold me still;

My tongue, though not my heart, shall have his will.

He is deformed, crooked, old, and sere,<sup>2</sup>

Ill-fac'd, worse-bodied, shapeless every where;

Vicious, ungentle, foolish, blunt, unkind;

Stigmatical in making,<sup>3</sup> worse in mind.

*Luc.* Who would be jealous then of such a one?

(1) An allusion to the redness of the northern  
lights likened to the appearance of armies.

(2) Dry, withered.

(3) Marked by nature with deformity.

No evil lost is wail'd when it is gone.

*Adr.* Ah ! but I think him better than I say,  
And yet would herein others' eyes were worse .  
Far from her nest the lapwing cries away ;<sup>1</sup>

My heart prays for him, though my tongue do  
curse.

*Enter Dromio of Syracuse.*

*Dro. S.* Here, go ; the desk, the purse ; sweet  
now, make haste.

*Luc.* How hast thou lost thy breath ?

*Dro. S.* By running fast.

*Adr.* Where is thy master, Dromio ? is he well ?

*Dro. S.* No, he's in tartar limbo, worse than hell :  
A devil in an everlasting garment hath him,  
One, whose hard heart is button'd up with steel ;  
A fiend, a fairy, pitiless and rough ;  
A wolf, nay, worse, a fellow all in buff ;<sup>2</sup>  
A back-friend, a shoulder-clapper, one that coun-  
termends

The passages of alleys, creeks, and narrow lands ;  
A bound that runs counter, and yet draws dry-foot  
well ;

One that, before the judgment, carries poor souls  
to hell.<sup>3</sup>

*Adr.* Why, man, what is the matter ?

*Dro. S.* I do not know the matter : he is 'rested  
on the case.

*Adr.* What, is he arrested ? tell me, at whose suit.

*Dro. S.* I know not at whose suit he is arrested,  
well ;

But he's in a suit of buff, which 'rested him, that  
can I tell :

Will you send him, mistress, redemption, the mo-  
ney in the desk ?

(1) Who crieth most where her nest is not.

(2) The officers in those days were clad in buff,  
which is also a cant expression for a man's skin.

(3) Hell was the cant term for prison.



*Adr.* Go fetch it, sister.—This I wonder at,  
[*Exit Luciana.*]

That he, unknown to me, should be in debt :  
Tell me, was he arrested on a band ?<sup>1</sup>

*Dro. S.* Not on a band, but on a stronger thing ;  
A chain, a chain ; do you not hear it ring ?

*Adr.* What, the chain ?

*Dro. S.* No, no, the bell : 'tis time, that I were  
gone.

It was two ere I left him, and now the clock strikes  
one.

*Adr.* The hours come back ! that did I never hear.

*Dro. S.* O yes, if any hour meet a sergeant,  
a'turns back for very fear.

*Adr.* As if time were in debt ! how fondly dost  
thou reason !

*Dro. S.* Time is a very bankrupt, and owes more  
than he's worth to season.

Nay, he's a thief too : Have you not heard men say,  
That time comes stealing on by night and day ?  
If he be in debt, and theft, and a sergeant in the way,  
Hath he not reason to turn back an hour in a day ?

*Enter Luciana.*

*Adr.* Go, Dromio ; there's the money, bear it  
straight ;

And bring thy master home immediately.—

Come, sister ; I am press'd down with conceit ;<sup>2</sup>  
Conceit, my comfort, and my injury. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*The same.* *Enter Antipholus of  
Syracuse.*

*Ant. S.* There's not a man I meet, but doth  
salute me

As if I were their well-acquainted friend ;  
And every one doth call me by my name.  
Some tender money to me, some invite me ;  
Some other give me thanks for kindnesses ;

(1) *i. e.* Bond.

(2) Fanciful conception.

Some offer me commodities to buy :  
Even now a tailor call'd me in his shop,  
And show'd me silks that he had bought for me,  
And, therewithal, took measure of my body.  
Sure, these are but imaginary wiles,  
And Lapland sorcerers inhabit here.

*Enter Dromio of Syracuse.*

*Dro. S.* Master, here's the gold you sent me for :  
What, have you got the picture of old Adam new  
apparell'd ?

*Ant. S.* What gold is this ? what Adam dost  
thou mean ?

*Dro. S.* Not that Adam, that kept the paradise,  
but that Adam, that keeps the prison : he that goes  
in the calf's-skin that was kill'd for the prodigal ;  
he that came behind you, sir, like an evil angel,  
and bid you forsake your liberty.

*Ant. S.* I understand thee not.

*Dro. S.* No ? why, 'tis a plain case : he that went  
like a base-viol, in a case of leather ; the man, sir,  
that, when gentlemen are tired, gives them a fob,  
and 'rests them : he, sir, that takes pity on decayed  
men, and gives them suits of durance ; he that sets  
up his rest to do more exploits with his mace, than  
a morris-pike.

*Ant. S.* What ! thou mean'st an officer ?

*Dro. S.* Ay, sir, the sergeant of the band ; he,  
that brings any man to answer it, that breaks his  
band : one that thinks a man always going to bed,  
and says, *God give you good rest.*

*Ant. S.* Well, sir, there rest in your foolery. Is  
there any ship puts forth to-night ? may we be gone ?

*Dro. S.* Why, sir, I brought you word an hour  
since, that the bark Expedition put forth to-night ;  
and then were you hindered by the sergeant, to  
tarry for the hoy, Delay : Here are the angels that  
you sent for, to deliver you.

*Ant. S.* The fellow is distract, and so am I ;  
And here we wander in illusions ;

Some blessed power deliver us from hence!

*Enter a Courtezan.*

*Cour.* Well met, well met, master Antipholus.  
I see, sir, you have found the goldsmith now;  
Is that the chain, you promis'd me to-day?

*Ant. S.* Satan, avoid! I charge thee, tempt me not!

*Dro. S.* Master, is this mistress Satan?

*Ant. S.* It is the devil.

*Dro. S.* Nay, she is worse, she is the devil's dam;  
and here she comes in the habit of a light wench;  
and thereof comes, that the wenches say, *God damn me*, that's as much as to say, *God make me a light wench*. It is written, they appear to men like angels of light: light is an effect of fire, and fire will burn; *ergo*, light wenches will burn;  
Come not near her.

*Cour.* Your man and you are marvellous merry,  
sir.

Will you go with me? We'll mend our dinner here.

*Dro. S.* Master, if you do expect spoon-meat,  
bespeak a long spoon.

*Ant. S.* Why, Dromio?

*Dro. S.* Marry, he must have a long spoon,  
that must eat with the devil.

*Ant. S.* Avoid then, fiend! what tell'st thou me  
of supping?

Thou art, as you are all, a sorceress:

conjure thee to leave me, and be gone.

*Cour.* Give me the ring of mine you had at  
dinner,

Or, for my diamond, the chain you promis'd;

And I'll be gone, sir, and not trouble you.

*Dro. S.* Some devils ask but the paring of one's  
nail,

A rush, a hair, a drop of blood, a pin,

A nut, a cherry-stone: but she, more covetous,  
Would have a chain.

Master, be wise; and if you give it her,

The devil will shake her chain, and fright us with it.

*Cour.* I pray you, sir, my ring, or else the chain ;  
I hope, you do not mean to cheat me so.

*Ant. S.* Avaunt, thou witch ! Come, Dromio,  
let us go.

*Dro. S.* Fly pride, says the peacock : Mistress,  
that you know. [*Exeunt Ant. and Dro.*]

*Cour.* Now, out of doubt, Antipholus is mad,  
Else would he never so demean himself :  
A ring he hath of mine, worth forty ducats,  
And for the same he promis'd me a chain !  
Both one, and other, he denies me now.  
The reason that I gather he is mad  
(Besides this present instance of his rage,)  
Is a mad tale, he told to-day at dinner,  
Of his own doors being shut against his entrance.  
Belike, his wife, acquainted with his fits,  
On purpose shut the doors against his way.  
My way is now, to hie home to his house,  
And tell his wife, that, being lunatic,  
He rush'd into my house, and took perforce  
My ring away : This course I fittest choose ;  
For forty ducats is too much to lose. [*Exit.*]

SCENE IV.—*The same. Enter Antipholus of  
Ephesus, and an Officer.*

*Ant. E.* Fear me not, man, I will not break away ;  
I'll give thee, ere I leave thee, so much money  
To warrant thee, as I am 'rested for.  
My wife is in a wayward mood to-day ;  
And will not lightly trust the messenger,  
That I should be attach'd in Ephesus :  
I tell you, 'twill sound harshly in her ears.—

*Enter Dromio of Ephesus, with a rope's end.*  
Here comes my man ; I think, he brings the money.  
How now, sir ? have you that I sent you for ?

*Dro. E.* Here's that, I warrant you, will pay  
them all.<sup>1</sup>

(1) Correct them all.

*Ant. E.* But where's the money?

*Dro. E.* Why, sir, I gave the money for the rope.

*Ant. E.* Five hundred ducats, villain, for a rope?

*Dro. E.* I'll serve you, sir, five hundred at the rate.

*Ant. E.* To what end did I bid thee hie thee home?

*Dro. E.* To a rope's end, sir; and to that end am I return'd.

*Ant. E.* And to that end, sir, I will welcome you. *[Beating him.]*

*Off.* Good sir, be patient.

*Dro. E.* Nay, 'tis for me to be patient; I am in adversity.

*Off.* Good now, hold thy tongue.

*Dro. E.* Nay, rather persuade him to hold his hands.

*Ant. E.* Thou whoreson, senseless villain!

*Dro. E.* I would I were senseless, sir, that I might not feel your blows.

*Ant. E.* Thou art sensible in nothing but blows, and so is an ass.

*Dro. E.* I am an ass, indeed; you may prove it by my long ears. I have serv'd him from the hour of nativity to this instant, and have nothing at his hands for my service, but blows: when I am cold, he heats me with beating: when I am warm, he cools me with beating: I am waked with it, when I sleep; raised with it, when I sit; driven out of doors with it, when I go from home; welcomed home with it, when I return: nay, I bear it on my shoulders, as a beggar wont her brat; and, I think, when he hath lamed me, I shall beg with it from door to door.

*Enter Adriana, Luciana, and the Courtezan, with Pinch, and others.*

*Ant. E.* Come, go along; my wife is coming yonder.

*Dro. E.* Mistress, *respice finem*, respect your

end; or rather the prophecy, like the parrot, *Beware the rope's end.*

*Ant. E.* Wilt thou still talk? [*Beats him.*]

*Cour.* How say you now? is not your husband mad?

*Adr.* His incivility confirms no less.—

Good doctor Pinch, you are a conjurer;

Establish him in his true sense again,

And I will please you what you will demand.

*Luc.* Alas, how fiery and how sharp he looks!

*Cour.* Mark, how he trembles in his ecstasy!

*Pinch.* Give me your hand, and let me feel your pulse.

*Ant. E.* There is my hand, and let it feel your ear.

*Pinch.* I charge thee, Satan, hous'd within this man,

To yield possession to my holy prayers,

And to thy state of darkness hie thee straight;

I conjure thee by all the saints in heaven.

*Ant. E.* Peace, doting wizard, peace; I am not mad.

*Adr.* O, that thou wert not, poor distressed soul!

*Ant. E.* You minion you, are these your customers?

Did this companion<sup>1</sup> with a saffron face

Revel and feast it at my house to-day,

Whilst upon me the guilty doors were shut,

And I denied to enter in my house?

*Adr.* O, husband, God doth know, you din'd at home,

Where 'would you had remain'd until this time,

Free from these slanders, and this open shame!

*Ant. E.* I din'd at home! Thou villain, what say'st thou?

*Dro. E.* Sir, sooth to say, you did not dine at home.

*Ant. E.* Were not my doors lock'd up, and I shut out?

(1) Fellow.

*Dro. E.* Perdy,<sup>1</sup> your doors were lock'd, and  
you shut out.

*Ant. E.* And did not she herself revile me there?

*Dro. E.* Sans fable,<sup>2</sup> she herself revil'd you there.

*Ant. E.* Did not her kitchen-maid rail, taunt,  
and scorn me?

*Dro. E.* Certes,<sup>3</sup> she did; the kitchen-vestal  
scorn'd you.

*Ant. E.* And did not I in rage depart from thence?

*Dro. E.* In verity you did;—my bones bear  
witness,

That since have felt the vigour of his rage.

*Adr.* Is't good to sooth him in these contraries?

*Pinch.* It is no shame; the fellow finds his vein,  
And, yielding to him, humours well his frenzy.

*Ant. E.* Thou hast suborn'd the goldsmith to ar-  
rest me.

*Adr.* Alas, I sent you money to redeem you,  
By Dromio here, who came in haste for it.

*Dro. E.* Money by me? heart and good-will  
you might,

But, surely, master, not a rag of money.

*Ant. E.* Went'st not thou to her for a purse of  
ducats?

*Adr.* He came to me, and I deliver'd it.

*Luc.* And I am witness with her, that she did.

*Dro. E.* God and the rope-maker bear me  
witness,

That I was sent for nothing but a rope!

*Pinch.* Mistress, both man and master is pos-  
sess'd;

I know it by their pale and deadly looks:

They must be bound, and laid in some dark room.

*Ant. E.* Say, wherefore didst thou lock me forth  
to-day,

And why dost thou deny the bag of gold?

*Adr.* I did not, gentle husband, lock thee forth.

(1) A corruption of the French oath—*par dieu*.

(2) Without a fable.

(3) Certainly.

*Dro. E.* And, gentle master, I receiv'd no gold ;  
But I confess, sir, that we were lock'd out.

*Adr.* Dissembling villain, thou speak'st false in both.

*Ant. E.* Dissembling harlot, thou art false in all ;  
And art confederate with a damned pack,  
To make a loathsome abject scorn of me :  
But with these nails I'll pluck out these false eyes,  
That would behold in me this shameful sport.

[Pinch and his assistants bind Ant. and Dro.

*Adr.* O, bind him, bind him, let him not come near me.

*Pinch.* More company ;—the fiend is strong within him.

*Luc.* Ah me, poor man, how pale and wan he looks !

*Ant. E.* What, will you murder me ? Thou gaoler, thou,  
I am thy prisoner ; wilt thou suffer them  
To make a rescue ?

*Off.* Masters, let him go ;

He is my prisoner, and you shall not have him.

*Pinch.* Go, bind this man, for he is frantic too.

*Adr.* What wilt thou do, thou peevish<sup>1</sup> officer ?  
Hast thou delight to see a wretched man  
Do outrage and displeasure to himself ?

*Off.* He is my prisoner ; if I let him go,  
The debt he owes will be requir'd of me.

*Adr.* I will discharge thee, ere I go from thee :  
Bear me forthwith unto his creditor,  
And, knowing how the debt grows, I will pay it.  
Good master doctor, see him safe convey'd  
Home to my house.—O most unhappy day !

*Ant. E.* O most unhappy<sup>2</sup> strumpet !

*Dro. E.* Master, I am here enter'd in bond for you.

*Ant. E.* Out on thee, villain ! wherefore dost thou mad me ?

(1) Foolish.

(2) Unhappy for unlucky, i. e. mischievous



*Dro. E.* Will you be bound for nothing? be mad,  
Good master; cry, the devil.—

*Luc.* God help, poor souls, how idly do they talk!

*Adr.* Go, bear him hence.—Sister, go you with  
me.—

[*Exe. Finch and assistants, with Ant. and Dro.*  
Say now, whose suit is he arrested at?

*Off.* One Angelo, a goldsmith; Do you know  
him?

*Adr.* I know the man: What is the sum he owes?

*Off.* Two hundred ducats.

*Adr.* Say, how grows it due?

*Off.* Due for a chain, your husband had of him.

*Adr.* He did bespeak a chain for me, but had it  
not.

*Cour.* When as your husband, all in rage, to-day  
Came to my house, and took away my ring  
(The ring I saw upon his finger now,)  
Straight after, did I meet him with a chain.

*Adr.* It may be so, but I did never see it:—  
Come, gaoler, bring me where the goldsmith is,  
I long to know the truth hereof at large.

*Enter Antipholus of Syracuse, with his rapier  
drawn, and Dromio of Syracuse.*

*Luc.* God, for thy mercy! they are loose again.

*Adr.* And come with naked swords; let's call  
more help,

To have them bound again.

*Off.* Away, they'll kill us.

[*Exeunt Off. Adr. and Luc.*

*Ant. S.* I see, these witches are afraid of swords.

*Dro. S.* She, that would be your wife, now ran  
from you.

*Ant. S.* Come to the Centaur; fetch our stuff  
from thence:

I long, that we were safe and sound aboard.

*Dro. S.* Faith, stay here this night, they will

(1) Baggage.

surely do us no harm; you saw, they speak us fair,  
give us gold: methinks, they are such a gentle  
nation, that, but for the mountain of mad flesh that  
claims marriage of me, I could find in my heart to  
stay here still, and turn witch.

*Ant. S.* I will not stay to-night for all the town:  
Therefore away, to get our stuff aboard. [*Exe.*]



## ACT V.

SCENE I.—*The same. Enter Merchant and Angelo.*

*Ang.* I am sorry, sir, that I have hinder'd you;  
But, I protest, he had the chain of me,  
Though most dishonestly he doth deny it.

*Mer.* How is the man esteem'd here in the city?

*Ang.* Of very reverend reputation, sir,  
Of credit infinite, highly belov'd,  
Second to none that lives here in the city;  
His word might bear my wealth at any time.

*Mer.* Speak softly: yonder, as I think, he walks.

*Enter Antipholus and Dromio of Syracuse.*

*Ang.* 'Tis so; and that self chain about his neck,  
Which he forswore, most monstrously, to have.  
Good sir, draw near to me, I'll speak to him.  
Signior Antipholus, I wonder much  
That you would put me to this shame and trouble;  
And not without some scandal to yourself,  
With circumstance, and oaths, so to deny  
This chain, which now you wear so openly:  
Besides the charge, the shame, imprisonment,  
You have done wrong to this my honest friend;  
Who, but for staying on our controversy,  
Had hoisted sail, and put to sea to-day:  
This chain you had of me, can you deny it?

*Ant. S.* I think, I had; I never did deny it.

*Mer.* Yes, that you did, sir; and forswore it too.

*Ant. S.* Who heard me to deny it, or forswear it?

*Mer.* These ears of mine, thou knowest, did hear thee :

Fie on thee, wretch ! 'tis pity, that thou liv'st  
To walk where any honest men resort.

*Ant. S.* Thou art a villain, to impeach me thus :  
I'll prove mine honour, and mine honesty,  
Against thee presently, if thou dar'st stand.

*Mer.* I dare, and do defy thee for a villain.

[*They draw.*]

*Enter* Adriana, Luciana, Courtezan, and others.

*Adr.* Hold, hurt him not, for God's sake ; he is  
mad :—

Some get within him,<sup>1</sup> take his sword away :  
Bind Dromio too, and bear them to my house.

*Dro. S.* Run, master, run ; for God's sake, take  
a house.<sup>2</sup>

This is some priory ;—In, or we are spoil'd.

[*Exeunt* Ant. and Dro. to the priory.

*Enter the Abbess.*

*Abb.* Be quiet, people ; Wherefore throng you  
hither ?

*Adr.* To fetch my poor distracted husband hence ;  
Let us come in, that we may bind him fast,  
And bear him home for his recovery.

*Ang.* I knew, he was not in his perfect wits.

*Mer.* I am sorry now, that I did draw on him.

*Abb.* How long hath this possession held the  
man ?

*Adr.* This week he hath been heavy, sour, sad,  
And much, much different from the man he was ;  
But, till this afternoon, his passion  
Ne'er brake into extremity of rage.

*Abb.* Hath he not lost much wealth by wreck at  
sea ?

(1) *i. e.* Close, grapple with him.

(2) *i. e.* Go into a house.

Bury'd some dear friend? Hath not else his eye  
Stray'd his affection in unlawful love?

A sin, prevailing much in youthful men,  
Who give their eyes the liberty of gazing.  
Which of these sorrows is he subject to?

*Adr.* To none of these, except it be the last:  
Namely, some love, that drew him oft from home.

*Abb.* You should for that have reprehended him.

*Adr.* Why, so I did.

*Abb.* Ay, but not rough enough.

*Adr.* As roughly, as my modesty would let me.

*Abb.* Haply, in private.

*Adr.* And in assemblies too.

*Abb.* Ay, but not enough.

*Adr.* It was the copy<sup>1</sup> of our conference:

In bed, he slept not for my urging it;

At board, he fed not for my urging it:

Alone, it was the subject of my theme;

In company, I often glanced it;

Still did I tell him it was vile and bad.

*Abb.* And thereof came it, that the man was mad:

The venom clamours of a jealous woman

Poison more deadly than a mad dog's tooth.

It seems his sleeps were hindered by thy railing:

And thereof comes it that his head is light.

'Thou say'st his meat was sauc'd with thy upbraid-  
ings:

Unquiet meals make ill digestions,

Thereof the raging fire of fever bred;

And what's a fever but a fit of madness?

'Thou say'st, his sports were hinder'd by thy brawls:

Sweet recreation barr'd, what doth ensue,

But moody and dull melancholy,

(Kinsman to grim and comfortless despair;)

And, at her heels, a huge infectious troop

Of pale distemperatures, and foes to life?

In food, in sport, and life-preserving rest,

To be disturb'd, would mad or man, or beast;

(1) Theme.

Y

VOL. III.

The consequence is then, thy jealous fits  
Have scared thy husband from the use of wits.

*Luc.* She never reprehended him but mildly,  
When he demean'd himself rough, rude, and  
wildly.—

Why bear you these rebukes, and answer not?

*Adr.* She did betray me to my own reproof.—  
Good people, enter, and lay hold on him.

*Abb.* No, not a creature enters in my house.

*Adr.* Then, let your servants bring my husband  
forth.

*Abb.* Neither; he took this place for sanctuary,  
And it shall privilege him from your hands,  
Till I have brought him to his wits again,  
Or lose my labour in assaying it.

*Adr.* I will attend my husband, be his nurse,  
Diet his sickness, for it is my office,  
And will have no attorney but myself;  
And therefore let me have him home with me.

*Abb.* Be patient; for I will not let him stir,  
Till I have us'd the approved means I have,  
With wholesome syrups, drugs, and holy prayers,  
To make of him a formal man again :<sup>1</sup>  
It is a branch and parcel<sup>2</sup> of mine oath,  
A charitable duty of my order;

Therefore depart, and leave him here with me.

*Adr.* I will not hence and leave my husband  
here;

And ill it doth beseem your holiness,  
To separate the husband and the wife.

*Abb.* Be quiet and depart, thou shalt not have  
him. [*Exit Abbess.*]

*Luc.* Complain unto the duke of this indignity.

*Adr.* Come, go; I will fall prostrate at his feet,  
And never rise until my tears and prayers  
Have won his grace to come in person hither,  
And take perforce my husband from the abbess.

*Mer.* By this, I think, the dial points at five :

(1) i. e. To bring him back to his senses. (2) Part.

Anon, I am sure, the duke himself in person  
Comes this way to the melancholy vale,  
The place of death and sorry<sup>1</sup> execution,  
Behind the ditches of the abbey here.

*Ang.* Upon what cause?

*Mer.* To see a reverend Syracusan merchant,  
Who put unluckily into this bay  
Against the laws and statutes of this town,  
Beheaded publicly for his offence.

*Ang.* See, where they come; we will behold his  
death.

*Luc.* Kneel to the duke, before he pass the abbey.

*Enter Duke attended; Ægeon bare-headed; with  
the Headsman and other officers.*

*Duke.* Yet once again proclaim it publicly,  
If any friend will pay the sum for him,  
He shall not die, so much we tender him.

*Adr.* Justice, most sacred duke, against the ab-  
bess!

*Duke.* She is a virtuous and a reverend lady;  
It cannot be, that she hath done thee wrong.

*Adr.* May it please your grace, Antipholus, my  
husband,—

Whom I made lord of me and all I had,  
At your important<sup>2</sup> letters,—this ill day  
A most outrageous fit of madness took him;  
That desperately he hurried through the street  
(With him his bondman, all as mad as he,)  
Doing displeasure to the citizens  
By rushing in their houses, bearing thence  
Rings, jewels, any thing his rage did like.  
Once did I get him bound, and sent him home,  
Whilst to take order<sup>3</sup> for the wrongs I went,  
That here and there his fury had committed.  
Anon, I wot<sup>4</sup> not by what strong escape,  
He broke from those that had the guard of him;

(1) Sad.      (2) Importunate.

(3) *i. e.* To take measures.      (4) Know.

And, with his mad attendant and himself,  
Each one with ireful passion, with drawn swords,  
Met us again, and, madly bent on us,  
Chas'd us away ; till raising of more aid,  
We came again to bind them : then they fled  
Into this abbey, whither we pursued them ;  
And here the abbess shuts the gates on us,  
And will not suffer us to fetch him out,  
Nor send him forth, that we may bear him hence.  
Therefore, most gracious duke, with thy command,  
Let him be brought forth, and borne hence for help.

*Duke.* Long since, thy husband serv'd me in  
my wars ;

And I to thee engag'd a prince's word,  
When thou didst make him master of thy bed,  
To do him all the grace and good I could.—  
Go, some of you, knock at the abbey-gate,  
And bid the lady abbess come to me ;  
I will determine this, before I stir.

*Enter a Servant.*

*Serv.* O mistress, mistress, shift and save yourself!  
My master and his man are both broken loose,  
Beaten the maids a-row,<sup>1</sup> and bound the doctor,  
Whose beard they have singed off with brands of  
fire ;

And ever as it blazed, they threw on him  
Great pails of puddled mire to quench the hair ;  
My master preaches patience to him, while  
His man with scissars nicks<sup>2</sup> him like a fool :  
And, sure, unless you send some present help,  
Between them they will kill the conjurer.

*Adr.* Peace, fool, thy master and his man are  
here ;

And that is false thou dost report to us.

*Serv.* Mistress, upon my life, I tell you true ;  
I have not breath'd almost, since I did see it.

(1) *i. e.* Successively, one after another.

(2) *i. e.* Cuts his hair close.

He cries for you, and vows, if he can take you,  
To scorch your face, and to disfigure you :

[*Cry within.*  
Hark, hark, I hear him, mistress ; fly, be gone.

*Duke.* Come, stand by me, fear nothing : Guard  
with halberds.

*Adr.* Ah me, it is my husband ! Witness you,  
That he is borne about invisible :  
Even now we hous'd him in the abbey here ;  
And now he's there, past thought of human reason.

*Enter Antipholus and Dromio of Ephesus.*

*Ant. E.* Justice, most gracious duke, oh, grant  
me justice !

Even for the service that long since I did thee,  
When I bestrid thee in the wars, and took  
Deep scars to save thy life ; even for the blood  
That then I lost for thee, now grant me justice.

• *Æge.* Unless the fear of death doth make me dote,  
I see my son Antipholus, and Dromio.

*Ant. E.* Justice, sweet prince, against that  
woman there.

She whom thou gav'st to me to be my wife ;  
That hath abused and dishonour'd me,  
Even in the strength and height of injury !  
Beyond imagination is the wrong,

That she this day hath shameless thrown on me.

*Duke.* Discover how, and thou shalt find me just.

*Ant. E.* This day, great duke, she shut the doors  
upon me,

While she with harlots<sup>1</sup> feasted in my house.

*Duke.* A grievous fault : Say, woman, didst  
thou so ?

*Adr.* No, my good lord ;—myself, he, and my  
sister,

To-day did dine together : So befall my soul,

(1) Harlot was a term of reproach applied to  
cheats among men as well as to wantons among  
women.



As this is false, he burdens me withal !

*Luc.* Ne'er may I look on day, nor sleep on night,  
But she tells to your highness simple truth !

*Ang.* O perjur'd woman ! They are both for-  
sworn,

In this the madman justly chargeth them.

*Ant. E.* My liege, I am advised what I say ;  
Neither disturb'd with the effect of wine,  
Nor heady-rash, provok'd with raging ire,  
Albeit, my wrongs might make one wiser mad.  
This woman lock'd me out this day from dinner :  
That goldsmith there, were he not pack'd with her,  
Could witness it, for he was with me then ;  
Who parted with me to go fetch a chain,  
Promising to bring it to the Porcupine,  
Where Balthazar and I did dine together.  
Our dinner done, and he not coming thither,  
I went to seek him : in the street I met him ;  
And in his company, that gentleman.  
There did this perjur'd goldsmith swear me down,  
That I this day of him receiv'd the chain,  
Which, God he knows, I saw not : for the which,  
He did arrest me with an officer.  
I did obey ; and sent my peasant home  
For certain ducats : he with none return'd.  
Then fairly I bespoke the officer,  
To go in person with me to my house.  
By the way we met  
My wife, her sister, and a rabble more  
Of vile confederates ; along with them  
They brought one Pinch ; a hungry lean-fac'd vil-  
lain,

A mere anatomy, a mountebank,  
A thread-bare juggler, and a fortune-teller ;  
A needy, hollow-ey'd, sharp-looking wretch,  
A living dead man : this pernicious slave,  
Forsooth, took on him as a conjurer ;  
And, gazing in mine eyes, feeling my pulse,  
And with no face, as 'twere, outfacing me,  
Cries out, I was possess'd : then all together

They fell upon me, bound me, bore me thence ;  
And in a dark and dankish vault at home  
There left me and my man, both bound together ;  
Till, gnawing with my teeth my bonds in sunder,  
I gain'd my freedom, and immediately  
Ran hither to your grace ; whom I beseech  
To give me ample satisfaction  
For these deep shames and great indignities.

*Ang.* My lord, in truth, thus far I witness with him ;

That he dined not at home, but was lock'd out.

*Duke.* But had he such a chain of thee, or no ?

*Ang.* He had, my lord ; and when he ran in here,  
These people saw the chain about his neck.

*Mer.* Besides, I will be sworn, these ears of mine

Heard you confess you had the chain of him,  
After you first forswore it on the mart,  
And, thereupon, I drew my sword on you ;  
And then, you fled into this abbey here,  
From whence, I think, you are come by miracle.

*Ant. E.* I never came within these abbey walls,  
Nor ever didst thou draw thy sword on me :  
I never saw the chain, so help me heaven !  
And this is false, you burden me withal.

*Duke.* Why, what an intricate impeach is this !  
I think, you all have drank of Circe's cup.  
If here you hous'd him, here he would have been ;  
If he were mad, he would not plead so coldly :—  
You say, he dined at home ; the goldsmith here  
Denies that saying :—Sirrah, what say you ?

*Dro. E.* Sir, he dined with her there, at the Porcupine.

*Cour.* He did ; and from my finger snatch'd that ring.

*Ant. E.* 'Tis true, my liege, this ring I had of her.

*Duke.* Saw'st thou him enter at the abbey here ?

*Cour.* As sure, my liege, as I do see your grace.

*Duke.* Why, this is strange :—Go call the abbess hither ;

I think you are all mated,<sup>1</sup> or stark mad.

[*Exit an attendant.*]

*Ege.* Most mighty duke, vouchsafe me speak  
a word;

Haply I see a friend will save my life,  
And pay the sum that will deliver me.

*Duke.* Speak freely, Syracusan, what thou wilt.

*Ege.* Is not your name, sir, call'd Antipholus?  
And is not that your bondman Dromio?

*Dro. E.* Within this hour I was his bondman, sir,  
But he, I thank him, gnaw'd in two my cords;  
Now am I Dromio, and his man, unbound.

*Ege.* I am sure, you both of you remember me.

*Dro. E.* Ourselves we do remember, sir, by you;  
For lately we were bound as you are now.

You are not Pinch's patient, are you, sir?

*Ege.* Why look you strange on me? you know  
me well.

*Ant. E.* I never saw you in my life, till now.

*Ege.* Oh! grief hath chang'd me, since you  
saw me last;

And careful hours, with Time's deformed hand,  
Have written strange defeatures<sup>2</sup> in my face:  
But tell me yet, dost thou not know my voice?

*Ant. E.* Neither.

*Ege.* Dromio, nor thou?

*Dro. E.* No, trust me, sir, nor I.

*Ege.* I am sure, thou dost.

*Dro. E.* Ay, sir? but I am sure, I do not; and  
whatsoever a man denies, you are now bound to  
believe him.

*Ege.* Not know my voice! O, time's extremity!  
Hast thou so crack'd and splitted my poor tongue,  
In seven short years, that here my only son  
Knows not my feeble key of untun'd cares?  
Though now this grained<sup>3</sup> face of mine be hid  
In sap-consuming winter's drizzled snow,

(1) Confounded. (2) Alteration of features.

(3) Furrowed, lined.

And all the conduits of my blood froze up ;  
Yet hath my night of life some memory,  
My wasting lamp some fading glimmer left,  
My dull deaf ears a little use to hear :  
All these old witnesses (I cannot err,)  
Tell me, thou art my son Antipholus.

*Ant. E.* I never saw my father in my life.

*Æge.* But seven years since, in Syracuse, boy,  
Thou know'st, we parted : but, perhaps, my son,  
Thou sham'st to acknowledge me in misery.

*Ant. E.* The duke, and all that know me in the  
city,  
Can witness with me that it is not so ;  
I ne'er saw Syracuse in my life.

*Duke.* I tell thee, Syracusean, twenty years  
Have I been patron to Antipholus,  
During which time he ne'er saw Syracuse :  
I see, thy age and dangers make thee dote.

*Enter the Abbess, with Antipholus Syracusean, and  
Dromio Syracusean.*

*Abb.* Most mighty duke, behold a man much  
wrong'd. [*All gather to see him.*]

*Adr.* I see two husbands, or mine eyes deceive me.

*Duke.* One of these men is Genius to the other ;  
And so of these : Which is the natural man,  
And which the spirit ? Who deciphers them ?

*Dro. S.* I, sir, am Dromio ; command him away.

*Dro. E.* I, sir, am Dromio ; pray, let me stay.

*Ant. S.* Ægeon, art thou not ? or else his ghost ?

*Dro. S.* O, my old master ! who hath bound him  
here ?

*Abb.* Whoever bound him, I will loose his bonds,  
And gain a husband by his liberty :—

Speak, old Ægeon, if thou be'st the man  
That had'st a wife once call'd Æmilia,  
That bore thee at a burden two fair sons :  
O, if thou be'st the same Ægeon, speak,  
And speak unto the same Æmilia !

*Æge.* If I dream not, thou art Æmilia ;

If thou art she, tell me, where is that son  
That floated with thee on the fatal raft?

*Abb.* By men of Epidamnnum, he, and I,  
And the twin Dromio, all were taken up;  
But, hy and by rude fishermen of Corinth  
By force took Dromio and my son from them,  
And me they left with those of Epidamnnum;  
What then became of them, I cannot tell:  
I, to this fortune that you see me in.

*Duke.* Why, here begins his morning story right;  
These two Antipholus's, these two so like,  
And these two Dromio's, one in semblance,—  
Besides her urging of her wreck at sea,—  
These are the parents to these children,  
Which accidentally are met together.

Antipholus, thou cam'st from Corinth first.

*Ant. S.* No, sir, not I; I came from Syracuse.

*Duke.* Stay, stand apart! I know not which is  
which.

*Ant. E.* I came from Corinth, my most gracious  
lord.

*Dro. E.* And I with him.

*Ant. E.* Brought to this town with that most  
famous warrior

Duke Menaphon, your most renowned uncle.

*Adr.* Which of you two did dine with me to-day?

*Ant. S.* I, gentle mistress.

*Adr.* And are not you my husband?

*Ant. E.* No, I say nay to that.

*Ant. S.* And so do I, yet did she call me so;

And this fair gentlewoman, her sister here,  
Did call me brother:—What I told you then,  
I hope, I shall have leisure to make good;  
If this be not a dream, I see, and hear.

*Ang.* That is the chain, sir, which you had of me.

*Ant. S.* I think it be, sir; I deny it not.

*Ant. E.* And you, sir, for this chain arrested me.

(1) The morning story is what *Egeon* tells the  
duke in the first scene of this play.

*Ang.* I think I did, sir; I deny it not.

*Adr.* I sent you money, sir, to be your bail,  
By Dromio; but I think he brought it not.

*Dro. E.* No, none by me.

*Ant. S.* This purse of ducats I receiv'd from you,  
And Dromio my man did bring them me:  
I see, we still did meet each other's man,  
And I was ta'en for him, and he for me,  
And thereupon these Errors are arose.

*Ant. E.* These ducats pawn I for my father here.

*Duke.* It shall not need, thy father hath his life.

*Cour.* Sir, I must have that diamond from you.

*Ant. E.* There, take it; and much thanks for  
my good cheer.

*Abb.* Renowned duke, vouchsafe to take the pains  
To go with us into the abbey here,  
And hear at large discoursed all our fortunes:—  
And all that are assembled in this place,  
That by this sympathized one day's error  
Have suffer'd wrong, go, keep us company,  
And we shall make full satisfaction.—  
Twenty-five years have I but gone in travail  
Of you, my sons; nor, till this present hour,  
My heavy burdens are delivered:—  
The duke, my husband, and my children both,  
And you the calendars of their nativity,  
Go to a gossip's feast, and go with me;  
After so long grief, such nativity!

*Duke.* With all my heart, I'll gossip at this feast.

[*Exeunt Duke, Abbess, Egeon, Courtezan,  
Merchant, Angelo, and attendants.*]

*Dro. S.* Master, shall I fetch your stuff from  
shipboard?

*Ant. E.* Dromio, what stuff of mine hast thou  
embark'd?

*Dro. S.* Your goods, that lay at host, sir, in the  
Centaur.

*Ant. S.* He speaks to me; I am your master,  
Dromio:

Come, go with us: we'll look to that anon:

Embrace thy brother there, rejoice with him.

[*Exeunt* Antipholus S. and E. Adr. and Luc.

*Dro. S.* There is a fat friend at your master's house,

That kitchen'd me for you to-day at dinner;

She now shall be my sister, not my wife.

*Dro. E.* Methinks, you are my glass, and not my brother:

I see by you, I am a sweet-faced youth.

Will you walk in to see their gossiping?

*Dro. S.* Not I, sir; you are my elder.

*Dro. E.* That's a question: how shall we try it?

*Dro. S.* We will draw cuts for the senior: till then, lead thou first.

*Dro. E.* Nay, then thus:

We came into the world, like brother and brother;  
And now let's go hand in hand, not one before  
another. [*Exeunt.*

On a careful revision of the foregoing scenes, I do not hesitate to pronounce them the composition of two very unequal writers. Shakspeare had undoubtedly a share in them; but that the entire play was no work of his, is an opinion which (as Benedict says) 'fire cannot melt out of me; I will die in it at the stake.' Thus as we are informed by Aulus Gellius, Lib. III. Cap. 3. some plays were absolutely ascribed to Plautus, which in truth had only been (*retractata et expolita*) retouched and polished by him.

In this comedy we find more intricacy of plot than distinction of character; and our attention is less forcibly engaged, because we can guess in great measure how the denouement will be brought about. Yet the subject appears to have been reluctantly dismissed, even in this last and unnecessary scene; where the same mistakes are continued, till the power of affording entertainment is entirely lost.

STEEVENS.

**MACBETH.**



PERSONS REPRESENTED.

Duncan, *king of Scotland*:

Malcolm, } *his sons.*  
 Donalbain, }

Macbeth, } *generals of the king's army.*  
 Banquo, }

Macduff, }  
 Lenox, } *noblemen of Scotland.*  
 Rosse, }  
 Menteth, }  
 Angus, }  
 Cathness, }

Fleance, *son to Banquo.*

Siward, *earl of Northumberland, general of the  
 English forces*:

Young Siward, *his son.*

Seyton, *an officer attending on Macbeth.*

*Son to Macduff.*

*An English Doctor. A Scotch Doctor.*

*A Soldier. A Porter. An old man.*

*Lady Macbeth.*

*Lady Macduff.*

*Gentlewoman attending on lady Macbeth.*

*Hecate, and three Witches.*

*Lords, Gentlemen, Officers, Soldiers, Murderers,  
 Attendants, and Messengers.*

*The Ghost of Banquo, and several other Apparitions.*

*Scene, in the end of the fourth act, lies in Eng-  
 land; through the rest of the play, in Scotland;  
 and, chiefly, at Macbeth's castle.*

# MACBETH.

## ACT I.

*SCENE I.—An open place. Thunder and Lightning. Enter three Witches*

*1 Witch.*

**W**HEN shall we three meet again  
In thunder, lightning, or in rain?

*2 Witch.* When the hurlyburly's done,  
When the battle's lost and won.

*3 Witch.* That will be ere set of sun.

*1 Witch.* Where the place?

*2 Witch.* Upon the heath

*3 Witch.* There to meet with Macbeth.

*1 Witch.* I come, Graymalkin!

*All.* Paddock calls:—Anon.—

Fair is foul, and foul is fair:

Hover through the fog and filthy air.

[*Witches vanish.*]

*SCENE II.—A Camp near Fores. Alarum within. Enter King Duncan, Malcolm, Donalbain, Lenox, with attendants, meeting a bleeding Soldier.*

*Dun.* What bloody man is that? He can report,  
As seemeth by his plight, of the revolt  
The newest state.

*Mal.* This is the sergeant,  
Who, like a good and hardy soldier, fought

(1) Tumult.

'Gainst my captivity :—Hail, brave friend !  
 Say to the king the knowledge of the broil,  
 As thou must leave it.

*Sold.* Doubtfully it stood ;  
 As two spent swimmers, that do cling together,  
 And choke their art. The merciless Macdonwald  
 (Worthy to be a rebel ; for, to that,  
 The multiplying villanies of nature  
 Do swarm upon him,) from the western isles  
 Of Kernes and Gallowglasses is supplied ;<sup>1</sup>  
 And fortune, on his damned quarrel<sup>2</sup> smiling,  
 Show'd like a rebel's whore : But all's too weak :  
 For brave Macbeth (well he deserves that name,)  
 Disdaining fortune, with his brandish'd steel,  
 Which smok'd with bloody execution,  
 Like valour's minion,  
 Carv'd out his passage, till he fac'd the slave ;  
 And ne'er shook hands, nor bade farewell to him,  
 Till he unseam'd him from the nave to the chaps,  
 And fix'd his head upon our battlements.

*Dun.* O, valiant cousin ! worthy gentleman !

*Sold.* As whence the sun 'gins his reflection  
 Shipwrecking storms and direful thunders break ;  
 So from that spring, whence comfort seem'd to come,  
 Discomfort<sup>3</sup> swells. Mark, king of Scotland, mark  
 No sooner justice had, with valour arm'd,  
 Compell'd these skipping Kernes to trust their heels  
 But the Norway lord, surveying vantage,  
 With furbish'd arms, and new supplies of men,  
 Began a fresh assault.

*Dun.* Dismay'd not this  
 Our captains, Macbeth and Banquo ?

*Sold.* Yes ;  
 As sparrows, eagles ; or the hare, the lion.  
 If I say sooth,<sup>4</sup> I must report they were

(1) *i. e.* Supplied with light and heavy-armed troops.

(2) Cause.

(3) The opposite to comfort.

(4) Truth.

As cannons overcharg'd with double cracks ;  
So they  
Doubly redoubled strokes upon the foe :  
Except they meant to bathe in reeking wounds,  
Or memorize another Golgotha,<sup>1</sup>

I cannot tell :—

But I am faint, my gashes cry for help.

*Dun.* So well thy words become thee, as thy  
wounds ;

They smack of honour both :—Go, get him sur-  
geons. [*Exit Soldier, attended.*]

*Enter Rosse.*

Who comes here ?

*Mal.* The worthythane of Rosse.

*Len.* What a haste looks through his eyes ! So  
should he look,

That seems to speak things strange.

*Rosse.* God save the king

*Dun.* Whence cam'st thou, worthythane ?

*Rosse.* From Fife, great king.

Where the Norweyan banners flout<sup>2</sup> the sky,  
And fan our people cold.

Norway himself, with terrible numbers,

Assisted by that most disloyal traitor

The thane of Cawdor, 'gan a dismal conflict :

Till that Bellona's bridegroom,<sup>3</sup> lapp'd in proof,<sup>4</sup>

Confronted him with self-comparisons,

Point against point rebellious, arm 'gainst arm,

Curbing his lavish spirit : And, to conclude,

The victory fell on us ;—

*Dun.*

Great happiness !

*Rosse.* That now

Sweno, the Norways' king, craves composition ;

Nor would we deign him burial of his men,

(1) Make another Golgotha as memorable as  
the first.

(2) Mock. (3) Shakspeare means Mars.

(4) Defended by armour of proof.

VOL. III.

Z

Till he disbursed, at Saint Colmes' inch,  
Ten thousand dollars to our general use.

*Dun.* No more that thane of Cawdor shall de-  
ceive

Our bosom interest :—Go, pronounce his death,  
And with his former title greet Macbeth.

*Rosse.* I'll see it done.

*Dun.* What he hath lost, noble Macbeth hath  
won. [*Exeunt.*]

*SCENE III.—A Heath. Thunder. Enter the  
three Witches.*

1 *Witch.* Where hast thou been, sister?

2 *Witch.* Killing swine.

3 *Witch.* Sister, where thou?

1 *Witch.* A sailor's wife had chesnuts in her lap,  
And mounch'd, and mounch'd, and mounch'd :—

*Give me, quoth I :*

*Aroint thee,<sup>1</sup> witch!* the rump-fed ronyon<sup>2</sup> cries.  
Her husband's to Aleppo gone, master o'the Tiger  
But in a sieve I'll thither sail,  
And, like a rat without a tail,  
I'll do, I'll do, and I'll do.

2 *Witch.* I'll give thee a wind.

1 *Witch.* Thou art kind.

3 *Witch.* And I another.

1 *Witch.* I myself have all the other ;  
And the very ports they blow,  
All the quarters that they know  
I'the shipman's card.<sup>3</sup>

I will drain him dry as hay :  
Sleep shall, neither night nor day,  
Hang upon his pent-house lid ;  
He shall live a man forbid :<sup>4</sup>  
Weary sev'n-nights, nine times nine,  
Shall he dwindle, peak, and pine :  
Though his bark cannot be lost,

(1) Avaunt, begone.

(2) A scurvy woman fed on offals.

(3) Sailor's chart. (4) Accursed

Yet it shall be tempest-toss'd.

Look what I have.

2 *Witch*. Show me, show me.

1 *Witch*. Here I have a pilot's thumb,  
Wreck'd, as homeward he did come.

[*Drum within.*]

3 *Witch*. A drum, a drum;  
Macbeth doth come.

*All*. The weird sisters,<sup>1</sup> hand in hand,  
Posters of the sea and land,  
Thus do go about, about;  
Thrice to thine, and thrice to mine,  
And thrice again, to make up nine:  
Peace!—the charm's wound up.

*Enter Macbeth and Banquo.*

*Macb*. So foul and fair a day I have not seen.

*Ban*. How far is't call'd to Fores?—What are  
these,

So wither'd, and so wild in their attire;  
That look not like the inhabitants o'the earth,  
And yet are on't? Live you? or are you aught  
That man may question? You seem to understand  
me,

By each at once her choppy finger laying  
Upon her skinny lips:—You should be women,  
And yet your beards forbid me to interpret  
That you are so.

*Macb*. Speak, if you can;—What are you?

1 *Witch*. All hail, Macbeth! hail to thee, thane  
of Glamis!

2 *Witch*. All hail, Macbeth! hail to thee, thane  
of Cawdor!

3 *Witch*. All hail, Macbeth! that shalt be king  
hereafter.

*Ban*. Good sir, why do you start; and seem to  
fear,

Things that do sound so fair?—I'the name of truth,

(1) Prophetic sisters.

Are ye fantastical,<sup>1</sup> or that indeed  
Which outwardly ye show? My noble partner  
You greet with present grace, and great prediction  
Of noble having,<sup>2</sup> and of royal hope,  
That he seems rapt<sup>3</sup> withal; to me you speak not:  
If you can look into the seeds of time,  
And say, which grain will grow, and which will not;  
Speak then to me, who neither beg, nor fear,  
Your favours, nor your hate.

1 *Witch.* Hail!

2 *Witch.* Hail!

3 *Witch.* Hail!

1 *Witch.* Lesser than Macbeth, and greater.

2 *Witch.* Not so happy, yet much happier.

3 *Witch.* Thou shalt get kings, though thou be  
none:

So, all hail, Macbeth, and Banquo!

1 *Witch.* Banquo, and Macbeth, all hail!

*Macb.* Stay, you imperfect speakers, tell me more:  
By Sinel's death, I know, I amthane of Glamis;  
But how of Cawdor? thethane of Cawdor lives,  
A prosperous gentleman; and to be king,  
Stands not within the prospect of belief,  
No more than to be Cawdor. Say, from whence  
You owe this strange intelligence? or why  
Upon this blasted heath you stop our way  
With such prophetic greeting?—Speak, I charge  
you. [*Witches vanish.*]

*Ban.* The earth hath bubbles, as the water has,  
And these are of them:—Whither are they vanish'd?

*Macb.* Into the air; and what seem'd corporal,  
melted

As breath into the wind.—'Would they had staid!

*Ban.* Were such things here, as we do speak  
about?

Or have we eaten of the insane root,<sup>4</sup>

(1) Supernatural, spiritual.

(2) Estate.

(3) Rapturously affected.

(4) The root which makes insane.

That takes the reason prisoner?

*Macb.* Your children shall be kings.

*Ban.* You shall be king.

*Macb.* And thane of Cawdor too; went it not so?

*Ban.* To the self-same tune, and words. Who's here?

*Enter Rosse and Angus.*

*Rosse.* The king hath happily receiv'd, Macbeth,  
The news of thy success: and when he reads  
Thy personal venture in the rebels' fight,  
His wonders and his praises do contend,  
Which should be thine, or his: Silenc'd with that,  
In viewing o'er the rest o'the self-same day,  
He finds thee in the stout Norweyan ranks,  
Nothing afeard of what thyself didst make,  
Strange images of death. As thick as tale,<sup>1</sup>  
Came post with post; and every one did bear  
Thy praises in his kingdom's great defence,  
And pour'd them down before him.

*Ang.* We are sent,  
To give thee, from our royal master, thanks;  
To herald thee into his sight, not pay thee.

*Rosse.* And, for an earnest of a greater honour,  
He bade me, from him, call thee thane of Cawdor:  
In which addition,<sup>2</sup> hail, most worthy thane!  
For it is thine.

*Ban.* What, can the devil speak true?

*Macb.* The thane of Cawdor lives; Why do  
you dress me  
In borrow'd robes?

*Ang.* Who was the thane, lives yet;  
But under heavy judgment bears that life  
Which he deserves to lose. Whether he was  
Combin'd with Norway; or did line the rebel  
With hidden help and vantage; or that with both  
He labour'd in his country's wreck, I know not;  
But treasons capital, confess'd, and prov'd,

(1) As fast as they could be counted. (2) Title.



Have overthrown him.

*Macb.* Glamis, the thane of Cawdor :  
The greatest is behind.—Thanks for your pains.—  
Do you not hope your children shall be kings,  
When those that gave the thane of Cawdor to me,  
Promis'd no less to them?

*Ban.* That, trusted home,  
Might yet enkindle<sup>1</sup> you unto the crown,  
Besides the thane of Cawdor. But 'tis strange :  
And oftentimes, to win us to our harm,  
The instruments of darkness tell us truths ;  
Win us with honest trifles, to betray us  
In deepest consequence.—  
Cousins, a word, I pray you.

*Macb.* Two truths are told,  
As happy prologues to the swelling act  
Of the imperial theme.—I thank you, gentlemen.—  
This supernatural soliciting<sup>2</sup>  
Cannot be ill ; cannot be good : If ill,  
Why hath it given me earnest of success,  
Commencing in a truth ? I am thane of Cawdor :  
If good, why do I yield to that suggestion<sup>3</sup>  
Whose horrid image doth unfix my hair,  
And make my seated<sup>4</sup> heart knock at my ribs,  
Against the use of nature ? Present fears  
Are less than horrible imaginings :  
My thought, whose murder yet is but fantastical,  
Shakes so my single state of man, that function  
Is smother'd in surmise ;<sup>5</sup> and nothing is,  
But what is not.

*Ban.* Look, how our partner's rapt.

*Macb.* If chance will have me king, why, chance  
may crown me,  
Without my stir.

*Ban.* New honours come upon him

(1) Stimulate.

(2) Encitement.

(3) Temptation.

(4) Firmly fixed.

(5) The powers of action are oppressed by conjecture.

Like our strange garments; cleave not to their  
mould,  
But with the aid of use.

*Macb.* Come what come may;  
Time and the hour<sup>1</sup> runs through the roughest day.

*Ban.* Worthy Macbeth, we stay upon your leisure.

*Macb.* Give me your favour :<sup>2</sup>—my dull brain  
was wrought

With things forgotten. Kind gentlemen, your pains  
Are register'd where every day I turn

The leaf to read them.—Let us toward the king.—

Think upon what hath chanc'd : and, at more time,

The interim having weigh'd it, let us speak

Our free hearts each to other.

*Ban.* Very gladly.

*Macb.* Till then, enough.—Come, friends. [*Exe.*

SCENE IV.—Fores. *A room in the palace.*

*Flourish.* Enter Duncan, Malcolm, Donalbain,  
Lenox, and attendants.

*Dun.* Is execution done on Cawdor ? Are not  
Those in commission yet return'd ?

*Mal.* My liege,  
They are not yet come back. But I have spoke  
With one that saw him die : who did report,  
That very frankly he confess'd his treasons ;  
Implor'd your highness' pardon ; and set forth  
A deep repentance : nothing in his life  
Became him, like the leaving it : he died  
As one that had been studied in his death,  
To throw away the dearest thing he ow'd,<sup>3</sup>  
As 'twere a careless trifle.

*Dun.* There's no art,  
To find the mind's construction in the face :<sup>4</sup>

(1) Time and opportunity. (2) Pardon.

(3) Owned, possessed.

(4) We cannot construe the disposition of the  
mind by the lineaments of the face.

He was a gentleman on whom I built  
An absolute trust.—O worthiest cousin!

*Enter Macbeth, Banquo, Rosse, and Angus.*

The sin of my ingratitude even now  
Was heavy on me: Thou art so far before,  
That swiftest wing of recompense is slow  
To overtake thee. 'Would thou hadst less deserv'd;  
That the proportion both of thanks and payment  
Might have been mine! only I have left to say,  
More is thy due than more than all can pay.

*Macb.* The service and the loyalty I owe,  
In doing it, pays itself. Your Lighness' part  
Is to receive our duties: and our duties  
Are to your throne and state, children, and servants;  
Which do but what they should, by doing every  
thing

Safe toward your love and honour.

*Dun.* Welcome hither:  
I have begun to plant thee, and will labour  
To make thee full of growing.<sup>1</sup>—Noble Banquo,  
That hast no less deserv'd, nor must be known  
No less to have done so, let me infold thee,  
And hold thee to my heart.

*Ban.* There if I grow,  
The harvest is your own.

*Dun.* My plenteous joys,  
Wanton in fulness, seek to hide themselves  
In drops of sorrow.—Sons, kinsmen, thanes,  
And you whose places are the nearest, know,  
We will establish our estate upon  
Our eldest, Malcolm; whom we name hereafter,  
The prince of Cumberland: which honour must  
Not, unaccompanied, invest him only,  
But signs of nobleness, like stars, shall shine  
On all deservers.—From hence to Inverness,  
And bind us further to you.

*Macb.* The rest is labour, which is not us'd for you:

(1) Exuberant.

I'll be myself the harbinger, and make joyful  
The hearing of my wife with your approach;  
So, humbly take my leave.

*Dun.*

My worthy Cawdor!

*Macb.* The prince of Cumberland!—That is a  
step,  
On which I must fall down, or else o'erleap,

[*Aside.*

For in my way it lies. Stars, hide your fires!  
Let not light see my black and deep desires:  
The eye wink at the hand! yet let that be,  
Which the eye fears, when it is done, to see. [*Ex.*

*Dun.* True, worthy Banquo; he is full so valiant;<sup>1</sup>  
And in his commendations I am fed;  
It is a banquet to me. Let us after him,  
Whose care is gone before to bid us welcome:  
It is a peerless kinsman. [*Flourish. Exeunt.*

SCENE V.—Inverness. *A room in Macbeth's castle. Enter Lady Macbeth, reading a letter.*

*Lady M.* They met me in the day of success;  
and I have learned by the perfectest report,<sup>2</sup> they  
have more in them than mortal knowledge. When  
I burned in desire to question them further, they  
made themselves—air, into which they vanished.  
Whiles I stood rapt in the wonder of it, came  
missives<sup>3</sup> from the king, who all-hailed me, Thane  
of Cawdor; by which title, before, these weird  
sisters saluted me, and referred me to the coming  
on of time, with, Hail, king that shalt be! This  
have I thought good to deliver thee, my dearest  
partner of greatness; that thou mightest not lose  
the dues of rejoicing, by being ignorant of what  
greatness is promised thee. Lay it to thy heart,  
and farewell.

Glamis thou art, and Cawdor; and shalt be  
What thou art promis'd:—Yet do I fear thy nature;

(1) Full as valiant as described.

(2) The best intelligence. (3) Messengers.

It is too full o'the milk of human kindness,  
 To catch the nearest way : Thou would'st be great,  
 Art not without ambition ; but without  
 The illness should attend it. What thou would'st  
     highly,  
 That would'st thou holily ; would'st not play false,  
 And yet would'st wrongly win : thou'd'st have,  
     great Glamis,  
 That which cries, *Thus thou must do, if thou*  
     *have it ;*  
 And that which rather thou dost fear to do,  
 Than wishest should be undone. Hie thee hither,  
 That I may pour my spirits in thine ear ;  
 And chastise with the valour of my tongue  
 All that impedes thee from the golden round ;<sup>1</sup>  
 Which fate and metaphysical<sup>2</sup> aid doth seem  
 To have thee crown'd withal.—What is your  
     tidings ?

*Enter an Attendant.*

*Attend.* The king comes here to-night.

*Lady M.* Thou'rt mad to say it :  
 Is not thy master with him ? who, were't so,  
 Would have inform'd for preparation.

*Attend.* So please you, it is true ; our thane is  
     coming :

One of my fellows had the speed of him ;  
 Who, almost dead for breath, had scarcely more  
 Than would make up his message.

*Lady M.* Give him tending,  
 He brings great news. The raven himself is hoarse,  
     [*Erit Attendant.*

That croaks the fatal entrance of Duncan  
 Under my battlements. Come, come, you spirits  
 That tend on mortal<sup>3</sup> thoughts, unsex me here ;  
 And fill me, from the crown to the toe, top-full  
 Of direst cruelty ! make thick my blood,

(1) Diadem. (2) Supernatural.

(3) Murderous.

Stop up the access and passage to remorse;<sup>1</sup>  
That no compunctious visitings of nature  
Shake my fell purpose, nor keep peace between  
The effect, and it! Come to my woman's breasts,  
And take my milk for gall, you murd'ring ministers,  
Wherever in your sightless substances  
You wait on nature's mischief! Come, thick night,  
And pall<sup>2</sup> thee in the dunnest smoke of hell!  
That my keen knife<sup>3</sup> see not the wound it makes;  
Nor heaven peep through the blanket of the dark,  
To cry, *Hold, Hold!*—Great Glamis, worthy Caw-  
dor!

*Enter Macbeth.*

Greater than both, by the all-hail hereafter!  
Thy letters have transported me beyond  
This ignorant present,<sup>4</sup> and I feel now  
The future in the instant.

*Macb.* My dearest love,

Duncan comes here to-night.

*Lady M.* And when goes hence?

*Macb.* To-morrow,—as he purposes.

*Lady M.* O, never

Shall sun that morrow see!

Your face, my thane, is as a book, where men  
May read strange matters:—To beguile the time,  
Look like the time; bear welcome in your eye,  
Your hand, your tongue: look like the innocent  
flower,

But be the serpent under it. He that's coming  
Must be provided for: and you shall put  
This night's great business into my despatch;  
Which shall to all our nights and days to come  
Give solely sovereign sway and masterdom.

(1) Pity. (2) Wrap as in a mantle.

(3) Knife anciently meant a sword or dagger.

(4) *i. e.* Beyond the present time, which is, according to the process of nature, ignorant of the future.

*Macb.* We will speak further.

*Lady M.* Only look up clear;  
To alter favour<sup>1</sup> ever is to fear :  
Leave all the rest to me. [Exeunt.

*SCENE VI.—The same. Before the castle.*

*Hautboys. Servants of Macbeth attending.*

*Enter Duncan, Malcolm, Donalbain, Banquo, Lenox, Macduff, Rosse, Angus, and attendants.*

*Dun.* This castle hath a pleasant seat ; the air  
Nimbly and sweetly recommends itself  
Unto our gentle senses.

*Ban.* This guest of summer,  
The temple-haunting martlet, does approve,  
By his lov'd mansionry, that the heaven's breath  
Smells wooingly here ; no jutting, frieze, buttress,  
Nor coigne of vantage,<sup>2</sup> but this bird hath made  
His pendent bed, and procreant cradle : Where they  
Most breed and haunt, I have observ'd, the air  
Is delicate.

*Enter Lady Macbeth.*

*Dun.* See, see ! our honour'd hostess !  
The love that follows us, sometime is our trouble,  
Which still we thank as love. Herein I teach you,  
How you shall bid God yield<sup>3</sup> us for your pains,  
And thank us for your trouble.

*Lady M.* All our service  
In every point twice done, and then done double,  
Were poor and single business, to contend  
Against those honours deep and broad, wherewith  
Your majesty loads our house : For those of old,  
And the late dignities heap'd up to them,  
We rest your hermits.<sup>4</sup>

*Dun.* Where's the thane of Cawdor ?  
We cours'd him at the heels, and had a purpose

- (1) Look, countenance. (2) Convenient corner.
- (3) Reward.
- (4) i. e. We as hermits shall ever pray for you.

To be his purveyor : but he rides well ;  
And his great love, sharp as his spur, hath holp him  
To his home before us : Fair and noble hostess,  
We are your guest to-night.

*Lady M.* Your servants ever  
Have theirs, themselves, and what is theirs, in  
compt,<sup>1</sup>

To make their audit at your highness' pleasure,  
Still to return your own.

*Dun.* Give me your hand :  
Conduct me to mine host ; we love him highly,  
And shall continue our graces towards him.  
By your leave, hostess. [*Exeunt.*]

*SCENE VII.—The same. A room in the castle.  
Hautboys and torches. Enter, and pass over  
the stage, a Sewer,<sup>2</sup> and divers Servants with  
dishes and service. Then enter Macbeth.*

*Macb.* If it were done, when 'tis done, then  
'twere well

It were done quickly : If the assassination  
Could trammel up the consequence, and catch,  
With his surcease, success ; that but this blow  
Might be the be-all and the end-all here,  
But here, upon this bank and shoal of time,—  
We'd jump the life to come.—But, in these cases,  
We still have judgment here ; that we but teach  
Bloody instructions, which, being taught, return  
To plague the inventor : This even-handed justice  
Commends the ingredients of our poison'd chalice  
To our own lips. He's here in double trust :  
First, as I am his kinsman and his subject,  
Strong both against the deed ; then, as his host,  
Who should against his murderer shut the door,  
Not bear the knife myself. Besides, this Duncan  
Hath borne his faculties so meek, hath been

(1) Subject to account.

(2) An officer so called from his placing the dishes  
on the table.



So clear in his great office, that his virtues  
Will plead like angels, trumpet-tongued, against  
The deep damnation of his taking-off:  
And pity, like a naked new-born babe,  
Striding the blast, or heaven's cherubin, hors'd  
Upon the sightless couriers<sup>1</sup> of the air,  
Shall blow the horrid deed in every eye,  
That tears shall drown the wind.—I have no spur  
To prick the sides of my intent, but only  
Vaulting ambition, which o'er-leaps itself,  
And falls on the other.—How now, what news?

*Enter Lady Macbeth.*

*Lady M.* He has almost supp'd; Why have you  
left the chamber?

*Macb.* Hath he ask'd for me?

*Lady M.* Know you not, he has?

*Macb.* We will proceed no further in this business:  
He hath honour'd me of late; and I have bought  
Golden opinions from all sorts of people,  
Which would be worn now in their newest gloss,  
Not cast aside so soon.

*Lady M.* Was the hope drunk,  
Wherein you dress'd yourself? hath it slept since?  
And wakes it now, to look so green and pale  
At what it did so freely? From this time,  
Such I account thy love. Art thou afraid  
To be the same in thine own act and valour,  
As thou art in desire? Would'st thou have that  
Which thou esteem'st the ornament of life,  
And live a coward in thine own esteem;  
Letting *I dare not* wait upon *I would*,  
Like the poor cat i'the adage?

*Macb.* Pr'ythee, peace:  
I dare do all that may become a man;  
Who dares do more, is none.

*Lady M.* What beast was it then,  
That made you break this enterprise to me?

(1) Winds; sightless is invisible.

When you durst do it, then you were a man ;  
And, to be more than what you were, you would  
Be so much more the man. Nor time, nor place,  
Did then adhere,<sup>1</sup> and yet you would make both :  
They have made themselves, and that their fitness  
now

Does unmake you. I have given suck ; and know  
How tender 'tis, to love the babe that milks me :  
I would, while it was smiling in my face,  
Have pluck'd my nipple from his boneless gums,  
And dash'd the brains out, had I so sworn, as you  
Have done to this.

*Macb.* If we should fail,—

*Lady M.* We fail !

But screw your courage to the sticking-place,  
And we'll not fail. When Duncan is asleep,  
(Whereto the rather shall his day's hard journey  
Soundly invite him,) his two chamberlains  
Will I with wine and wassel<sup>2</sup> so convince,<sup>3</sup>  
That memory, the warder<sup>4</sup> of the brain,  
Shall be a fume, and the receipt of reason  
A limbeck only : When in swinish sleep  
Their drenched natures lie, as in a death,  
What cannot you and I perform upon  
The unguarded Duncan ? what not put upon  
His spongy officers ; who shall bear the guilt  
Of our great quell ?<sup>5</sup>

*Macb.* Bring forth men-children only !  
For thy undaunted mettle should compose  
Nothing but males. Will it not be received,<sup>6</sup>  
When we have mark'd with blood those sleepy twc  
Of his own chamber, and us'd their very daggers,  
'That they have done't ?

*Lady M.* Who dares receive it other  
As we shall make our griefs and clamour roar

(1) In the same sense as cohere.

(2) Intemperance.

(3) Overpower. (4) Sentinel. (5) Murder.

(6) Apprehended.

Upon his death?

*Macb.* I am settled, and bend up  
Each corporal agent to this terrible feat.  
Away, and mock the time with fairest show;  
False face must hide what the false heart doth know.  
[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

*SCENE I.—The same. Court within the castle.  
Enter Banquo and Fleance, and a servant, with  
a torch before them.*

*Ban.* How goes the night, boy?

*Fle.* The moon is down; I have not heard the  
clock.

*Ban.* And she goes down at twelve.

*Fle.* I take't, 'tis later, sir.

*Ban.* Hold, take my sword:—There's husbandry<sup>1</sup>  
in heaven,

Their candles are all out.—Take thee that too.  
A heavy summons lies like lead upon me,  
And yet I would not sleep: Merciful powers!  
Restrain in me the cursed thoughts, that nature  
Gives way to in repose!—Give me my sword;—

*Enter Macbeth, and a servant with a torch.*

Who's there?

*Macb.* A friend.

*Ban.* What, sir, not yet at rest? The king's a-bed:  
He hath been in unusual pleasure, and  
Sent forth great largess<sup>2</sup> to your offices:<sup>3</sup>  
This diamond he greets your wife withal,  
By the name of most kind hostess; and shut up<sup>4</sup>  
In measureless content.

(1) Thrift. (2) Bounty.

(3) The rooms appropriated to servants.

(4) Closed, &c.

*Macb.* Being unprepar'd,  
Our will became the servant to defect;  
Which else should free have wrought.

*Ban.* All's well  
I dreamt last night of the three weird sisters:  
To you they have show'd some truth.

*Macb.* I think not of them;  
Yet, when we can entreat an hour to serve,  
Would spend it in some words upon that business,  
If you would grant the time.

*Ban.* At your kind'st leisure.

*Macb.* If you shall cleave to my consent,—when  
'tis,

It shall make honour for you.

*Ban.* So I lose none,  
In seeking to augment it, but still keep  
My bosom franchis'd, and allegiance clear,  
I shall be counsel'd.

*Macb.* Good repose, the while!

*Ban.* Thanks, sir; The like to you! [*Ex. Ban.*]

*Macb.* Go, bid thy mistress, when my drink is  
ready,  
She strike upon the bell. Get thee to-bed. [*Ex. Ser.*]  
Is this a dagger, which I see before me,  
The handle toward my hand? Come, let me clutch  
thee:—

I have thee not, and yet I see thee still.

Art thou not, fatal vision, sensible  
To feeling, as to sight? or art thou but  
A dagger of the mind; a false creation,  
Proceeding from the heat-oppressed brain?

I see thee yet, in form as palpable,

As this which now I draw.

Thou marshal'st me the way that I was going;  
And such an instrument I was to use.

Mine eyes are made the fools o'the other senses,

Or else worth all the rest: I see thee still;

And on thy blade, and dudgeon,<sup>1</sup> gouts<sup>2</sup> of blood,

(1) Haft.

(2) Drops.

Which was not so before.—There's no such thing:  
 It is the bloody business, which informs  
 Thus to mine eyes.—Now o'er the one half world  
 Nature seems dead, and wicked dreams abuse  
 The curtain'd sleep; now witchcraft celebrates  
 Pale Hecate's offerings; and wither'd murder,  
 Alarm'd by his sentinel, the wolf,  
 Whose howl's his watch, thus with his stealthy  
 pace,  
 With Tarquin's ravishing strides, towards his de-  
 sign

Moves like a ghost.—Thou sure and firm set earth,  
 Hear not my steps, which way they walk, for fear  
 The very stones prate of my where-about,  
 And take the present horror from the time,  
 Which now suits with it.—Whiles I threat, he lives;  
 Words to the heat of deeds too cold breath gives.

[*A bell rings.*]

I go, and it is done; the bell invites me.  
 Hear it not, Duncan; for it is a knell,  
 That summons thee to heaven, or to hell. [*Exit.*]

SCENE II.—*The same.* Enter Lady Macbeth.

*Lady M.* That which hath made them drunk,  
 hath made me bold:

What hath quench'd them, hath given me fire:—  
 Hark!—Peace!

It was the owl that shriek'd, the fatal bellman,  
 Which gives the stern'st good-night. He is about it:  
 The doors are open; and the surfeited grooms  
 Do mock their charge with snores: I have drugg'd  
 their possets,

That death and nature do contend about them,  
 Whether they live or die.

*Macb.* [*Within.*] Who's there?—what, ho!

*Lady M.* Alack! I am afraid they have awak'd,  
 And 'tis not done:—the attempt, and not the deed,  
 Confounds us:—Hark!—I laid their daggers ready,  
 He could not miss them.—Had he not resembled  
 My father as he slept, I had done't.—My husband?

*Enter Macbeth.*

*Macb.* I have done the deed :—Didst thou not hear a noise ?

*Lady M.* I heard the owl scream, and the crickets cry.

Did not you speak ?

*Macb.* When ?

*Lady M.*

Now.

*Macb.*

As I descended ?

*Lady M.* Ay.

*Macb.* Hark !—

Who lies i'the second chamber ?

*Lady M.*

Donalbain.

*Macb.* This is a sorry sight.

*[Looking on his hands.]*

*Lady M.* A foolish thought, to say a sorry sight.

*Macb.* There's one did laugh in his sleep, and one cried, *murder* !

That they did wake each other ; I stood and heard them :

But they did say their prayers, and address'd them again to sleep.

*Lady M.* There are two lodg'd together.

*Macb.* One cried, *God bless us* ! and, *Amen*, the other ;

As! they had seen me, with these hangman's hands.

Listening their fear, I could not say, amen,

When they did say, God bless us.

*Lady M.*

Consider it not so deeply.

*Macb.* But wherefore could not I pronounce, amen ?

I had most need of blessing, and amen

Stuck in my throat.

*Lady M.*

These deeds must not be thought after these ways ; so, it will make us mad.

*Macb.* Methought, I heard a voice cry, *Sleep no more* !

*Macbeth does murder sleep, the innocent sleep ;*

(1) As if.

*Sleep, that knits up the ravell'd sleeve<sup>1</sup> of care,  
The death of each day's life, sore labour's bath,  
Balm of hurt minds, great nature's second course,  
Chief nourisher in life's feast;—*

*Lady M.*

What do you mean.

*Macb.* Still it cried, *Sleep no more!* to all the house:

*Glamis hath murder'd sleep; and therefore Cawdor*

*Shall sleep no more, Macbeth shall sleep no more!*

*Lady M.* Who was it that thus cried? Why, worthy thane,

You do unbend your noble strength, to think  
So brainsickly of things:—Go, get some water,  
And wash this filthy witness from your hand.—  
Why did you bring these daggers from the place?  
They must lie there: Go, carry them; and smear  
The sleepy grooms with blood.

*Macb.*

I'll go no more:

I am afraid to think what I have done;

Look on't again, I dare not.

*Lady M.*

Infirm of purpose!

Give me the daggers: The sleeping and the dead,  
Are but as pictures: 'tis the eye of childhood,  
That fears a painted devil. If he do bleed,  
I'll gild the faces of the grooms withal,  
For it must seem their guilt.

[*Exit. Knocking within.*

*Macb.*

Whence is that knocking?

How is't with me, when every noise appals me?  
What hands are here? Ha! they pluck out mine  
eyes!

Will all great Neptune's ocean wash this blood  
Clean from my hand? No; this my hand will rather  
The multitudinous seas incarnardine,<sup>2</sup>  
Making the green one red.

(1) Sleeve is unwrought silk.

(2) To incarnardine is to stain of a flesh-colour

*Re-enter Lady Macbeth.*

*Lady M.* My hands are of your colour; but I  
shame

To wear a heart so white. [*Knock.*] I hear a  
knocking

At the south entry:—retire we to our chamber:

A little water clears us of this deed:

How easy is it then! Your constancy

Hath left you unattended.—[*Knocking.*] Hark!  
more knocking:

Get on your night-gown, lest occasion call us,

And show us to be watchers:—Be not lost

So poorly in your thoughts.

*Macb.* To know my deed,—'twere best not  
know myself. [*Knock.*

Wake Duncan with thy knocking! Ay, 'would  
thou could'st! [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.—*The same. Enter a Porter.*  
[*Knocking within.*]

*Porter.* Here's a knocking, indeed! If a man  
were porter of hell-gate, he should have old<sup>1</sup> turn-  
ing the key. [*Knocking.*] Knock, knock, knock:  
Who's there, i'the name of Belzebub? Here's a  
farmer, that hanged himself on the expectation of  
plenty: Come in time; have napkins<sup>2</sup> enough about  
you; here you'll sweat for't. [*Knocking.*] Knock,  
knock: Who's there, i'the other devil's name?—  
'Faith, here's an equivocator, that could swear in  
both the scales against either scale; who committed  
treason enough for God's sake, yet could not equi-  
vocate to Heaven: O, come in, equivocator. [*Knock-  
ing.*] Knock, knock, knock: Who's there? 'Faith,  
here's an English tailor come hither, for stealing out  
of a French hose: Come in, tailor; here you may  
roast your goose. [*Knocking.*] Knock, knock: Ne-  
ver at quiet! What are you?—But this place is too  
rold for hell. I'll devil-porter it no further: I had

(1) Frequent.

(2) Handkerchiefs



thought to have let in some of all professions, that go the primrose way to the everlasting bonfire.  
[Knocking.] Anon, anon ; I pray you, remember the porter.  
[Opens the gate.]

*Enter Macduff and Lenox.*

*Macd.* Was it so late, friend, ere you went to bed,

That you do lie so late?

*Port.* 'Faith, sir, we were carousing till the second cock :<sup>1</sup> and drink, sir, is a great provoker of three things.

*Macd.* What three things does drink especially provoke?

*Port.* Marry, sir, nose-painting, sleep, and urine. Lechery, sir, it provokes, and unprovokes : it provokes the desire, but it takes away the performance: Therefore, much drink may be said to be an equivocator with lechery : it makes him, and it mars him ; it sets him on, and it takes him off ; it persuades him, and disheartens him ; makes him stand to, and not stand to : in conclusion, equivocates him in a sleep, and, giving him the lie, leaves him.

*Macd.* I believe, drink gave thee the lie last night.

*Port.* That it did, sir, i'the very throat o'me : But I requited him for his lie ; and, I think, being too strong for him, though he took up my legs sometime, yet I made a shift to cast him.

*Macd.* Is thy master stirring?—

Our knocking has awak'd him ; here he comes.

*Enter Macbeth.*

*Len.* Good-morrow, noble sir!

*Macb.* Good-morrow, both!

*Macd.* Is the king stirring, worthy thane?

*Macb.* Not yet.

*Macd.* He did command me to call timely on him ;  
I have almost slipp'd the hour.

(1) Cock-crowing.

*Macb.*

I'll bring you to him.

*Macd.* I know, this is a joyful trouble to you ;  
But yet, 'tis one.

*Macb.* The labour we delight in, physics<sup>1</sup> pain.  
This is the door.

*Macd.* I'll make so bold to call,  
For 'tis my limited service.<sup>2</sup> [*Exit Macd.*]

*Len.* Goes the king  
From hence to-day ?

*Macb.* He does :—he did appoint it so.

*Len.* The night has been unruly : Where we lay,  
Our chimneys were blown down : and, as they say,  
Lamentings heard i'the air ; strange screams of  
death ;

And prophesying, with accents terrible,  
Of dire combustion, and confus'd events,  
New hatch'd to the woful time. The obscure bird  
Clamour'd the livelong night : some say, the earth  
Was feverous, and did shake.

*Macb.* 'Twas a rough night.

*Len.* My young remembrance cannot parallel  
A fellow to it.

*Re-enter Macduff.*

*Macd.* O horror ! horror ! horror ! Tongue, nor  
heart,  
Cannot conceive, nor name thee !<sup>3</sup>

*Macb. Len.* What's the matter ?

*Macd.* Confusion now hath made his master-  
piece !

Most sacrilegious murder hath broke ope  
The Lord's anointed temple, and stole thence  
The life o'the building.

*Macb.* What is't you say ? the life ?

(1) *i. e.* Affords a cordial to it.

(2) Appointed service.

(3) The use of two negatives, not to make an  
affirmative, but to deny more strongly, is common  
in our author

*Len.* Mean you his majesty ?

*Macd.* Approach the chamber, and destroy  
your sight

With a new Gorgon :—Do not bid me speak ;  
See, and then speak yourselves.—Awake ! awake !—

[*Exeunt Macbeth and Lenox.*]

Ring the alarum-bell :—Murder ! and treason !  
Banquo, and Donalbain ! Malcolm ! awake !  
Shake off this downy sleep, death's counterfeit,  
And look on death itself !—up, up, and see  
The great doom's image !—Malcolm ! Banquo !  
As from your graves rise up, and walk like sprites,  
To countenance this horror ! [ *Bell rings.* ]

*Enter Lady Macbeth.*

*Lady M.* What's the business,  
That such a hideous trumpet calls to parley  
The sleepers of the house ? speak, speak,—

*Macd.* O, gentle lady  
'Tis not for you to hear what I can speak :  
'The repetition, in a woman's ear,  
Would murder as it fell.—O Banquo ! Banquo !

*Enter Banquo.*

Our royal master's murder'd !

*Lady M.* Wo, alas !  
What, in our house ?

*Ban.* Too cruel, any where.—  
Dear Duff, I pr'ythee, contradict thyself,  
And say, it is not so.

*Re-enter Macbeth and Lenox.*

*Macb.* Had I but died an hour before this chance,  
I had liv'd a blessed time ; for, from this instant,  
There's nothing serious in mortality :  
All is but toys : renown, and grace, is dead ;  
The wine of life is drawn, and the mere lees  
Is left this vault to brag of.

*Enter Malcolm and Donalbain.*

*Don.* What is amiss ?

Scene III.

MACBETH.

377

*Macb.* You are, and do not know it:  
The spring, the head, the fountain of your blood  
Is stopp'd; the very source of it is stopp'd.

*Macd.* Your royal father's murder'd.

*Mal.* O, by whom?

*Len.* Those of his chamber, as it seem'd, had  
done't:

Their hands and faces were all badg'd with blood,  
So were their daggers, which, unwip'd, we found  
Upon their pillows:

They star'd, and were distracted; no man's life  
Was to be trusted with them.

*Macb.* O, yet I do repent me of my fury,  
That I did kill them.

*Macd.* Wherefore did you so?

*Macb.* Who can be wise, amaz'd, temperate,  
and furious,

Loyal and neutral, in a moment? No man:

The expedition of my violent love

Out-ran the pauser reason.—Here lay Duncan,

His silver skin lac'd with his golden blood;

And his gash'd stabs look'd like a breach in nature,

For ruin's wasteful entrance: there, the murderers,

Steep'd in the colours of their trade, their daggers

Unmannerly breech'd with gore: Who could re-  
frain,

That had a heart to love, and in that heart

Courage, to make his love known?

*Lady M.* Help me hence, ho!

*Macd.* Look to the lady.

*Mal.* Why do we hold our tongues,  
That most may claim this argument for ours?

*Don.* What should be spoken here,

Where our fate, hid within an augre-hole,

May rush, and seize us? Let's away; our tears

Are not yet brew'd.

*Mal.* Nor our strong sorrow on  
The foot of motion.

(1) Covered with blood to their hilt.

*Ben.*

Look to the lady :—

[*Lady Macbeth is carried out.*]

And when we have our naked frailties hid,  
That suffer in exposure, let us meet,  
And question this most bloody piece of work,  
To know it further. Fears and scruples shake us:  
In the great hand<sup>1</sup> of God I stand; and, thence,  
Against the undivulg'd pretence<sup>2</sup> I fight  
Of treasonous malice.

*Macb.*

And so do I.

*All.*

So all.

*Macb.* Let's briefly put on manly readiness,  
And meet i'the hall together.

*All.*

Well contented.

[*Exeunt all but Mal. and Don.*]

*Mal.* What will you do? Let's not consort with  
them:

To show an unfelt sorrow, is an office  
Which the false man does easy: I'll to England.

*Don.* To Ireland, I; our separated fortune  
Shall keep us both the safer: where we are,  
There's daggers in men's smiles: the near in blood,  
The nearer bloody.

*Mal.*

This murderous shaft that's shot,  
Hath not yet lighted; and our safest way  
Is, to avoid the aim. Therefore, to horse;  
And let us not be dainty of leave-taking,  
But shift away: There's warrant in that theft  
Which steals itself, when there's no mercy left.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*Without the castle. Enter Ross  
and an Old Man.*

*Old M.* Threescore and ten I can remember well:  
Within the volume of which time, I have seen  
Hours dreadful, and things strange; but this sore  
night  
Hath trifled former knowings.

(1) Power.

(2) Intention.

*Rosse.* Ah, good father,  
Thou see'st, the heavens, as troubled with man's  
act,  
Threaten his bloody stage : by the clock, 'tis day,  
And yet dark night strangles the travelling lamp :  
Is't night's predominance, or the day's shame,  
That darkness does the face of earth intomb,  
When living light should kiss it?

*Old M.* 'Tis unnatural,  
Even like the deed that's done. On Tuesday last,  
A falcon, tow'ring in her pride of place,  
Was by a mousing owl hawk'd at, and kill'd.

*Rosse.* And Duncan's horses (a thing most  
strange and certain,)  
Beauteous and swift, the minions of their race,  
Turn'd wild in nature, broke their stalls, flung out,  
Contending 'gainst obedience, as they would make  
War with mankind.

*Old M.* 'Tis said, they eat each other.

*Rosse.* They did so ; to the amazement of mine  
eyes,  
That look'd upon't. Here comes the good Mac-  
duff :——

*Enter Macduff.*

How goes the world, sir, now ?

*Macd.* Why, see you not ?

*Rosse.* Is't known who did this more than bloody  
deed ?

*Macd.* Those that Macbeth hath slain.

*Rosse.* Alas, the day !

What good could they pretend ?<sup>1</sup>

*Macd.* They were suborn'd :  
Malcolm, and Donalbain, the king's two sons,  
Are stol'n away and fled ; which puts upon them  
Suspicion of the deed.

*Rosse.* 'Gainst nature still :  
Thrifless ambition, that wilt ravin up  
Thine own life's means !—Then 'tis most like,

(1) Intend to themselves.

The sovereignty will fall upon Macbeth.

*Macd.* He is already nam'd ; and gone to Scone,  
To be invested.

*Rosse.* Where is Duncan's body ?

*Macd.* Carried to Colmes-kill ;  
The sacred storehouse of his predecessors,  
And guardian of their bones.

*Rosse.* Will you to Scone ?

*Macd.* No, cousin, I'll to Fife.

*Rosse.* Well, I will thither.

*Macd.* Well, may you see things well done  
there ;—adieu !——

Lest our old robes sit easier than our new !

*Rosse.* Father, farewell.

*Old M.* God's benison go with you ; and with  
those

That would make good of bad, and friends of foes !  
[*Exit*unt,

### ACT III.

*SCENE I.*—*Fores.* *A room in the palace. Enter Banquo.*

*Ban.* Thou hast it now, King, Cawdor, Glamis,  
all,

As the weird women promis'd ; and, I fear,  
Thou play'dst most foully for't : yet it was said,  
It should not stand in thy posterity ;  
But that myself should be the root, and father  
Of many kings. If there come truth from them  
(As upon thee, Macbeth, their speeches shine,) Why,  
by the verities on thee made good,  
May they not be my oracles as well,  
And set me up in hope ? But, hush ; no more.

*Senet sounded.* *Enter Macbeth, as king ; Lady Macbeth, as queen ; Lenox, Rosse, Lords, Ladies, and attendants.*

*Macb.* Here's our chief guest.

*Lady M.* If he had been forgotten,  
It had been as a gap in our great feast,  
And all-things unbecoming.

*Macb.* To-night we hold a solemn supper, sir,  
And I'll request your presence.

*Ban.* Let your highness  
Command upon me ; to the which, my duties  
Are with a most indissoluble tie  
For ever knit.

*Macb.* Ride you this afternoon ?

*Ban.* Ay, my good lord.

*Macb.* We should have else desir'd your good  
advice

(Which still hath been both grave and prosperous.)  
In this day's council ; but we'll take to-morrow.  
Is't far you ride ?

*Ban.* As far, my lord, as will fill up the time  
'Twixt this and supper : go not my horse the better,  
I must become a borrower of the night,  
For a dark hour, or twain.

*Macb.* Fail not our feast.

*Ban.* My lord, I will not.

*Macb.* We hear, our bloody cousins are bestow'd  
In England, and in Ireland ; not confessing  
Their cruel parricide, filling their hearers  
With strange invention : But of that to-morrow ;  
When, therewithal, we shall have cause of state,  
Craving us jointly. Hie you to horse : Adieu,  
Till you return at night. Goes Fleance with you ?

*Ban.* Ay, my good lord : our time does call  
upon us.

*Macb.* I wish your horses swift, and sure of foot ;  
And so I do commend<sup>1</sup> you to their backs.

Farewell.—— [*Exit Banquo.*]

Let every man be master of his time  
Till seven at night ; to make society  
The sweeter welcome, we will keep ourself  
Till supper-time alone : while then, God be with you.

[*Exeunt Lady Macbeth, Lords, Ladies, &c.*]

(1) Commit.



Sirrah, a word : Attend those men our pleasure?

*Atten.* They are, my lord, without the palace-gate.

*Macb.* Bring them before us.—[*Exit Atten.*]

To be thus, is nothing ;

But to be safely thus :—Our fears in Banquo  
Stick deep ; and in his royalty<sup>1</sup> of nature  
Reigns that, which would be fear'd : 'Tis much  
he dares ;

And, to that dauntless temper of his mind,  
He hath a wisdom that doth guide his valour  
To act in safety. There is none, but he,  
Whose being I do fear : and, under him,  
My genius is rebuk'd ; as, it is said,  
Mark Antony's was by Cæsar. He chid the sisters,  
When first they put the name of king upon me,  
And bade them speak to him ; then, prophet-like,  
They hail'd him father to a line of kings :  
Upon my head they placed a fruitless crown,  
And put a barren sceptre in my gripe,  
Thence to be wrench'd with an unlineal hand,  
No son of mine succeeding. If it be so,  
For Banquo's issue have I fil'd<sup>2</sup> my mind ;  
For them the gracious Duncan have I murder'd ;  
Put rancours in the vessel of my peace  
Only for them ; and mine eternal jewel  
Given to the common enemy of man,  
To make them kings, the seed of Banquo kings !  
Rather than so, come, fate, into the list,  
And champion me to the utterance !<sup>3</sup>—Who's  
there ?—

*Re-enter Attendant, with two Murderers.*

Now to the door, and stay there till we call.

[*Exit Attendant.*]

Was it not yesterday we spoke together ?

*1 Mur.* It was, so please your highness.

(1) Nobleness. (2) For defiled.

(3) Challenge me to extremities.

*Macb.* Well then, now  
 Have you consider'd of my speeches? Know,  
 That it was he, in the times past, which held you  
 So under fortune; which, you thought, had been  
 Our innocent self: this I made good to you  
 In our last conference; pass'd in probation<sup>1</sup> with  
 you,  
 How you were borne in hand;<sup>2</sup> how cross'd; the  
 instruments;  
 Who wrought with them; and all things else, that  
 might,  
 To half a soul, and a notion craz'd,  
 Say, Thus did Banquo.

*1 Mur.* You made it known to us.

*Macb.* I did so; and went further, which is now  
 Our point of second meeting. Do you find  
 Your patience so predominant in your nature,  
 That you can let this go? Are you so gossell'd,<sup>3</sup>  
 To pray for that good man, and for his issue,  
 Whose heavy hand hath bow'd you to the grave,  
 And beggar'd yours for ever?

*1 Mur.* We are men, my liege.

*Macb.* Ay, in the catalogue ye go for men;  
 As hounds, and greyhounds, mongrels, spaniels,  
 curs,  
 Shoughs,<sup>4</sup> water-rugs, and demi-wolves, are cleped<sup>5</sup>  
 All by the name of dogs: the valued file  
 Distinguishes the swift, the slow, the subtle,  
 The house-keeper, the hunter, every one  
 According to the gift which bounteous nature  
 Hath in him clos'd; whereby he does receive  
 Particular addition,<sup>6</sup> from the bill  
 That writes them all alike: and so of men.  
 Now, if you have a station in the file,

(1) Proved. (2) Deluded.

(3) Are you so obedient to the precept of the Gospel.

(4) Wolf-dogs.

(5) Called.

(6) Title, description.

And not in the worst rank of manhood, say it ;  
 And I will put that business in your bosoms,  
 Whose execution takes your enemy off ;  
 Grapples you to the heart and love of us,  
 Who wear our health but sickly in his life,  
 Which in his death were perfect.

2 *Mur.* I am one, my liege,  
 Whom the vile blows and buffets of the world  
 Have so incens'd, that I am reckless<sup>1</sup> what  
 I do, to spite the world.

1 *Mur.* And I another,  
 So weary with disasters, tugg'd<sup>2</sup> with fortune,  
 That I would set my life on any chance,  
 To mend it, or be rid on't.

*Macb.* Both of you  
 Know, Banquo was your enemy.

2 *Mur.* True, my lord.

*Macb.* So is he mine : and in such bloody distance,<sup>3</sup>

That every minute of his being thrusts  
 Against my near'st of life : And though I could  
 With bare-fac'd power sweep him from my sight,  
 And bid my will avouch it ; yet I must not,  
 For<sup>4</sup> certain friends that are both his and mine,  
 Whose loves I may not drop, but wail his fall  
 Whom I myself struck down : and thence it is,  
 That I to your assistance do make love ;  
 Masking the business from the common eye,  
 For sundry weighty reasons.

2 *Mur.* We shall, my lord,  
 Perform what you command us.

1 *Mur.* Though our lives——

*Macb.* Your spirits shine through you. Within  
 this hour, at most,

I will advise you where to plant yourselves.  
 Acquaint you with the perfect spy o'the time,  
 The moment on't ; for't must be done to-night,

(1) Careless.

(2) Worried.

(3) Mortal enmity.

(4) Because of.

And something from the palace ; always thought  
That I require a clearness : And with him,  
(To leave no rubs, nor botches, in the work,)   
Fleance his son, that keeps him company,  
Whose absence is no less material to me  
Than is his father's, must embrace the fate  
Of that dark hour. Resolve yourselves apart ;  
I'll come to you anon.

2 *Mur.*

We are resolv'd, my lord.

*Macb.* I'll call upon you straight ; abide within.  
It is concluded :——Banquo, thy soul's flight,  
If it find heaven, must find it out to-night. [*Exe.*

SCENE II.—*The same. Another room. Enter  
Lady Macbeth, and a Servant.*

*Lady M.* Is Banquo gone from court?

*Serv.* Ay, madam, but returns again to-night.

*Lady M.* Say to the king, I would attend his  
leisure

For a few words.

*Serv.*

Madam, I will.

[*Exit.*

*Lady M.*

Nought's had, all's spent,

Where our desire is got without content :

'Tis safer to be that which we destroy,

Than, by destruction, dwell in doubtful joy.

*Enter Macbeth.*

How now, my lord ? why do you keep alone,  
Of sorriest ! fancies your companions making ?  
Using those thoughts, which should indeed have died  
With them they think on ? Things without remedy,  
Should be without regard : what's done, is done.

*Macb.* We have scotch'd the snake, not kill'd it ;  
She'll close, and be herself ; whilst our poor malice  
Remains in danger of her former tooth.

But let

The frame of things disjoint, both the worlds suffer,  
Ere we will eat our meal in fear, and sleep

(1) Most melancholy.

VOL. III.

2 B

In the affliction of these terrible dreams,  
That shake us nightly : Better be with the dead,  
Whom we, to gain our place, have sent to peace,  
Than on the torture of the mind to lie  
In restless ecstasy.<sup>1</sup> Duncan is in his grave ;  
After life's fitful fever, he sleeps well ;  
Treason has done his worst : nor steel, nor poison,  
Malice domestic, foreign levy, nothing,  
Can touch him further !

*Lady M.* Come on ;  
Gentle my lord, sleek o'er your rugged looks ;  
Be bright and jovial 'mong your guests to-night.

*Macb.* So shall I, love ; and so, I pray, be you :  
Let your remembrance apply to Banquo ;  
Present him eminence,<sup>2</sup> both with eye and tongue :  
Unsafe the while, that we  
Must lave our honours in these flattering streams ;  
And make our faces vizards to our hearts,  
Disguising what they are.

*Lady M.* You must leave this.

*Macb.* O, full of scorpions is my mind, dear wife !  
'Thou know'st, that Banquo, and his Fleance, lives.

*Lady M.* But in them nature's copy's not eterne.<sup>3</sup>

*Macb.* There's comfort yet ; they are assailable ;  
Then be thou jocund : Ere the bat hath flown  
His cloister'd flight ; ere, to black Hecate's sum-  
mons,

The shard-borne beetle,<sup>4</sup> with his drowsy hums,  
Hath rung night's yawning peal, there shall be done  
A deed of dreadful note.

*Lady M.* What's to be done ?

*Macb.* Be innocent of the knowledge, dearest  
chuck,<sup>5</sup>

(1) Agony. (2) Do him the highest honours.

(3) i. e. The copy, the lease, by which they hold  
their lives from nature, has its time of termination.

(4) The beetle borne in the air by its shards or  
scaly wings.

(5) A term of endearment.

Till thou applaud the deed. Come, seeling<sup>1</sup> night,  
Sklarf up the tender eye of pitiful day ;  
And, with thy bloody and invisible hand,  
Cancel, and tear to pieces, that great bond  
Which keeps me pale !—Light thickens ; and the  
crow

Makes wing to the rooky wood :  
Good things of day begin to droop and drowse ;  
Whiles night's black agents to their prey do rouse.  
Thou marvell'st at my words ; but hold thee still ;  
Things, bad begun, make strong themselves by ill :  
So, pr'ythee, go with me. [Exeunt.]

SCENE III.—*The same. A park or lawn, with  
a gate leading to the palace. Enter three Mur-  
derers.*

1 *Mur.* But who did bid thee join with us ?

3 *Mur.* Macbeth.

2 *Mur.* He needs not our mistrust ; since he de-  
livers

Our offices, and what we have to do,  
To the direction just.

1 *Mur.* Then stand with us.

The west yet glimmers with some streaks of day .  
Now spurs the lated traveller apace,  
To gain the timely inn ; and near approaches  
The subject of our watch.

3 *Mur.* Hark ! I hear horses.

Ban. [Within.] Give us a light there, ho !

2 *Mur.* Then it is he ; the rest

That are within the note of expectation,<sup>2</sup>  
Already are i'the court.

1 *Mur.* His horses go about

3 *Mur.* Almost a mile : but he does usually,  
So all men do, from hence to the palace gate  
Make it their walk.

(1) Binding.

(2) *i. e.* They who are set down in the list of  
guests, and expected to supper.

*Enter Banquo and Fleance, a servant with a torch preceding them.*

2 *Mur.* A light, a light!

3 *Mur.* 'Tis he.

1 *Mur.* Stand to't.

*Ban.* It will be rain to-night.

1 *Mur.* Let it come down.

*[Assaults Banquo.]*

*Ban.* O, treachery! Fly, good Fleance, fly, fly, fly;

Thou may'st revenge.—O slave!

*[Dies. Fleance and servant escape.]*

3 *Mur.* Who did strike out the light?

1 *Mur.* Was't not the way?

3 *Mur.* There's but one down; the son is fled.

2 *Mur.* We have lost best half of our affair.

1 *Mur.* Well, let's away, and say how much is done. *[Exeunt.]*

*SCENE IV.—A room of state in the palace. A banquet prepared. Enter Macbeth, Lady Macbeth, Rosse, Lenox, Lords, and attendants.*

*Macb.* You know your own degrees, sit down :  
at first

And last, the hearty welcome.

*Lords.* Thanks to your majesty.

*Macb.* Ourself will mingle with society,

And play the humble host.

Our hostess keeps her state ;<sup>1</sup> but, in best time,

We will require her welcome.

*Lady M.* Pronounce it for me, sir, to all our  
friends ;

For my heart speaks, they are welcome.

*Enter first Murderer, to the door.*

*Macb.* See, they encounter thee with their hearts  
thanks :—

(1) Continues in her chair of state.

Both sides are even : Here I'll sit i'the midst :  
Be large in mirth ; anon, we'll drink a measure  
The table round.—There's blood upon thy face.

*Mur.* 'Tis Banquo's then.

*Macb.* 'Tis better thee without, than he within.  
Is he despatch'd ?

*Mur.* My lord, his throat is cut ; that I did for  
him.

*Macb.* Thou art the best o'the cut-throats : Yet  
he's good,  
That did the like for Fleance : if thou didst it,  
Thou art the nonpariel.

*Mur.* Most royal sir,

Fleance is 'scap'd.

*Macb.* Then comes my fit again : I had else  
been perfect ;

Whole as the marble, founded as the rock ;  
As broad, and general, as the casing air :  
But now, I am cabin'd, cribb'd, confin'd, bound in  
To saucy doubts and fears. But Banquo's safe ?

*Mur.* Ay, my good lord : safe in a ditch he bides,  
With twenty trenched gashes on his head ;  
The least a death to nature.

*Macb.* Thanks for that :——

There the grown serpent lies ; the worm, that's fled,  
Hath nature that in time will venom breed,  
No teeth for the present.—Get thee gone ; to-mor-  
row

We'll hear, ourselves again. [*Exit Murderer.*]

*Lady M.* My royal lord,

You do not give the cheer : the feast is sold,  
That is not often vouch'd, while 'tis a making,  
'Tis given with welcome : To feed, were best at  
home ;

From thence, the sauce to meat is ceremony ;  
Meeting were bare without it.

*Macb.* Sweet remembrancer !——

Now, good digestion wait on appetite,  
And health on both !



*Len.* May it please your highness sit?  
*[The Ghost of Banquo rises, and sits in Macbeth's place.]*

*Macb.* Here had we now our country's honour  
 roof'd,

Were the grac'd person of our Banquo present;  
 Who may I rather challenge for unkindness,  
 Than pity for mischance!

*Rosse.* His absence, sir,  
 Lays blame upon his promise. Please it your  
 highness

To grace us with your royal company?

*Macb.* The table's full.

*Len.* Here's a place reserv'd, sir.

*Macb.* Where?

*Len.* Here, my lord. What is't that  
 moves your highness?

*Macb.* Which of you have done this?

*Lords.* What, my good lord?

*Macb.* Thou canst not say, I did it: never shake  
 Thy gory locks at me.

*Rosse.* Gentlemen, rise; his highness is not well.

*Lady M.* Sit, worthy friends:—my lord is often  
 thus,

And hath been from his youth: 'Pray you, keep  
 seat;

The fit is momentary; upon a thought!  
 He will again be well: If much you note him,  
 You shall offend him, and extend his passion;<sup>2</sup>  
 Feed, and regard him not.—Are you a man?

*Macb.* Ay, and a bold one, that dare look on that  
 Which might appal the devil.

*Lady M.* O proper stuff!

This is the very painting of your fear:  
 This is the air-drawn dagger, which, you said,  
 Led you to Duncan. O, these flaws,<sup>3</sup> and starts  
 (Impostors to true fear,) would well become

(1) As quick as thought.

(2) Prolong his suffering.

(3) Sudden gusts.

A woman's story, at a winter's fire,  
Authoriz'd by her grandam. Shame itself!  
Why do you make such faces? When all's done,  
You look but on a stool.

*Macb.* Pr'ythee, see there! behold! look! lo!  
how say you?—

Why, what care I? If thou canst nod, speak too.—  
If charnel-houses, and our graves, must send  
Those that we bury, back, our monuments  
Shall be the maws of kites. [*Ghost disappears.*]

*Lady M.* What! quite unmann'd in folly?

*Macb.* If I stand here, I saw him.

*Lady M.* Fie, for shame!

*Macb.* Blood hath been shed ere now, i'the  
olden time,

Ere human statute purg'd the gentle weal;  
Ay, and since too, murders have been perform'd  
Too terrible for the ear: the times have been,  
That, when the brains were out, the man would die,  
And there an end; but now, they rise again,  
With twenty mortal murders on their crowns,  
And push us from our stools: This is more strange  
Than such a murder is.

*Lady M.* My worthy lord,  
Your noble friends do lack you.

*Macb.* I do forget:—  
Do not muse! at me, my most worthy friends;  
I have a strange infirmity, which is nothing  
To those that know me. Come, love and health  
to all;

Then I'll sit down:—Give me some wine, fill  
full:—

I drink to the general joy of the whole table,

*Ghost rises.*

And to our dear friend Banquo, whom we miss,  
Would he were here! to all, and him, we thirst,  
And all to all.<sup>2</sup>

(1) Wonder. (2) i. e. All good wishes to all.

*Lords.* Our duties, and the pledge.

*Macb.* Avaunt! and quit my sight! Let the earth hide thee!

Thy bones are marrowless, thy blood is cold;  
Thou hast no speculation in those eyes  
Which thou dost glare with!

*Lady M.* Think of this, good peers,  
But as a thing of custom: 'tis no other;  
Only it spoils the pleasure of the time.

*Macb.* What man dare, I dare:  
Approach thou like the rugged Russian bear,  
The arm'd rhinoceros, or the Hyrcan tiger,  
Take any shape but that, and my firm nerves  
Shall never tremble: Or, be alive again,  
And dare me to the desert with thy sword;  
If trembling I inhibit! thee, protest me  
The baby of a girl. Hence, horrible shadow!

[*Ghost disappears.*]

Unreal mockery, hence!—Why, so;—being gone,  
I am a man again.—Pray you, sit still.

*Lady M.* You have displac'd the mirth, broke  
the good meeting,  
With most admir'd disorder.

*Macb.* Can such things be,  
And overcome<sup>2</sup> us like a summer's cloud,  
Without our special wonder? You make me strange  
Even to the disposition that I owe,<sup>3</sup>  
When now I think you can behold such sights,  
And keep the natural ruby of your cheeks,  
When mine are blanch'd with fear.

*Rosse.* What sights, my lord?

*Lady M.* I pray you, speak not; he grows worse  
and worse;  
Question enrages him: at once, good night:—  
Stand not upon the order of your going,  
But go at once.

*Len.* Good night, and better health  
Attend his majesty!

(1) Forbid.

(2) Pass over.

(3) Possess.

*Lady M.* A kind good night to all !  
[*Exeunt Lords and attendants.*]

*Macb.* It will have blood ; they say, blood will have blood :  
Stones have been known to move, and trees to speak ;  
Augurs, and understood relations, have  
By inagot-pies,<sup>1</sup> and choughs, and rooks, brought forth

The secret'st man of blood.—What is the night ?

*Lady M.* Almost at odds with morning, which is which.

*Macb.* How say'st thou, that Macduff denies his person,  
At our great bidding ?

*Lady M.* Did you send to him, sir ?

*Macb.* I hear it by the way ; but I will send :  
There's not a one<sup>2</sup> of them, but in his house  
I keep a servant feed. I will to-morrow  
(Betimes I will,) unto the weird sisters :  
More shall they speak ; for now I am bent to know,  
By the worst means, the worst : for mine own good,  
All causes shall give way. I am in blood  
Stept in so far, that, should I wade no more,  
Returning were as tedious as go o'er :  
Strange things I have in head, that will to hand ;  
Which must be acted, ere they may be scann'd.<sup>3</sup>

*Lady M.* You lack the season of all natures, sleep.

*Macb.* Come, we'll to sleep : My strange and self-abuse  
Is the initiate fear, that wants hard use :—  
We are yet but young in deed. [*Exeunt.*]

**SCENE V.**—*The heath. Thunder. Enter Hecate, meeting the three Witches.*

1 *Witch.* Why, how now, Hecate ? you look angrily.

- (1) Magpies.           (2) An individual.  
(3) Examined nicely.

*Hec.* Have I not reason, beldams, as you are,  
Saucy, and overbold? How did you dare  
To trade and traffic with Macbeth,  
In riddles and affairs of death;  
And I, the mistress of your charms,  
The close contriver of all harms,  
Was never call'd to bear my part,  
Or show the glory of our art?  
And, which is worse, all you have done  
Hath been but for a wayward son,  
Spiteful, and wrathful, who, as others do,  
Loves for his own ends, not for you.  
But make amends now: Get you gone,  
And at the pit of Acheron,  
Meet me i'the morning; thither he  
Will come to know his destiny.  
Your vessels, and your spells, provide,  
Your charms, and every thing beside:  
I am for the air; this night I'll spend  
Unto a dismal-fatal end.  
Great business must be wrought ere noon:  
Upon the corner of the moon  
There hangs a vaporous drop profound;<sup>1</sup>  
I'll catch it ere it come to ground:  
And that, distill'd by magic slights,  
Shall raise such artificial sprites,  
As, by the strength of their illusion,  
Shall draw him on to his confusion:  
He shall spurn fate, scorn death, and bear  
His hopes 'bove wisdom, grace, and fear:  
And you all know, security  
Is mortals' chiefest enemy.

Song. [*Within.*] Come away, come away, &c.  
Hark, I am call'd; my little spirit, see,  
Sits in a foggy cloud, and stays for me. [*Exit.*  
1 *Witch.* Come, let's make haste; she'll soon  
be back again. [*Exeunt.*

(1) *i. e.* A drop that has deep or hidden qualities.

SCENE VI.—Fores. *A room in the palace. Enter Lenox and another Lord.*

*Len.* My former speeches have but hit your thoughts,  
Which can interpret further : only, I say,  
Things have been strangely borne : The gracious Duncan

Was pitied of Macbeth :—marry, he was dead :—  
And the right-vaillant Banquo walk'd too late ;  
Whom, you may say, if it please you, Fleance kill'd,  
For Fleance fled. Men must not walk too late.  
Who cannot want the thought, how monstrous  
It was for Malcolm, and for Donalbain,  
To kill their gracious father ? damned fact !  
How it did grieve Macbeth ! did he not straight,  
In pious rage, the two delinquents tear,  
That were the slaves of drink, and thralls of sleep ?  
Was not that nobly done ? Ay, and wisely too,  
For 'twould have anger'd any heart alive,  
To hear the men deny it. So that, I say,  
He has borne all things well : and I do think,  
That, had he Duncan's sons under his key  
(As, an't please heaven, he shall not,) they should  
find

What 'twere to kill a father ; so should Fleance.  
But, peace !—for from broad words, and 'cause he  
fail'd

His presence at the tyrant's feast, I hear  
Macduff lives in disgrace : Sir, can you tell  
Where he bestows himself ?

*Lord.* The son of Duncan,  
From whom this tyrant holds the due of birth,  
Lives in the English court ; and is received  
Of the most pious Edward with such grace,  
That the malevolence of fortune nothing  
Takes from his high respect : Thither Macduff  
Is gone to pray the holy king, on his aid  
To wake Northumberland, and warlike Siward :  
That by the help of these (with Him above

To ratify the work,) we may again  
 Give to our table meat, sleep to our nights;  
 Free from our feasts and banquets bloody knives;  
 Do faithful homage, and receive free honours,<sup>1</sup>  
 All which we pine for now: And this report  
 Hath so exasperate<sup>2</sup> the king, that he  
 Prepares for some attempt of war.

*Len.* Sent he to Macduff?

*Lord.* He did: and with an absolute, *Sir, not I,*  
 The cloudy messenger turns me his back,  
 And hums; as who should say, *You'll rue the time*  
*That clogs me with this answer.*

*Len.* And that well might  
 Advise him to a caution, to hold what distance  
 His wisdom can provide. Some holy angel  
 Fly to the court of England, and unfold  
 His message ere he come; that a swift blessing  
 May soon return to this our suffering country  
 Under a hand accurs'd!

*Lord.*

My prayers with him!

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV.

*SCENE I.—A dark cave. In the middle a cauldron boiling. Thunder. Enter Three Witches.*

1 *Witch.* Thrice the brinded cat hath mew'd.

2 *Witch.* Thrice; and once the hedge-pig whin'd.

3 *Witch.* Harper cries:—'Tis time, 'tis time.

1 *Witch.* Round about the cauldron go;

In the poison'd entrails throw.—

Toad, that under coldest stone,

Days and nights hast thirty-one

Swelter'd<sup>3</sup> venom sleeping got,

(1) Honours freely bestowed.

(2) For exasperated.

(3) This word is employed to signify that the animal was hot, and sweating with venom, although sleeping under a cold stone.

Boil thou first i'the charmed pot !

*All.* Double, double toil and trouble  
Fire, burn ; and, cauldron, bubble.

*2 Witch.* Fillet of a fenny snake,  
In the cauldron boil and bake :  
Eye of newt, and toe of frog,  
Wool of bat, and tongue of dog,  
Adder's fork, and blind-worm's sting,  
Lizard's leg, and owlet's wing,  
For a charm of powerful trouble,  
Like a hell-broth boil and bubble.

*All.* Double, double toil and trouble ;  
Fire, burn ; and, cauldron, bubble.

*3 Witch.* Scale of dragon, tooth of wol  
Witches' mummy ; maw, and gulf,<sup>1</sup>  
Of the ravin'd<sup>2</sup> salt-sea shark ;  
Root of hemlock, digg'd i'the dark ;  
Liver of blaspheming Jew ;  
Gall of goat, and slips of yew,  
Sliver'd in the moon's eclipse ;  
Nose of Turk, and Tartar's lips ;  
Finger of birth-strangled babe,  
Ditch-deliver'd by a drab,  
Make the gruel thick and slab :  
Add thereto a tiger's chaudron,<sup>3</sup>  
For the ingredients of our cauldron.

*All.* Double, double toil and trouble ;  
Fire, burn ; and, cauldron, bubble.

*2 Witch.* Cool it with a baboon's blood,  
Then the charm is firm and good.

*Enter Hecate, and the other Three Witches*

*Hec.* O, well done ! I commend your pains,  
And every one shall share i'the gains.  
And now about the cauldron sing,  
Like elves and fairies in a ring,  
Enchanting all that you put in.

(1) The throat. (2) Ravenous. (3) Entrails.



## SONG.

*Black spirits and white,  
Red spirits and grey;  
Mingle, mingle, mingle,  
You that mingle may.*

2 *Witch.* By the pricking of my thumbs,  
Something wicked this way comes :——  
Open, locks, whoever knocks.

*Enter Macbeth.*

*Macb.* How now, you secret, black, and mid-  
night hags?

What is't you do?

*All.*

A deed without a name.

*Macb.* I conjure you, by that which you profess  
(Howe'er you come to know it,) answer me :  
Though you untie the winds, and let them fight  
Against the churches ; though the yesty<sup>1</sup> waves  
Confound and swallow navigation up ;  
Though bladed corn be lodg'd,<sup>2</sup> and trees blown  
down ;  
Though castles topple<sup>3</sup> on their warders' heads ;  
Though palaces, and pyramids, do slope  
Their heads to their foundations ; though the trea-  
sure  
Of nature's germins<sup>4</sup> tumble all together,  
Even till destruction sicken, answer me  
To what I ask you.

1 *Witch.*

Speak.

2 *Witch.*

Demand.

3 *Witch.*

We'll answer.

1 *Witch.* Say, if thou'd'st rather hear it from our  
mouths,  
Or from our masters'?

*Macb.*

Call them, let me see them.

(1) Frothy.

(2) Laid flat by wind or rain.

(3) Tumble.

(4) Seeds which have begun to sprout.

1 *Witch*. Pour in sow's blood, that hath eaten  
Her nine farrow ; grease, that's sweaten  
From the murderer's gibbet, throw  
Into the flame.

*All*. Come, high, or low ;  
Thyself, and office, deftly<sup>1</sup> show.

*Thunder*. An Apparition of an armed Head rises.

*Macb*. Tell me, thou unknown power,—

1 *Witch*. He knows thy thought ;  
Hear his speech, but say thou nought.

*App*. Macbeth ! Macbeth ! Macbeth ! beware  
Macduff ;  
Beware the thane of Fife.—Dismiss me :—Enough.  
[*Descends*.

*Macb*. Whate'er thou art, for thy good caution,  
thanks ;  
Thou hast harp'd<sup>2</sup> my fear aright :—But one word  
more :—

1 *Witch*. He will not be commanded : Here's  
another,  
More potent than the first.

*Thunder*. An Apparition of a bloody Child rises.

*App*. Macbeth ! Macbeth ! Macbeth !—

*Macb*. Had I three ears, I'd hear thee.

*App*. Be bloody, bold,  
And resolute : laugh to scorn the power of man,  
For none of woman born shall harm Macbeth.

[*Descends*.  
*Macb*. Then live, Macduff ; What need I fear  
of thee ?

But yet I'll make assurance double sure,  
And take a bond of fate : thou shalt not live ;  
That I may tell pale-hearted fear, it lies,  
And sleep in spite of thunder.—What is this,

(1) Adroitly.

(2) Touched on a passion as a harper touches a  
string.

*Thunder. An Apparition of a Child crowned, with a tree in his hand, rises.*

That rises like the issue of a king ;  
And wears upon his baby brow the round  
And top of sovereignty ?<sup>1</sup>

*All.* Listen, but speak not.

*App.* Be lion-mettled, proud ; and take no care  
Who chafes, who frets, or where conspirers are :  
Macbeth shall never vanquish'd be, until  
Great Birnam wood to high Dunsinane hill  
Shall come against him. [*Descends.*]

*Macb.* That will never be ;  
Who can impress the forest ;<sup>2</sup> bid the tree  
Unfix his earth-bound root ? sweet bodements ! good !  
Rebellious head, rise never, till the wood  
Of Birnam rise, and our high-plac'd Macbeth  
Shall live the lease of nature, pay his breath  
To time, and mortal custom.—Yet my heart  
'Throbs to know one thing ; Tell me (if your art  
Can tell so much,) shall Banquo's issue ever  
Reign in this kingdom ?

*All.* Seek to know no more.

*Macb.* I will be satisfied : deny me this,  
And an eternal curse fall on you ! Let me know :—  
Why sinks that cauldron ? and what noise<sup>3</sup> is this ?  
[*Hautboys.*]

1 *Witch.* Show !

2 *Witch.* Show !

3 *Witch.* Show !

*All.* Show his eyes, and grieve his heart ;  
Come like shadows, so depart.

*Eight Kings appear, and pass over the stage in*

(1) The round is that part of a crown which encircles the head : the top is the ornament which rises above it.

(2) Who can command the forest to serve him like a soldier impressed ?

(3) Music.

*order ; the last with a glass in his hand ; Banquo following.*

*Macb.* Thou art too like the spirit of Banquo ;  
down !

Thy crown does sear mine eye-balls :—And thy hair,  
Thou other gold-bound brow, is like the first :—  
A third is like the former :—Filthy hags !  
Why do you show me this ?—A fourth ?—Start, eyes !  
What ! will the line stretch out to the crack of  
doom ?<sup>1</sup>

Another yet ?—A seventh ?—I'll see no more :—  
And yet the eighth appears, who bears a glass,  
Which shows me many more ; and some I see,  
That two-fold balls and treble sceptres carry :  
Horrible sight !—Ay, now, I see, 'tis true ;  
For the blood-bolter'd<sup>2</sup> Banquo smiles upon me,  
And points at them for his.—What, is this so ?

1 *Witch.* Ay, sir, all this is so :—But why  
Stands Macbeth thus amazedly ?—  
Come, sisters, cheer we up his sprights,<sup>3</sup>  
And show the best of our delights ;  
I'll charm the air to give a sound,  
While you perform your antique round :  
That this great king may kindly say,  
Our duties did his welcome pay.

*[Music. The Witches dance, and vanish]*

*Macb.* Where are they ? Gone ?—Let this pernicious hour  
Stand aye accursed in the calendar !—  
Come in, without there !

*Enter Lenox.*

*Len.* What's your grace's will :

*Macb.* Saw you the weird sisters ?

*Len.* No, my lord

*Macb.* Came they not by you ?

*Len.* No, indeed, my lord.

(1) The dissolution of nature.

(2) Besmeared with blood. (3) i. e. Spirits.

VOL. III

2 C

*Macb.* Infected be the air whereon they ride ;  
And damn'd, all those that trust them !—I did hear  
The galloping of horse : Who was't came by ?

*Len.* 'Tis two or three, my lord, that bring you  
word,

Macduff is fled to England.

*Macb.* Fled to England ?

*Len.* Ay, my good lord.

*Macb.* Time, thou anticipat'st<sup>1</sup> my dread ex-  
ploits :

The flighty purpose never is o'ertook,  
Unless the deed go with it : From this moment,  
The very firstlings of my heart shall be  
The firstlings of my hand. And even now  
To crown my thoughts with acts, be it thought  
and done :

The castle of Macduff I will surprise ;  
Seize upon Fife ; give to the edge o'the sword  
His wife, his babes, and all unfortunate souls  
That trace<sup>2</sup> his line. No boasting like a fool ;  
This deed I'll do, before this purpose cool :  
But no more sights !—Where are these gentlemen ?  
Come, bring me where they are. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—Fife. *A room in Macduff's castle.*

*Enter Lady Macduff, her Son, and Rosse.*

*L. Macd.* What had he done, to make him fly  
the land ?

*Rosse.* You must have patience, madam.

*L. Macd.* He had none :

His flight was madness : When our actions do not,  
Our fears do make us traitors.<sup>3</sup>

*Rosse.* You know not,  
Whether it was his wisdom, or his fear.

*L. Macd.* Wisdom ! to leave his wife, to leave  
his babes,

(1) Preventest, by taking away the opportunity.

(2) Follow.

(3) i. e. Our flight is considered as evidence of  
our treason.

His mansion, and his titles, in a place  
From whence himself does fly? He loves us not;  
He wants the natural touch:<sup>1</sup> for the poor wren,  
The most diminutive of birds, will fight,  
Her young ones in her nest, against the owl.  
All is the fear, and nothing is the love;  
As little is the wisdom, where the flight  
So runs against all reason.

*Rosse.* My dearest coz',  
I pray you, school yourself: But, for your husband,  
He is noble, wise, judicious, and best knows  
The fits o'the season. I dare not speak much  
further:

But cruel are the times, when we are traitors,  
And do not know ourselves; when we hold rumour  
From what we fear, yet know not what we fear;  
But float upon a wild and violent sea,  
Each way, and move.—I take my leave of you:  
Shall not be long but I'll be here again:  
Things at the worst will cease, or else climb upward  
To what they were before.—My pretty cousin,  
Blessing upon you!

*L. Macd.* Father'd he is, and yet he's fatherless.

*Rosse.* I am so much a fool, should I stay longer,  
It would be my disgrace, and your discomfort:  
I take my leave at once. [*Exit Rosse.*]

*L. Macd.* Sirrah,<sup>2</sup> your father's dead;  
And what will you do now? How will you live?

*Son.* As birds do, mother.

*L. Macd.* What, with worms and flies?

*Son.* With what I get, I mean; and so do they.

*L. Macd.* Poor bird! thou'dst never fear the net,  
nor lime,

The pit-fall, nor the gin.

*Son.* Why should I, mother? Poor birds they  
are not set for.

(1) Natural affection.

(2) Sirrah was not in our author's time a term of  
reproach.

My father is not dead, for all your saying.

*L. Macd.* Yes, he is dead; how wilt thou do for a father?

*Son.* Nay, how will you do for a husband?

*L. Macd.* Why, I can buy me twenty at any market.

*Son.* Then you'll buy 'em to sell again.

*L. Macd.* Thou speak'st with all thy wit; and yet, i'faith,

With wit enough for thee.

*Son.* Was my father a traitor, mother?

*L. Macd.* Ay, that he was.

*Son.* What is a traitor?

*L. Macd.* Why, one that swears and lies.

*Son.* And be all traitors, that do so?

*L. Macd.* Every one that does so, is a traitor, and must be hanged.

*Son.* And must they all be hang'd, that swear and lie?

*L. Macd.* Every one.

*Son.* Who must hang them?

*L. Macd.* Why, the honest men.

*Son.* Then the liars and swearers are fools: for there are liars and swearers enough to beat the honest men, and hang up them.

*L. Macd.* Now, God help thee, poor monkey! But how wilt thou do for a father?

*Son.* If he were dead, you'd weep for him: if you would not, it were a good sign that I should quickly have a new father.

*L. Macd.* Poor prattler! how thou talk'st!

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Bless you, fair dame! I am not to you known,

Though in your state of honour I am perfect.<sup>1</sup>  
I doubt, some danger does approach you nearly:  
If you will take a homely man's advice,

(1) I am perfectly acquainted with your rank.

Be not found here ; hence, with your little ones.  
To fright you thus, methinks, I am too savage ;  
To do worse to you, were fell cruelty,  
Which is too nigh your person. Heaven preserve  
you !

I dare abide no longer. [Exit Messenger.

*L. Macd.* Whither should I fly ?

I have done no harm. But I remember now  
I am in this earthly world ; where, to do harm,  
Is often laudable : to do good, sometime,  
Accounted dangerous folly : Why then, alas !  
Do I put up that womanly defence,  
To say I have done no harm ?——What are these  
faces ?

*Enter Murderers.*

*Mur.* Where is your husband ?

*L. Macd.* I hope, in no place so unsanctified,  
Where such as thou may'st find him.

*Mur.* He's a traitor.

*Son.* Thou ly'st, thou shag-ear'd villain.

*Mur.* What, you egg ?  
[Stabbing him.

Young fry of treachery ?

*Son.* He has killed me, mother ;  
Run away, I pray you. [Dies.

[Exit Lady Macduff, crying murder,  
and pursued by the Murderers.

SCENE III.—England. A room in the King's  
palace. Enter Malcolm and Macduff.

*Mal.* Let us seek out some desolate shade, and  
there

Weep our sad bosoms empty.

*Macd.* Let us rather

Hold fast the mortal sword ; and, like good men,  
Bestride our downfall'n birthdom : Each new morn,  
New widows howl ; new orphans cry ; new sorrows

(1) Birthright.



Strike heaven on the face, that it resounds  
As if it felt with Scotland, and yell'd out  
Like syllable of dolour.

*Mal.* What I believe, I'll wail;  
What know, believe; and, what I can redress,  
As I shall find the time to friend,<sup>1</sup> I will.  
What you have spoke, it may be so, perchance.  
This tyrant, whose sole name blisters our tongue,  
Was once thought honest: you have lov'd him well;  
He hath not touch'd you yet. I am young; but  
something  
You may deserve of him through me; and wisdom  
To offer up a weak, poor, innocent lamb,  
To appease an angry god.

*Macd.* I am not treacherous.

*Mal.* But Macbeth is.  
A good and virtuous nature may recoil,  
In an imperial charge.<sup>2</sup> But 'crave your pardon;  
That which you are, my thoughts cannot transpose:  
Angels are bright still, though the brightest fell:  
Though all things foul would wear the brows of  
grace,  
Yet grace must still look so.

*Macd.* I have lost my hopes.

*Mal.* Perchance, even there, where I did find  
my doubts.  
Why in that rawness left you wife and child  
(Those precious motives, those strong knots of love,) Without leave-taking?—I pray you,  
Let not my jealousies be your dishonours,  
But mine own safeties:—You may be rightly just,  
Whatever I shall think.

*Macd.* Bleed, bleed, poor country!  
Great tyranny, lay thou thy basis sure,  
For goodness dares not check thee! wear thou thy  
wrongs,

(1) Befriend.

(2) i. e. A good mind may recede from goodness in the execution of a royal commission.

Thy title is affeer'd !<sup>1</sup>—Fare thee well, lord :  
 I would not be the villain that thou think'st  
 For the whole space that's in the tyrant's grasp,  
 And the rich east to boot.

*Mal.* Be not offended :  
 I speak not as in absolute fear of you.  
 I think, our country sinks beneath the yoke ;  
 It weeps, it bleeds ; and each new day a gash  
 Is added to her wounds : I think, withal,  
 There would be hands uplifted in my right ;  
 And here, from gracious England, have I offer  
 Of goodly thousands : But, for all this,  
 When I shall tread upon the tyrant's head,  
 Or wear it on my sword, yet my poor country  
 Shall have more vices than it had before ;  
 More suffer, and more sundry ways than ever,  
 By him that shall succeed.

*Macd.* What should he be :

*Mal.* It is myself I mean : in whom I know  
 All the particulars of vice so grafted,  
 That, when they shall be open'd, black Macbeth  
 Will seem as pure as snow ; and the poor state  
 Esteem him as a lamb, being compar'd  
 With my confineless harms.

*Macd.* Not in the legions  
 Of horrid hell, can come a devil more damn'd  
 In evils, to top Macbeth.

*Mal.* I grant him bloody,  
 Luxurious,<sup>2</sup> avaricious, false, deceitful,  
 Sudden,<sup>3</sup> malicious, smacking of every sin  
 That has a name : But there's no bottom, none,  
 In my voluptuousness : your wives, your daughters,  
 Your matrons, and your maids, could not fill up  
 The cistern of my lust ; and my desire  
 All continent impediments would o'er-bear,  
 That did oppose my will : Better Macbeth,

(1) Legally settled by those who had the final  
 adjudication.

(2) Lascivious.

(3) Passionate.

Than such a one to reign.

*Macd.* Boundless intemperance  
In nature is a tyranny ; it hath been  
The untimely emptying of the happy throne,  
And fall of many kings. But fear not yet  
To take upon you what is yours : you may  
Convey your pleasures in a spacious plenty,  
And yet seem cold, the time you may so hood-wink.  
We have willing dames enough ; there cannot be  
That vulture in you, to devour so many  
As will to greatness dedicate themselves,  
Finding it so incin'd.

*Mal.* With this, there grows,  
In my most ill-compos'd affection, such  
A stanchless avarice, that were I king,  
I should cut off the nobles for their lands ;  
Desire his jewels, and this other's house :  
And my more-having would be as a sauce  
To make me hunger more ; that I should forge  
Quarrels unjust against the good, and loyal,  
Destroying them for wealth.

*Macd.* This avarice  
Sticks deeper ; grows with more pernicious root  
Than summer-seeding lust : and it hath been  
The sword of our slain kings : Yet do not fear ;  
Scotland hath foysons<sup>1</sup> to fill up your will,  
Of your mere own : All these are portable,<sup>2</sup>  
With other graces weigh'd.

*Mal.* But I have none : The king-becoming  
graces,  
As justice, verity, temperance, stableness,  
Bounty, perséverance, mercy, lowliness,  
Devotion, patience, courage, fortitude,  
I have no relish of them ; but abound  
In the division of each several crime,  
Acting it many ways. Nay, had I power, I should  
Pour the sweet milk of concord into hell,  
Uproar the universal peace, confound

(1) Plenty.

(2) May be endured.

All unity on earth.

*Macd.* O Scotland! Scotland!

*Mal.* If such a one be fit to govern, speak:  
I am as I have spoken.

*Macd.* Fit to govern!

No, not to live.—O nation miserable,  
With an untitled tyrant bloody-scepter'd,  
When shalt thou see thy wholesome days again?  
Since that the truest issue of thy throne  
By his own interdiction stands accurs'd,  
And does blaspheme his breed?—Thy royal father  
Was a most sainted king; the queen, that bore thee  
Often upon her knees than on her feet,  
Died every day she lived. Fare thee well!  
These evils, thou repeat'st upon thyself,  
Have banish'd me from Scotland.—O, my breast,  
Thy hope ends here!

*Mal.* Macduff, this noble passion,  
Child of integrity, hath from my soul  
Wip'd the black scruples, reconcil'd my thoughts  
To thy good truth and honour. Devilish Macbeth  
By many of these trains hath sought to win me  
Into his power: and modest wisdom plucks me  
From over-credulous haste: But God above  
Deal between thee and me! for even now  
I put myself to thy direction, and  
Unspeak mine own detraction, here abjure  
The taints and blames I laid upon myself,  
For strangers to my nature. I am yet  
Unknown to woman; never was forsworn;  
Scarcely have coveted what was mine own;  
At no time broke my faith; would not betray  
The devil to his fellow; and delight  
No less in truth, than life: my first false speaking  
Was this upon myself: What I am truly,  
Is thine, and my poor country's, to command:  
Whither, indeed, before thy here-approach,  
Old Siward, with ten thousand warlike men,

(1) Over-hasty credulity.

All ready at a point, was setting forth :  
Now we'll together ; And the chance, of goodness,  
Be like our warranted quarrel ! Why are you silent ?

*Macd.* Such welcome and unwelcome things at  
once,  
'Tis hard to reconcile.

*Enter a Doctor.*

*Mal.* Well ; more anon.—Comes the king forth,  
I pray you ?

*Doct.* Ay, sir : there are a crew of wretched souls,  
That stay his cure : their malady convinces<sup>1</sup>  
The great assay of art ; but, at his touch,  
Such sanctity hath heaven given his hand,  
They presently amend.

*Mal.* I thank you, doctor. [*Ex. Doct.*]

*Macd.* What is the disease he means ?

*Mal.* 'Tis call'd the evil :  
A most miraculous work in this good king ;  
Which often since my here-remain in England,  
I have seen him do. How he solicits heaven,  
Himself best knows : but strangely-visited people,  
All swoln and ulcerous, pitiful to the eye,  
The mere despair of surgery, he cures ;  
Hanging a golden stamp<sup>2</sup> about their necks,  
Put on with holy prayers : and 'tis spoken,  
To the succeeding royalty he leaves  
The healing benediction. With this strange virtue,  
He hath a heavenly gift of prophecy ;  
And sundry blessings hang about his throne,  
That speak him full of grace.

*Enter Rosse.*

*Macd.* See, who comes here ?

*Mal.* My countryman ; but yet I know him not.

*Macd.* My ever-gentle cousin, welcome hither.

*Mal.* I know him now :—Good God, betimes  
remove

(1) Overpowers, subdues.

(2) The coin called an angel.

The means that make us strangers !

*Rosse.*

Sir, Amen.

*Macd.* Stands Scotland where it did ?

*Rosse.*

Alas, poor country ;

Almost afraid to know itself ! It cannot

Be call'd our mother, but our grave : where nothing,

But who knows nothing, is once seen to smile ,

Where sighs, and groans, and shrieks that rent the  
air,

Are made, not mark'd ; where violent sorrow seems

A modern ecstasy ;<sup>1</sup> the dead man's knell

Is there scarce ask'd, for who ; and good men's  
lives

Expire before the flowers in their caps,

Dying, or ere they sicken.

*Macd.*

O, relation

Too nice, and yet too true !

*Mal.*

What is the newest grief ?

*Rosse.* That of an hour's age doth hiss the  
speaker ;

Each minute teems a new one.

*Macd.*

How does my wife ?

*Rosse.* Why, well.

*Macd.*

And all my children ?

*Rosse.*

Well too.

*Macd.* The tyrant has not batter'd at their peace ?

*Rosse.* No ; they were well at peace, when I did  
leave them.

*Macd.* Be not a niggard of your speech ; How  
goes it ?

*Rosse.* When I came hither to transport the  
tidings,

Which I have heavily borne, there ran a rumour

Of many worthy fellows that were out ;

Which was to my belief witness'd the rather,

For that I saw the tyrant's power a-foot :

Now is the time of help ; your eye in Scotland

Would create soldiers, make our women fight,

(1) Common distress of mind.

To doff<sup>1</sup> their dire distresses.

*Mal.* Be it their comfort,  
We are coming thither: gracious England hath  
Lent us good Siward, and ten thousand men;  
An older, and a better soldier, none,  
That Christendom gives out.

*Rosse.* 'Would I could answer  
This comfort with the like! But I have words,  
That would be howl'd out in the desert air,  
Where hearing should not latch<sup>2</sup> them.

*Macd.* What concern they?  
The general cause? or is it a fee-grief,<sup>3</sup>  
Due to some single breast?

*Rosse.* No mind, that's honest,  
But in it shares some wo; though the main part  
Pertains to you alone.

*Macd.* If it be mine,  
Keep it not from me, quickly let me have it.

*Rosse.* Let not your ears despise my tongue for  
ever,  
Which shall possess them with the heaviest sound,  
That ever yet they heard.

*Macd.* Humph! I guess at it.

*Rosse.* Your castle is surpriz'd; your wife, and  
babes,

Savagely slaughter'd: to relate the manner,  
Were, on the quarry<sup>4</sup> of these murder'd deer,  
To add the death of you.

*Mal.* Merciful heaven!—  
What, man! ne'er pull your hat upon your brows;  
Give sorrow words: the grief, that does not speak,  
Whispers the o'er-fraught heart, and bids it break.

*Macd.* My children too?

*Rosse.* Wife, children, servants, all  
That could be found.

*Macd.* And I must be from thence?

- (1) Put off. (2) Catch.  
(3) A grief that has a single owner.  
(4) The game after it is killed.

My wife kill'd too?

*Rosse.* I have said.

*Mal.* Be comforted:

Let's make us med'cines of our great revenge,  
To cure this deadly grief.

*Macd.* He has no children.—All my pretty ones?  
Did you say, all?—O, hell-kite!—All!  
What, all my pretty chickens, and their dam,  
At one fell swoop?

*Mal.* Dispute it like a man.

*Macd.* I shall do so;

But I must also feel it as a man:  
I cannot but remember such things were,  
That were most precious to me.—Did heaven look  
on,

And would not take their part? Sinful Macduff,  
They were all struck for thee! naught that I am,  
Not for their own demerits, but for mine,  
Fell slaughter on their souls: Heaven rest them  
now!

*Mal.* Be this the whetstone of your sword: let  
grief

Convert to anger; blunt not the heart, enrage it.

*Macd.* O, I could play the woman with mine  
eyes,

And braggart with my tongue!—But, gentle heaven  
Cut short all intermission;<sup>1</sup> front to front,  
Bring thou this fiend of Scotland, and myself;  
Within my sword's length set him; if he 'scape,  
Heaven forgive him too!

*Mal.* This tune goes manly.  
Come, go we to the king; our power is ready;  
Our lack is nothing but our leave: Macbeth  
Is ripe for shaking, and the powers above  
Put on their instruments. Receive what cheer you  
may;

The night is long, that never finds the day. [*Exe.*

(1) All pause.



## ACT V.

SCENE I.—Dunsinane. *A room in the castle.*

*Enter a Doctor of Physic, and a waiting Gentlewoman.*

*Doct.* I have two nights watched with you, but can perceive no truth in your report. When was it she last walked?

*Gent.* Since his majesty went into the field, I have seen her rise from her bed, throw her night-gown upon her, unlock her closet, take forth paper, fold it, write upon it, read it, afterwards seal it, and again return to bed; yet all this while in a most fast sleep.

*Doct.* A great perturbation in nature! to receive at once the benefit of sleep, and do the effects of watching.—In this slumbry agitation, besides her walking, and other actual performances, what, at any time, have you heard her say?

*Gent.* That, sir, which I will not report after her.

*Doct.* You may, to me; and 'tis most meet you should.

*Gent.* Neither to you, nor any one, having no witness to confirm my speech.

*Enter Lady Macbeth, with a taper.*

Lo you, here she comes! This is her very guise; and, upon my life, fast asleep. Observe her; stand close.

*Doct.* How came she by that light?

*Gent.* Why, it stood by her: she has light by her continually; 'tis her command.

*Doct.* You see, her eyes are open.

*Gent.* Ay, but their sense is shut.

*Doct.* What is it she does now? Look, how she rubs her hands.

*Gent.* It is an accustomed action with her, to seem thus washing her hands; I have known her continue in this a quarter of an hour.

*Lady M.* Yet here's a spot.

*Doct.* Hark, she speaks : I will set down what comes from her, to satisfy my remembrance the more strongly.

*Lady M.* Out, damned spot ! out, I say !—One ; Two ; Why, then 'tis time to do't :—Hell is murky !—Fie, my lord, fie ! a soldier, and afeard ? What need we fear who knows it, when none can call our power to account ?—Yet who would have thought the old man to have had so much blood in him ?

*Doct.* Do you mark that ?

*Lady M.* The thane of Fife had a wife ; Where is she now ?—What, will these hands ne'er be clean ?—No more o'that, my lord, no more o'that : you mar all with this starting.

*Doct.* Go to, go to ; you have known what you should not.

*Gent.* She has spoke what she should not, I am sure of that : Heaven knows what she has known.

*Lady M.* Here's the smell of the blood still : all the perfumes of Arabia will not sweeten this little hand. Oh ! oh ! oh !

*Doct.* What a sigh is there ! The heart is sorely charged.

*Gent.* I would not have such a heart in my bosom, for the dignity of the whole body.

*Doct.* Well, well, well,—

*Gent.* 'Pray God, it be, sir.

*Doct.* This disease is beyond my practice : Yet I have known those which have walked in their sleep, who have died holily in their beds.

*Lady M.* Wash your hands, put on your nightgown ; look not so pale :—I tell you yet again, Banquo's buried ; he cannot come out of his grave.

*Doct.* Even so ?

*Lady M.* To bed, to bed ; there's knocking at the gate. Come, come, come, come, give me your hand ; What's done, cannot be undone : To bed, to bed, to bed.

[*Exit Lady Macbeth.*]

(1) Dark.

*Doct.* Will she go now to bed?

*Gent.* Directly.

*Doct.* Foul whisperings are abroad : Unnatural deeds

Do breed unnatural troubles : Infected minds  
To their deaf pillows will discharge their secrets.  
More needs she the divine, than the physician.—  
God, God, forgive us all ! Look after her ;  
Remove from her the means of all annoyance,  
And still keep eyes upon her :—So, good night :  
My mind she has mated,<sup>1</sup> and amaz'd my sight :  
I think, but dare not speak.

*Gent.*

Good night, good doctor.

[*Exeunt.*]

*SCENE II.*—*The country near Dunsinane. Enter, with drum and colours, Menteth, Cathness Angus, Lenox, and Soldiers.*

*Ment.* The English power is near, led on by Malcolm,

His uncle Siward, and the good Macduff.  
Revenge burn in them : for their dear causes  
Would, to the bleeding, and the grim alarm,  
Excite the mortified man.<sup>2</sup>

*Ang.* Near Birnam wood  
Shall we well meet them ; that way are they coming.

*Cath.* Who knows, if Donalbain be with his brother?

*Len.* For certain, sir, he is not : I have a file  
Of all the gentry ; there is Siward's son,  
And many unrough<sup>3</sup> youths, that even now  
Protest their first of manhood.

*Ment.* What does the tyrant?

*Cath.* Great Dunsinane he strongly fortifies :  
Some say, he's mad ; others, that lesser hate him,  
Do call it valiant fury : but, for certain,  
He cannot buckle his distemper'd cause

(1) Confounded. (2) A religious ; an ascetic.

(3) Unbearded.

Within the belt of rule.

*Ang.* Now does he feel  
His secret murders sticking on his hands ;  
Now minutely revolts upbraid his faith-breach ;  
Those he commands, move only in command,  
Nothing in love : now does he feel his title  
Hang loose about him, like a giant's robe  
Upon a dwarfish thief.

*Ment.* Who then shall blame  
His pester'd senses to recoil, and start,  
When all that is within him does condemn  
Itself, for being there ?

*Cath.* Well, march we on,  
To give obedience where 'tis truly ow'd :  
Meet we the medicin<sup>2</sup> of the sickly weal ;  
And with him pour we, in our country's purge,  
Each drop of us.

*Len.* Or so much as it needs,  
To dew the sovereign flower, and drown the weeds.  
Make we our march towards Birnam.

[*Exeunt, marching.*]

SCENE III.—Dunsinane. *A room in the castle.*

*Enter Macbeth, Doctor, and attendants.*

*Macb.* Bring me no more reports ; let them fly  
all ;

Till Birnam wood remove to Dunsinane,  
I cannot taint with fear. What's the boy Malcolm ?  
Was he not born of woman ? The spirits that know  
All mortal consequents, pronounc'd me thus :  
*Fear not, Macbeth ; no man, that's born of woman,  
Shall e'er have power on thee.*—Then fly, false  
thanes,

And mingle with the English epicures :  
The mind I sway by, and the heart I bear,  
Shall never sagg<sup>2</sup> with doubt, nor shake with fear.

(1) The physician.

(2) Sink.

VOL. III.

2 D

*Enter a Servant.*

The devil damn thee black, thou cream-fac'd loon;!  
Where got'st thou that goose-look?

*Serv.* There is ten thousand—

*Macb.*

Geese, villain?

*Serv.*

Soldiers, sir.

*Macb.* Go, prick thy face, and over-red thy fear,  
Thou lily-liver'd boy. What soldiers, patch?<sup>2</sup>  
Death of thy soul! those linen cheeks of thine  
Are counsellors to fear. What soldiers, whey-face?

*Serv.* The English force, so please you.

*Macb.* Take thy face hence.—Seyton!—I am  
sick at heart,

When I behold—Seyton, I say!—This push  
Will cheer me ever, or disseat me now.

I have liv'd long enough: my way of life

Is fall'n into the ~~sear~~,<sup>3</sup> the yellow leaf:

And that which should accompany old age,  
As honour, love, obedience, troops of friends,

I must not look to have; but, in their stead,

Curses, not loud, but deep, mouth-honour, breath,  
Which the poor heart would fain deny, but dare not.

Seyton!—

*Enter Seyton.*

*Sey.* What is your gracious pleasure?

*Macb.*

What news more?

*Sey.* All is confirm'd, my lord, which was re-  
ported.

*Macb.* I'll fight, till from my bones my flesh be  
hack'd.

Give me my armour.

*Sey.*

'Tis not needed yet.

*Macb.* I'll put it on.

Send out more horses, skirr<sup>4</sup> the country round;

Hang those that talk of fear.—Give me mine ar-  
mour.—

(1) Base fellow.

(2) An appellation of contempt.

(3) Dry.

(4) Scour.

How does your patient, doctor?

*Doct.* Not so sick, my lord,  
As she is troubled with thick-coming fancies,  
That keep her from her rest.

*Macb.* Cure her of that :  
Canst thou not minister to a mind diseas'd ;  
Pluck from the memory a rooted sorrow ;  
Raze out the written troubles of the brain ;  
And, with some sweet oblivious antidote,  
Cleanse the stuff'd bosom of that perilous stuff  
Which weighs upon the heart ?

*Doct.* Therein the patient  
Must minister to himself.

*Macb.* Throw physic to the dogs, I'll none of it.—  
Come, put mine armour on ; give me my staff :—  
Seyton, send out.—Doctor, the thanes fly from  
me :—

Come, sir, despatch :—If thou could'st, doctor, cast  
The water of my land, find her disease,  
And purge it to a sound and pristine health,  
I would applaud thee to the very echo,  
That should applaud again.—Pull't off, I say.—  
What rhubarb, senna, or what purgative drug,  
Would scour these English hence ?—Hearest thou  
of them ?

*Doct.* Ay, my good lord ; your royal preparation  
Makes us hear something.

*Macb.* Bring it after me.—  
I will not be afraid of death and bane,  
Till Birnam forest come to Dunsinane. [*Exit.*

*Doct.* Were I from Dunsinane away and clear,  
Profit again should hardly draw me here. [*Exit.*

**SCENE IV.**—*Country near Dunsinane : A wood  
in view. Enter, with drum and colours, Mal-  
colm, Old Siward and his Son, Macduff, Men-  
teth, Cathness, Angus, Lenox, Rosse, and Sol-  
diers, marching.*

*Mal.* Cousins, I hope, the days are near at hand  
That chambers will be safe.

*Ment.* We doubt it nothing.

*Siw.* What wood is this before us?

*Ment.* The wood of Birnam.

*Mal.* Let every soldier hew him down a bough,  
And bear't before him; thereby shall we shadow  
The numbers of our host, and make discovery  
Err in report of us.

*Sold.* It shall be done.

*Siw.* We learn no other, but the confident tyrant  
Keeps still in Dunsinane, and will endure  
Our setting down befor't.

*Mal.* 'Tis his main hope :  
For where there is advantage to be given,  
Both more and less<sup>1</sup> have given him the revolt ;  
And none serve with him but constrained things,  
Whose hearts are absent too.

*Macd.* Let our just censures  
Attend the true event, and put we on  
Industrious soldiership.

*Siw.* The time approaches,  
That will with due decision make us know  
What we shall say we have, and what we owe.  
Thoughts speculative their unsure hopes relate ;  
But certain issue strokes must arbitrate :<sup>2</sup>  
Towards which, advance the war.

[*Exeunt, marching.*]

*SCENE V.*—Dunsinane. *Within the castle.*

*Enter, with drums and colours, Macbeth, Seyton, and Soldiers.*

*Macb.* Hang out our banners on the outward  
walls ;  
The cry is still, *They come* : Our castle's strength  
Will laugh a siege to scorn : here let them lie,  
Till famine, and the ague, eat them up :  
Were they not forc'd with those that should be ours,  
We might have met them dareful, beard to beard,

(1) *i. e.* Greater and less.

(2) Determine.

And beat them backward home. What is that noise?

[*A cry within, of women.*]

*Sey.* It is the cry of women, my good lord.

*Macb.* I have almost forgot the taste of fears :  
The time has been, my senses would have cool'd  
To hear a night-shriek ; and my fell<sup>l</sup> of hair  
Would at a dismal treatise rouse, and stir  
As life were in't : I have supp'd full with horrors ;  
Direness, familiar to my slaught'rous thoughts,  
Cannot once start me.—Wherefore was that cry ?

*Sey.* The queen, my lord, is dead.

*Macb.* She should have died hereafter ;  
There would have been a time for such a word.—  
To-morrow, and to-morrow, and to-morrow,  
Creeps in this petty pace from day to day,  
To the last syllable of recorded time ;  
And all our yesterdays have lighted fools  
The way to dusty death. Out, out, brief candle :  
Life's but a walking shadow ; a poor player,  
That struts and frets his hour upon the stage,  
And then is heard no more : it is a tale  
Told by an idiot, full of sound and fury,  
Signifying nothing.—

*Enter a Messenger.*

Thou com'st to use thy tongue ; thy story quickly

*Mess.* Gracious my lord,  
I shall report that which I say I saw,  
But know not how to do it.

*Macb.* Well, say, sir.

*Mess.* As I did stand my watch upon the hill,  
I look'd toward Birnam, and anon, methought,  
The wood began to move.

*Macb.* Liar, and slave !

[*Striking him*]

*Mess.* Let me endure your wrath, if't be not so :  
Within this three mile may you see it coming ;  
I say, a moving grove.

(1) Skin.



*Macb.* If thou speak'st false,  
 Upon the next tree shalt thou hang alive,  
 Till famine cling<sup>1</sup> thee: if thy speech be sooth,  
 I care not if thou dost for me as much.—  
 I pull in resolution; and begin  
 To doubt the equivocation of the fiend,  
 That lies like truth: *Fear not, till Birnam wood*  
*Do come to Dunsinane*;—and now a wood  
 Comes toward Dunsinane.—Arm, arm, and out!—  
 If this, which he avouches, does appear,  
 There is nor flying hence, nor tarrying here.  
 I 'gin to be a-weary of the sun,  
 And wish the estate o' the world were now undone.—  
 Ring the alarum bell:—Blow, wind! come, wrack!  
 At least we'll die with harness<sup>2</sup> on our back.

[*Exeunt.*]

*SCENE VI.—The same. A plain before the castle. Enter, with drums and colours, Malcolm, Old Siward, Macduff, &c. and their army, with boughs.*

*Mal.* Now near enough; your leavy screens throw down,  
 And show like those you are:—You, worthy uncle,  
 Shall, with my cousin, your right-noble son,  
 Lead our first battle: worthy Macduff, and we,  
 Shall take upon us what else remains to do,  
 According to our order.

*Siw.* Fare you well.—  
 Do we but find the tyrant's power to-night,  
 Let us be bested, if we cannot fight.

*Macd.* Make all our trumpets speak; give them  
 all breath,  
 Those clamorous harbingers of blood and death.

[*Exeunt. Alarums continued.*]

*SCENE VII.—The same. Another part of the plain. Enter Macbeth.*

*Macb.* They have tied me to a stake; I cannot fly,

(1) Shivel.

(2) Armour.

But, bear-like, I must fight the course.—What's he,  
That was not born of woman? Such a one  
Am I to fear, or none.

*Enter Young Siward.*

*Yo. Siw.* What is thy name?

*Macb.* Thou'lt be afraid to hear it.

*Yo. Siw.* No; though thou call'st thyself a hotter name

Than any is in hell.

*Macb.* My name's Macbeth.

*Yo. Siw.* The devil himself could not pronounce  
\* a title

More hateful to mine ear.

*Macb.* No, nor more fearful.

*Yo. Siw.* Thou liest, abhorred tyrant; with my  
sword

I'll prove the lie thou speak'st.

[*They fight, and Young Siward is slain.*]

*Macb.* Thou wast born of woman.—

But swords I smile at, weapons laugh to scorn,  
Brandish'd by man that's of a woman born. [*Ex.*]

*Alarums. Enter Macduff.*

*Macd.* That way the noise is:—Tyrant, show  
thy face:

If thou be'st slain, and with no stroke of mine,  
My wife and children's ghosts will haunt me still.  
I cannot strike at wretched kernes,<sup>1</sup> whose arms  
Are hir'd to bear their staves; either thou, Macbeth,  
Or else my sword, with an unbatter'd edge,  
I sheath again undeeded. There thou should'st be;  
By this great clatter, one of greatest note  
Seems bruided:<sup>2</sup> Let me find him, fortune!  
And more I beg not. [*Exit. Alarum.*]

*Enter Malcolm and Old Siward.*

*Siw.* This way, my lord;—the castle's gently  
render'd:

(1) Soldiers. (2) Reported with clamour.

The tyrant's people on both sides do fight;  
 The noble thanes do bravely in the war;  
 The day almost itself professes yours,  
 And little is to do.

*Mal.* We have met with foes  
 That strike beside us.

*Siw.* Enter, sir, the castle.  
 [*Exeunt. Alarum.*]

*Re-enter Macbeth.*

*Macb.* Why should I play the Roman fool, and  
 die

On mine own sword? whiles I see lives, the gashes  
 Do better upon them.

*Re-enter Macduff.*

*Macd.* Turn, hell-hound, turn.

*Macb.* Of all men else I have avoided thee:  
 But get thee back, my soul is too much charg'd  
 With blood of thine already.

*Macd.* I have no words,  
 My voice is in my sword; thou bloodier villain  
 Than terms can give thee out! [*They fight.*]

*Macb.* Thou lovest labour:  
 As easy may'st thou the intrenchant air!  
 With thy keen sword impress, as make me bleed:  
 Let fall thy blade on vulnerable crests;  
 I bear a charmed life, which must not yield  
 To one of woman born.

*Macd.* Despair thy charm;  
 And let the angel, whom thou still hast serv'd,  
 Tell thee, Macduff was from his mother's womb  
 Untimely ripp'd.

*Macb.* Accurs'd be that tongue that tells me so,  
 For it hath cow'd my better part of man!  
 And be these juggling fiends no more believ'd,  
 That palter<sup>2</sup> with us in a double sense;  
 That keep the word of promise to our ear,

(1) The air, which cannot be cut. (2) Shuffle.

And break it to our hope.—I'll not fight with thee.

*Macd.* Then yield thee, coward,  
And live to be the show and gaze o'the time.  
We'll have thee, as our rarer monsters are,  
Painted upon a pole; and underwrit,  
*Here may you see the tyrant.*

*Macb.* I'll not yield,  
To kiss the ground before young Malcolm's feet,  
And to be baited with the rabble's curse.  
Though Birnam wood be come to Dunsinane,  
And thou oppos'd, being of no woman born,  
Yet I will try the last: Before my body  
I throw my warlike shield: lay on, Macduff;  
And damn'd be him that first cries, *Hold, enough.*  
[*Exeunt, fighting.*]

*Retreat. Flourish. Re-enter, with drum and colours, Malcolm, Old Siward, Rosse, Lenox, Angus, Cathness, Menteth, and Soldiers.*

*Mal.* I would, the friends we miss were safe arriv'd.

*Siw.* Some must go off: and yet, by these I see,  
So great a day as this is cheaply bought.

*Mal.* Macduff is missing, and your noble son.

*Rosse.* Your son, my lord, has paid a soldier's debt:

He only liv'd but till he was a man;  
The which no sooner had his prowess confirm'd  
In the unshrinking station where he fought,  
But like a man he died.

*Siw.* Then he is dead?

*Rosse.* Ay, and brought off the field: your cause  
of sorrow

Must not be measur'd by his worth, for then  
It hath no end.

*Siw.* Had he his hurts before?

*Rosse.* Ay, on the front.

*Siw.* Why then, God's soldier be he!

Had I as many sons as I have hairs,  
I would not wish them to a fairer death:

And so his knell is knoll'd.

*Mal.* He's worth more sorrow,  
And that I'll spend for him.

*Siv.* He's worth no more;  
They say, he parted well, and paid his score:  
So, God be with him!—Here comes newer comfort.

*Re-enter Macduff, with Macbeth's head on a pole.*

*Macd.* Hail, king! for so thou art: Behold,  
where stands

The usurper's cursed head: the time is free:  
I see thee compass'd with thy kingdom's pearl,<sup>1</sup>  
That speak my salutation in their minds;  
Whose voices I desire aloud with mine,—  
Hail, king of Scotland!

*All.* King of Scotland, hail!  
[*Flourish.*

*Mal.* We shall not spend a large expense of time,  
Before we reckon with your several loves,  
And make us even with you. My thanes and kins-  
men,

Henceforth be earls, the first that ever Scotland  
In such an honour nam'd. What's more to do,  
Which would be planted newly with the time,—  
As calling home our exil'd friends abroad,  
That fled the snares of watchful tyranny;  
Producing forth the cruel ministers  
Of this dead butcher, and his fiend-like queen;  
Who, as 'tis thought, by self and violent hands  
Took off her life;—This, and what needful else  
That calls upon us, by the grace of Grace,  
We will perform in measure, time, and place:  
So thanks to all at once, and to each one,  
Whom we invite to see us crown'd at Scone.

[*Flourish. Exit.*

(1) The kingdom's wealth or ornament.

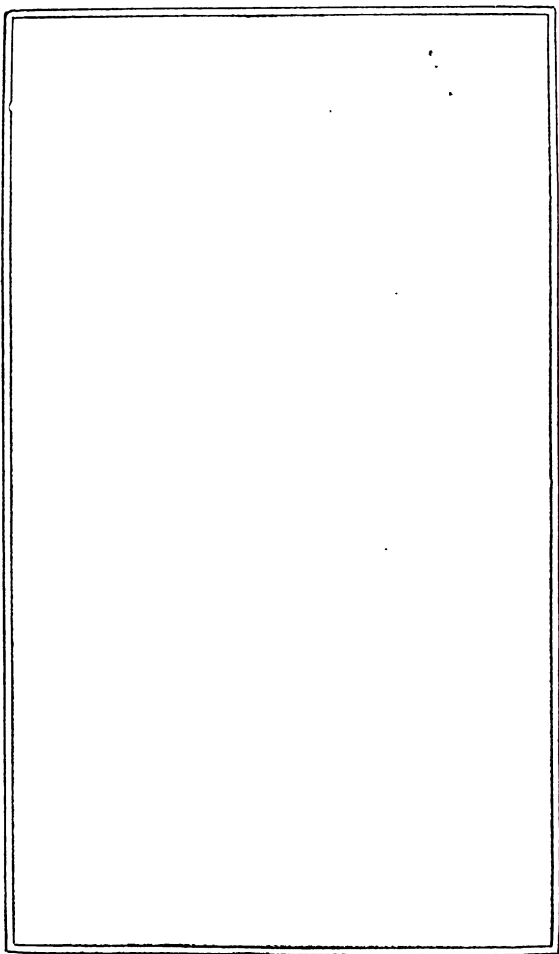
This play is deservedly celebrated for the propriety of its fiction, and solemnity, grandeur, and variety of its action ; but it has no nice discriminations of character ; the events are too great to admit the influence of particular dispositions, and the course of the action necessarily determines the conduct of the agents.

The danger of ambition is well described ; and I know not whether it may not be said, in defence of some parts which now seem improbable, that in Shakspeare's time it was necessary to warn credulity against vain and illusive predictions.

The passions are directed to their true end. Lady Macbeth is merely detested ; and though the courage of Macbeth preserves some esteem, yet every reader rejoices at his fall.

JOHNSON.

END OF VOL. III.











Princeton University Library



32101 063692279

*This Book is Due*

v.3

